Serfojee Rajah 1817

A NEW

PORTUGUESE GRAMMAR

IN FOUR PARTS;

CONTAINING

I. Rules for the Combination and Use of the different Parts of Speech.

II. The Syntax, in which are explained, after a more copious manner than hitherto attempted, the peculiar uses of the PORTUGUESE PARTICLES.

III. A Vocabulary, more particularly containing the Terms of COMMERCE, WAR, and NAVIGATION, with a variety of Phrases and familiar Dialogues, taken from common conversation and the best authors.

IV. Various Passages extracted from the most approved ancient and modern writers, in prose and verse, with a view to facilitate the reading of the most valuable Portuguese books.

By ANTHONY VIEYRA, Transtagano.

THE NINTH EDITION,

CAREFULLY REVISED AND GREATLY IMPROVED,

WITH THE PORTUGUESE WORDS PROPERLY ACCENTED,

ACCORDING TO THE LATEST AND BEST AUTHORITIES,

BY MR. L. P. AILLAUD.

Necesse est enim inter quos mercaturæ et controversum sint, inter eos quoque sermonis esse commercia. UBERTUS FOLIETA.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR T. WINGRAVE, IN THE STRAND.

1818.

THE TANJORE MAHARAJAH SERFOJI'S SARASWATI MAHAL

TO

ROBERT ORME, Esq.

SIR,

THE best Historians and the greatest Poet my country has produced, have dedicated their talents to the subject which at present employs yours; and as no one is more sensible than yourself of the Geographical, Commercial, and Political Knowledge, which may be derived from an acquaintance with their writings on Indian affairs, this work of mine can nowise be addressed with greater propriety than to yourself.

I am, Sir,

Your most humble servant,

ANTHONY VIEYRA.

—

THE AUTHOR'S

PREFACE.

AS the usefulness of the Portuguese language is so well known to all English merchants who carry on a general trade with the different Parts of the known world, it will be needless to use any arguments here to prove it; and I shall refer what I have to say on the copiousness and energy of this language, to the Preface to my English *and* Portuguese *Dictionary.*

The reader will find in the First Part of this Grammar, what is material as a foundation of the whole.

At the end of the Second Part is a full explanation of the Particles, *on which I have bestowed more time and labour, because this subject has been hitherto much neglected, although the principal ornament and elegance not only of the Portuguese, but of every other language, chiefly consist in the proper arrangement and judicious interspersion of the words.*

In the Third Part is a larger collection than hitherto published of the terms of Trade, War,

Navigation, &c. *which he present intercourse between the nations renders particularly useful.*

Having found a great difficulty in procuring Portuguese books in this Country, I have been commonly obliged to furnish with part of my private collection those Gentlemen whom I have had the honour of assisting in the study of this language, during my residence here; therefore, in the Fourth Part I have given some passages selected from the best Portuguese Authors, and which will, at the same time, facilitate the reading of their most eminent writers.

ADVERTISEMENT TO THIS NEW EDITION.

THIS new Edition of Mr. Vieyra's Grammar, has been not only accurately marked with the proper accents to facilitate the Pronunciation and the Intelligence of the Language, but even materially altered in the body of the Work. The accentuation is a matter of so much consequence in the Portuguese Language, that one accent used in the room of another, often changes entirely the signification of the word, as for instance in the words *Avó* and *Avô*; the former, when

marked with an acute, meaning *grand-mother*, the latter with a circumflex, meaning *grand-father*. This interesting part, in which all the former Editions have been so deficient, (using only the acute) has been scrupulously corrected in the present one. In that part which treats of the Pronunciation, some very necessary corrections have been introduced. The pronunciation of the *ch*, wrongly explained in the other Editions, is here in this, brought to its real sound.

New passages from the best Modern Writers, have been substituted for some of the Ancient ones, to enable the learners to form a proper idea of the variations and progress of the Language, down to the present time. A new Vocabulary of the Military Words of Command and a fresh Translation of the Commercial Letters have also been inserted in this Edition.

Such are the principal alterations made in this Work, which, it is hoped, will meet with the approbation of the public.

London, May, 1813.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

Of the Portuguese Alphabet, and the manner of pronouncing each separate Letter Page 1
Of the manner of pronouncing the Portuguese Letters as combined in Syllables - 3
Of the Articles - - - - 8
Of the Nouns - - - - 11
Of the Pronouns - - - 25
Of Verbs - - - - - 44
Of the Participles - - - 113
Of the Adverbs - - - - 114
Of the Prepositions - - - 117
Of the Conjunctions - - - 118
Interjective Particles - - 120
Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language 121

PART II.

Of the Division of Syntax - 122
Of the Syntax of Articles - 126
Of the Syntax of Nouns, and first, of the Substantives - 131
Of the Syntax of Adjectives 132
Of the Syntax of the Comparatives and Superlatives - 135
Of the Syntax of Pronouns - 136
Of the Syntax of Verbs - 139
Of the Syntax of Particles and Gerunds - - - - 152
Of Prepositions - - - - 154
Of the Portuguese Orthography - - - - - 191
Of the Quantity of Syllables, and their Sound - - - 209
Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin - 215

PART III.

The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language 218
A Vocabulary of Words most used in Discourse - - 1
Of the Portuguese Coin - 58
A Collection of Portuguese Proverbs - - - - - 59
Familiar Dialogues - - 68
Letters on Mercantile Affairs, &c. - - - - - 83

PART IV.

Several useful and entertaining Passages, collected from the best Portuguese Writers - - - - - 107

A NEW

A NEW PORTUGUESE GRAMMAR.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

OF THE PORTUGUESE ALPHABET.

And the manner of pronouncing each separate Letter.

THE Portuguese alphabet contains twenty-four letters, viz.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, X, Y, Z.

The A is expressed by a sound like that of *a* in the English words *at*, *rat*, *fat*, &c.

B is expressed by a sound like that of the *be*, in the first syllable of the English word *Betty*.

C is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *celebrated*.

D is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *declare*.

E is expressed by a sound like that which we give to the English *a* when we pronounce the word *care*.

F is expressed by the same sound as in English.

G is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *generation.*

H is expressed by a sound like that of the English word *aghast* if you cut off the two last letters *st*, and keep the accent on the second *a.*

I is expressed by the sound of our *ee.*

J is called *j consoânte*, it is expressed by the sound of *ee*, and has the same power as the *g* before *e* or *i.*

L, as in English.

M, as in English.

N, as in English.

O has nearly the same sound as in the English word *store.*

P is expressed by a sound like that of *pe* in the English word *penny.*

Q is expressed by a sound like that of the English *k.*

R is expressed by a sound like that of the English participle *erred*, if you can cut off the last letter *d.*

S, as in English.

T is expressed by a sound like that of *tha* in the English word *Thames.*

U is expressed by a sound like that of *oo* in the English word *poop.*

V is expressed by a sound like that of *oo* ; they call it also *oo consoânte*, i. e. the v consonant.

X is expressed by a sound like that of our pronoun personal *she*, if you add an *s* to it, or as *shees.*

Y is expressed by a sound like that of an *i* in the English word *visible*, and is called *ypsilon.*

Z is expressed by the sound of our English *zed*, leaving out the *d*, or *zea.*

Of the manner of pronouncing the Portuguese Letters as combined in Syllables; and first

Of the Vowels.

A.

A in Portuguese is commonly pronounced like *a* in the following English words *adapted, castle,* &c. It is sometimes pronounced with less strength, and closely, as in *âmbos,* where the *a* is pronounced like *a* in the English word *ambition.*

E.

The letter *e* has two different sounds; the one open like *ai* in *daily;* the other close, like that in the English word *mellow.* Examples of the former, *fê,* faith, *pé,* foot, &c. Examples of the latter, *rêde,* a net, *parêde,* a wall, &c. In this consists a great part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation, which however, cannot be learnt but by a long use, notwithstanding all the rules that can be given.

I.

Is pronounced like *ee* in the English word *steel,* áço; or like *i* in the English words *still,* aínda; *visible,* visível.

O.

This vowel has two sounds; one open, as in the word *dó,* pity, where the *o* is pronounced like our *o* in the word *store;* the other close, as in the Portuguese article *do,* of, and the word *redôndo,* round, where the *o* is pronounced like our *u* in *turret* or *stumble.* It is likewise in the different pronunciation of this vowel that consists the greatest part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation; but it can be learned only by a long use.

U.

The vowel *u* is pronounced like *oo* in English.

Y.

Y has the same sound as the Portuguese vowel *i*.

Of Consonants.

B

Keeps always the same sound as in English.

C

Before *a, o, u,* and the consonants *l, r,* is properly pronounced as *k;* but before *e* and *i* it takes the hissing sound of *s:* it takes also the sound of *s* before *a, o, u,* when there is a dash under it thus *ç.*

☞ *I could wish the learned in Portugal would follow the resolution of the Royal Academy of Madrid, by expunging such dash, and placing the* s *in its stead, since they have in both languages the same hissing sound, which frequently occasions great confusion in the proper use of them.*

C before *h* is pronounced like *sh* in the English words *shine, shape,* &c.

Double *c* is sounded only before *e* and *i,* the first with the sound of *k,* and the other with the hissing sound of *s;* as in *accidênte,* accident, pronounce *aksidênte.*

D

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

F

Is pronounced always as in English.

G

Before the vowels *a, o, u,* and before consonants, is pronounced as in English: example, *gôsto,* taste; *gaióla,* cage; *gríto,* a cry.

G before *e* and *i* denotes the sound of *j* consonant.

Gua sounds almost like our *wa*: example, *guárda*, pronounce *gwarda*.

Gue, *gui*, are pronounced as *gue* in the word *guest*, and *gui* in the word *gift*; but in the verbs *arguír* and *redarguír*, it is to be pronounced as if it were written *argueer*, &c.

H.

The letter *h* is never aspirated nor pronounced at the beginning of words, as *hóra*, an hour; *homem*, a man: but, according to the modern orthography, all those words are written without an *h*.

H when preceded by a *c*, makes a sound with it like our *sh*. See the letter C, and also the letters L and N.

J

Is pronounced like our *j* consonant.

K.

The Portuguese have no such letter as *k*.

L

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

Lh is pronounced like *g* before an *l* in the Italian words *fíglio*, *foglio*, &c.

M

Is pronounced as in English, when placed before a vowel with which it forms a syllable; but, when it is at the end of words, and preceded by the letter *e*, it forms in Portuguese a nasal sound like that of the French words *vin*, wine; *pain*, bread; except *sôem*, *tôem*, from the verbs *soár*, *toár*, and some others.

M at the end of words, preceded by an *a*, *o*, or *i*, has such a nasal obtuse sound that can only be learned from a master's mouth.

N.

N being before a vowel with which it forms a syllable, is pronounced as in English; otherwise, it only gives a nasal sound to the vowel that precedes it.

N before *h* has the same sound as *gn* in Italian, or in the French words *Espagne, Allemagne.*

P.

P and *ph* are pronounced as in English.

Q

Is pronounced like *k:* example, *quéro,* I am willing, pronounce *kero.*

☞ The vowel *u* after *q* in the word *qual,* which, must be uttered so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear, is pronounced as in the English word *quantity,* in order to distinguish it from the substantive *cal,* lime.

R.

R and double *r* are pronounced as in English.

S.

S and *ss* are pronounced as in English.

S between two vowels is pronounced like a *z;* particularly in the words ending in *oso,* and *esa,* as *amorôso, cuidadôso, mêsa, defêsa,* &c.

T

Is pronounced as in English.

V

Is pronounced as in English.

X

Is pronounced as *sh* in English; except in the word *axîoma,* in which, according to *Feyjó,* the *x* is to be pronounced like *c.*

X after the vowel *e* is pronounced like *cs*, in the words, *extençam*, *extenuádo*, *expulso*, *excellênte*, and some other words.

X between two vowels is pronounced like *gz* in the words *exactamênte*, *exornár*; except *Alexândre*, *Paixám*, *Puxo*, *báxo*, and some other words, that may be learnt by use. You must take care to pronounce the *g* so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear.

Z

Is pronounced as in English, but at the end of words it is pronounced like *s*, as *rapáz*, boy; *Francez*, French; *perdíz*, partridge; *voz*, voice; *luz*, light, &c.

The tittle, or little dash, which the Portuguese call *til*, is set by them over some letters instead of *m*; as *bẽ* instead of *bem*; *convẽ* instead of *convém*; *hũa* instead of *huma*;* and as it is then to be considered as an *m*, see what we have said about the pronunciation of that letter.

They also set their *til*, ˜, over the vowels, *ao*, *aa*, in the end of words, thus *aõ*, *aã*. See what we have said above of *m* at the end of words preceded by an *a*.

Of Diphthongs.

The meeting of two vowels in one and the same syllable constitute what is called a Diphthong, and are the following in the Portuguese language.

Aa, as in *maçãa*, an apple.
Ae, as in *cães*, dogs.
Ay, as in *páy*, father.
Ai, as in *máis*, more.
Ao, as in *páo*, wood.
Au, as in *cáusa*, a cause.

---

* It may be here observed that the curved mark, ˜, is the most perfect, though it is found necessary, in English types, frequently to substitute the plain ¯ instead of the curved.

Eo, as in *céo*, heaven.
Ey, as in *rêy*, king.
Ei, as in *améi*, I loved.
Eu, as *éu*, I.
Io, as *vío*, he saw.
Oe, as in *poẽm*, they put; *compõẽm*, they compose; *meloẽs*, melons, &c.
Oy, as in *bôy*, an ox; *fôy*, he was.
Ou, as *dôu*, I give; *sou*, I am.
Ue, as *azúes*, blue:

☞ The two vowels in the following words must be plainly and distinctly pronounced:

Ai, as in *paíz*, a country, pronounce *pa-íz*.
Ea, as in *lampréa*, a lamprey, pronounce, *lampré-a*.
Ia, as *clemência*, clemency, pronounce, *clemênci-a*.
Io, as in *navío*, a ship, pronounce, *naví-o*.
Iu, as *viúva*, a widow, pronounce, *vi-úva*.
Oã, as *Lisbôa*, Lisbon, *prôa*, a prow, pronounce, *Lisbô-a*, &c.
Oe, as *tôem*, *sôem*, from the verbs, *toár*, and *soár*, pronounce, *tô-em*, &c.
Oi, as *roím*, bad, pronounce, *ro-ím*.
Oo, as *cooperaçám*, co-operation, pronounce, *co-operaçaõ*.
Ui, as *ruína*, ruin, pronounce, *ru-ína*.

CHAP. II.

Of the Articles.

THOSE particles called Articles, are properly prepositions, commonly put before nouns, to shew their gender, number, and case.

These articles are definite or indefinite.

Of the Definite Article.

The definite article marks the gender, number, and case of the nouns which it precedes.

The English tongue has but one definite article, namely *the*, which serves for both numbers.

The Portuguese has two, viz. *o* for the masculine and *a* for the feminine.

The definite article has five cases, the nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative; because the vocative in the nouns is designed and preceded merely by the particle *o*.

The Declension of the Masculine Article o.

Singular.	Plural.
Nominative, *o*, the.	Nominative, *os*, the.
Genitive, *do*, of the.	Genitive, *dos*, of the.
Dative, *ao*, or *o*, to the.	Dative, *aos*, or *os*, to the.
Accusative, *ao*, or *ó*, the.	Accusative, *aos*, or *os*, the.
Ablative, *do*, from *or* by the.	Ablative, *dos*, from *or* by the.

The Declension of the Feminine Article a.

Singular.	Plural.
Nominative, *a*, the.	Nominative, *às*, the.
Genitive, *da*, of the.	Genitive, *das*, of the.
Dative, *á*, to the.	Dative, *ás*, to the.
Accusative, *a*, the.	Accusative, *as*, the.
Ablative, *da*, from the.	Ablative, *das*, from or by the.

☞ Observe, that the Portuguese have an article for each gender, both in the singular and the plural.

Of the Indefinite Article.

The indefinite article may be put before the masculine as well as the feminine gender, before the plural as well as the singular number.

The indefinite article has but four cases, the genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative.

One may put *de* before a noun masculine as well as a feminine, as *húma corôa de réy*, a king's crown; the word *réy* is masculine; *hum chapéo de pálha*, a hat of straw; the word *pálha* is of the feminine gender.

The indefinite article *de* is also put before the plural as well as the singular number; example, *húma*

corôa de flôres, a crown of flowers; *hum práto de arróz*, a plate of rice.

Declension of the Indefinite Article.

Genitive, *de*, of. Accusative, *a*.
Dative, *á*, to. Ablative, *de*, from.

☞ The accusative of this article is not expressed in English: example, *Eu conhecí a sêu páy*, I knew his father, *êu conhecí a súa mãy*, I knew his mother.

The indefinite article may also be put before infinitives, and then it signifies *to*; as *he têmpo de fallár, de dormír, de lêr*, &c. it is time to speak, to sleep, to read, &c. *êu vôu a vêr, a fallár*, I am going to see, to speak.

N. B. Whenever we meet with *of* and *to* in English, followed by *the*, remember they are the indefinite articles, and then we must make use of the indefinite article *de*, or *a*, in Portuguese.

When the verb is in the infinitive mood, and serves as nominative to the following verb, they put the article *o* before it; as *o comêr e o dormír são as côusas máis necessárias nésta vída*, eating and sleeping are the greatest necessaries of life.

When the preposition *in* is followed by the article *the* or by a pronoun possessive, as *in the, in my, in thy, in his*, we must render it in Portuguese by *em o* or *no, em os* or *nos*, for the masculine; and by *em a* or *na, em as* or *nas*, for the feminine: example, in the garden, *em o jardím*, or *no jardím;* in the street, *em a rúa* or *na rúa;* in thy book, *em o têu*, or *no têu lívro;* in his bed, *em a súa*, or *na súa câma*, &c.

When after the preposition *with*, which in Portuguese is expressed by *com*, we find the articles *the*, or a pronoun possessive, as *with the, with my*, &c. we may say, *com o*, or *co, com a* or *coa, côm os*, or *cos, com as*, or *coas:* example, with the prince, *com o* or *co príncipe;* with the sword, *com a* or *coa espáda;* with the eyes, *com os* or *cos olhos;* with my books, *com os* or *cos mêus lívros*, &c.

When the preposition *with* is followed by a pronoun possessive, and this by a noun of quality or kindred, as *with your majesty*, *with your highness*, *with your excellency*, *with his brother*, &c. *with* must then be rendered by the Portuguese word *com*, as *com vóssa majestáde*, *com vóssa altéza*, *com séu irmão*, without using the article.

Observe, that sometimes the dative and accusative of the indefinite article are not expressed in English, particularly before pronouns personal and proper names; example, *convém á nós*, it behoves us; *António matóu a Pédro*, Anthony killed Peter.

CHAP. III.

Of the Nouns.

THE Portuguese nouns have various terminations, as will appear hereafter.

They have but two genders, the masculine and feminine.

The Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases, like the Latin, and the article only distinguishes the case.

Of nouns ending in a; *and of their declension.*

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. *a raínha*, the queen.	Nom. *as raínhas*, the queens.
Gen. *da raínha*, of the queen.	Gen. *das raínhas*, of the queens.
Dat. *á raínha*, to the queen.	Dat. *ás raínhas*, to the queens.
Acc. *a raínha*, the queen.	Acc. *as raínhas*, the queens.
Voc. *ó raínha*, O queen.	Voc. *ó raínhas*, O queens.
Abl. *da* ou *pélla raínha*, from *or* by the queen.	Abl. *das* ou *pellas raínhas*, from *or* by the queens.

We have already observed that the Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases; therefore there is

no occasion to display more examples of their declensions, because you need but change the article according to their gender.

Of the Gender of Nouns ending in a.

Nouns ending in *a* are generally of the feminine gender; as *rósa*, a rose; *janélla*, a window, &c. You must except *día*, a day, *planéta*, a planet; and other nouns ending in *a*, belonging to a man; as *marióla*, a porter; *jesuíta*, a jesuit: those derived from the Greek are likewise masculine; as *dógma*, *epigrâmma*, *clíma*; except scientific names, as *mathemática*, *theología*, &c.

Except also from this general rule some nouns that have the accent upon the last syllable; as *alvará*, a charter, or a prince's letters patent; *Pará*, one of the captainships of the Portuguese America, &c.

Observe, that the plural of nouns ending in *a* is formed by adding the letter *s* to the singular; as likewise the plural of all nouns that terminate in vowels.

Observe also, that nouns ending in *ãa* are of the feminine gender, and form their plural as those ending in *a*.

Of the Gender of Nouns ending in e.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender; as *dente*, a tooth; *válle*, a valley; *véntre*, the womb, &c.

The exceptions are *fé*, faith; *fônte*, a fountain; *cháve*, a key; *tôrre*, a tower; *áve*, a fowl; *cárne*, flesh or meat; *gênte*, people; *mórte*, death; *néve*, snow; *nôite*, night; *pônte*, a bridge; *péste*, plague; *párte*, part; *serpénte*, a serpent; *lébre*, a hare.

Except also all names of virtues, vices, faculties, and those expressive of the passions of the mind; as *virtúde*, virtue; *santidáde*, holiness; *bondáde*, goodness; *vaidáde*, vanity; *ociosidáde*, idleness, &c.

Thirdly, *idáde*, age; *velhíce*, old age; *rusticidáde*, rusticity; *capacidáde*, capacity; *felicidáde*, happiness; *sórte*, fortune; *árte*, art; *árvore*, a tree; *fertilidáde*, fertility; *séde*, thirst; *sébe*, a hedge; *côuve*, cabbage; *herdâde*, a farm or manor; *chaminé*, a chimney; *parêde*, a wall; *saúde*, health; *rêde*, a net; *maré*, the tide; *fébre*, fever; *galé*, a gallery, &c.

Of the Gender of the Nouns ending in i.

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine; as *éxtasi*, a rapture; *nébri*, a hawk, &c.

Of Nouns ending in o.

Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender; as *lívro*, a book; *fílho*, a son; *bráço*, an arm; *vestído*, a garment; *espélho*, a looking glass, &c. Except *náo*, a ship; *filhó*, a fritter or pancake; *eiró*, an eel.

Of Nouns ending in u.

All nouns ending in *ù* are masculine; as *perú*, a turkey; *grôu*, a crane.

Of Nouns ending in y.

Nouns ending in *y* are of the masculine gender; as *rêy*, king; *páy*, father; *bôy*, ox, &c. except *lêy*, a law; *mãy*, a mother.

Of the other Terminations of Nouns, or of those terminating in consonants.

1. All nouns ending in *al*, are masculine; as *sinál*, a sign or token; *sal*, salt. You must except *cal*, lime, which is feminine, and has no plural.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the letter *l* of the singular into *es*; as *sináes* from *sinál*; *animáes* from *animál*.

2. Nouns ending in *ar* are of the masculine gender; as *ar*, air.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *áres* from *ar*.

Some nouns ending in *as* in the plural are feminine, and have no singular; as *mígas*, *exéquias*, &c.

3. Nouns ending in *az* are of the masculine gender; as *rapáz*, a boy; except *paz*, peace. The plural is formed by the addition of *ez* to the singular.

4. Nouns ending in *el* are masculine; as *annél*; a ring; *papél*, paper, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *is*; as *annéis*, from *annél*; *papéis*, from *papél*.

5. Nouns ending in *em* are of the masculine gender; as *hómem*, a man; *bem*, benefit, &c. Except *órdem*, order; *viágem*, a voyage; *vírgem*, a virgin, &c. but *salvágem*, a savage, is common.

. The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*; as *hómens* from *hómem*, &c.

6. Nouns ending in *er* are of the masculine gender; as *podêr*, power; *prazêr*, pleasure, &c. Except *colhér*, a spoon; *mulhér*, a woman.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *colhéres*, from *colhér*.

7. Nouns ending in *ez* are of the masculine gender; as *freguêz*, a parishioner or a customer; *mêz*, month; *arnéz*, *levêz*, *revéz*, &c. Except *surdêz*, deafness; *torquêz*, *vêz*, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *freguêzes*, from *freguêz*; but *téz* has no plural.

8. Nouns ending in *il* are of the masculine gender; as *funíl*, a funnel; *barríl*, a barrel.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *s*, as *funís*, from *funíl*, &c. Except *aquátil*, *fáçil*, *pensíl*, &c. which change the *il* into *eis* in the plural, as *fáceis*, from *fácil*.

9. Nouns ending in *im* are of the masculine gender, as *espadím*, a little sword.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *espadíns* from *espadím*.

10. Nouns ending in *ir* or *yr* are of the masculine gender; but *mártir* or *mártyr*, a martyr, is common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

11. All nouns ending in *iz* are of the masculine gender; as *apprendíz*, an apprentice; *naríz*, nose; *verníz*, varnish; *matíz*, a shadowing in painting; *chafaríz*, *chamaríz*, &c. Except *abóiz*, *perdíz*, *raíz*, *codorníz*, *matríz*, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *perdízes* from *perdíz*.

12. Nouns ending in *ol* are of the masculine gender; as *anzól*, a hook; *sól*, the sun, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *anzóes* from *anzól*, &c.

13. Nouns ending in *om* are of the masculine gender; as *som*, sound; *dôm*, gift, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *sons* from *som*, &c.

14. Nouns ending in *or* are of the masculine gender; as *amór*, love, *temôr*, fear, &c. Except *dôr*, pain; *côr*, colour, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *amôres* from *amór*.

Nouns ending in *os* are of the masculine gender; as *Déos*, God.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *s* into *zes*, as *Déozes* from *Déos*.

15. Nouns ending in *oz* are of the masculine gender; as *albernóz*, a Moorish coat; *arróz*, rice; *algóz*, hangman, &c. Except *nóz*, a walnut; *vóz*, voice; *fóz*, the mouth of a river.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

16. Nouns ending in *ul* or *um* are of the masculine gender; as *sul*, the south; *Saúl*, Saul, a proper name of a man; *atúm*, tunny-fish.

The plural of those ending in *ul*, according to the learned *Bluteau*, is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *súes* from *sul*, *azúes* from *azúl*, blue, &c. Except *cônsules* from *cônsul*, a consul.

The plural of those ending in *um*, is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *atúns* from *atúm*.

17. Nouns ending in *uz* are of the masculine gender; as *arcabúz*, an arquebuss.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

18. Nouns ending in *aõ* are of the feminine gender; as *maõ*, hand; *composiçaõ*, composition, *oraçaõ*, oration, &c. Except *paõ*, bread; *anaõ*, a dwarf; *ouçaõ*, a hand-worm; *trovaõ*, thunder; *esquadraõ*, a squadron; *piaõ*, a child's top; *borraõ*, a blot with ink; *papelaõ*, paste-board; *chaõ*, the ground, *quinhaõ*, a share.

There is no certain rule for the formation of the plural of the nouns ending in *aõ;* because some change the *aõ* of the singular into *ães*, as *Alemães*, from *Alemaõ*, a German; *capitães*, from *capitaõ*, a captain; *caẽs*, from *caõ*, a dog, *paẽs*, from *paõ*, a loaf; &c. Some change the *aõ* of the singular into *ãos;* as *cidadãos*, from *cidadaõ*, a citizen; *christãos*, from *christaõ*, a christian; *cortezaõs* from *cortezaõ*, a courtier; *villãos*, from *villaõ*, a villain, &c. Some change the *aõ* of the singular into *ões;* as *esquadrões*, from *esquadraõ*, a squadron; *trovões*, from *travaõ*, thunder; *conclusões*, from *conclusaõ*, a conclusion; *orações*, from *oraçaõ*, an oration; and generally all the Portuguese nouns that may be easily made English, by changing their termination *çaõ* into the English termination *tion*, as *declinaçaõ*, declension or declination, *consideraçaõ*, consideration, &c. and these are of the feminine gender.

19. All nouns signifying a male, must be of the masculine gender; as *dúque*, duke; *marquéz*, a marquis; *cônde*, count, and those denoting a female are always feminine.

You may form two general rules from what has been said concerning the formation of the plural of nouns, viz.

I. That all nouns ending in any of the vowels have their plural formed by adding the letter *s* to the singular.

II. That the plural of nouns ending in *az*, *ez*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

Of Augmentatives.

The Portuguese have their augmentatives formed by the increase of one or two syllables, which they add to the end of their nouns, and serve either to augment the signification of nouns, or to declare a thing contemptible; and so, from *hómem*, a man, they form, *hómemzarraõ*, a great strong man; *tôlo*, a fool, *toleiraõ*, a great fool, &c. and some others that may be learnt by use. They have also their augmentatives for the feminine; as, *molherôna*, a great stout woman; *toleirôna*, &c.

There are a great many nouns that appear, by their termination, to be augmentatives, though they are not; as, *forão*, a ferret; *atafôna*, an ass or a horse-mill, &c.

Of Diminutives.

The diminutives lessen the signification of their primitives.

The diminutives in the Portuguese language are always formed by changing the last vowel of the primitives into *ínho;* but they denote either smallness of things, or kindness and flattery; as *bichínho*, a little worm, from *bícho*, a worm; *coitadínho*, from *coitádo*, a poor little man; *bonitínho*, a little pretty

person or thing, from *bonito*, pretty. Sometimes they are formed by adding *zínho* to the primitives; as *caõzínho*, a little dog, from *caõ*, a dog, *irmaõzínho*, dear little brother, from *irmaõ*, &c.

The diminutives that serve for the feminine have their termination in *ínha*, or *zínha*; as *maõzínha*, a little hand, from *maõ*, a hand; *cabecínha*, a little head, from *cabeça*, a head. You may see in the last example, that the diminutives serving for the feminine and ending in *ínha*, are formed by changing the last syllable *a* of the primitive into *ínha*.

Observe that many nouns appear to be diminutives without being so; as *moínho*, a mill; *espínha*, a fish-bone.

Note, the diminutives in Portuguese convey sometimes a bad meaning, and denote contempt.

Of Nouns Adjective.

All adjectives ending in *o* make their feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as *dôuta*, from *dôuto*, learned; but *máo*, bad, makes *mà* in the feminine.

Those that end in *aõ* have their feminine in *ãa*; as, *sãa*, from *saõ*, healthy; *louçãa*, from *louçāo*, brisk, gay, beautiful; *mẽaa*, from *meão*, middling, ordinary.

Those ending in *e* are common to both genders; as, *fórte*, strong, &c.

Those that end in *m* make their feminine by adding an *a* to the masculine; as, *húma*, from *hum*, one; *algúma*, from *algúm*, some, &c. and sometimes by changing the *m* into *a*; as, *commúa*, from *commúm*, common; *bôa*, from *bom*, good.

Those that end in *u* make their feminine by adding *a* to the masculine, as *núa*, from *nu*, naked; *crúa*, from *cru*, raw.

Those that end in *ez* are common to both genders; as *cortêz*, civil, kind; *capáz*, capable, &c. except some which make the feminine, by adding *a*

to the masculine; as, *Francêza*, from *Francêz*, French; *Portuguêza*, from *Portuguêz*, Portuguese

Espanhól, Spanish, makes *Espanhóla* in the feminine: but generally those that end in *l* are common to both genders; as *affável*, affable; *cruél*, cruel, &c.

Of the Comparison of Adjectives.

The comparison of adjectives is the way of increasing their signification by certain degrees, which are three, viz. the positive, comparative and superlative.

The positive lays down the natural signification of the adjective; as, *nóbre*, noble; *gránde*, great.

The comparative raises it to a higher degree, by comparing it to the positive, which in Portuguese is performed by the adverbs *máis*, more; *mênos*, less; as, *máis nôbre*, more noble; *mênos bélla*, less handsome.

There are some adjectives which do not admit of *máis* or *mênos* before them; as *celéste*, *nascído*, *comprádo*, *desterrádo*, &c.

There are four Portuguese comparatives which end in *or*: they may also be expressed by *máis*, more, before their positive; as,

Mayór, greater, *maís gránde*.
Menór, less, *maís pequêno*.
Peór, worse, *maís roím*.
Melhór, better, *maís bôm*.

To which may be added *superiôr*, superior; *inferiôr*, inferior; *deteriór*; and some others.

Observe, that there can be no comparison made without the word *than*; and that this word is expressed in Portuguese by *que*. Ex. *Máis cláro que o sól*, clearer than the sun; *máis brânco que a nêve*, more white than the snow. The particle *que* is sometimes preceded by the word *do*. Ex. *ísto he máis do que êu lhe disse*, this is more than I told him;

hé máis prudênte do que parêce, he is more wise than it appears.

N. B. The comparatives *superiôr*, *inferiôr*, and some others, do not require *que* before the second term but the dative of the articles, viz. *á, ás, áo; aos*: Examp. *O ôutro he superiór a este*, the other is superior to this.

When the Portuguese have a mind to heighten their comparisons, they make use of, *muíto maís*, a great deal or much more; as also of *muíto mênos*, a great deal, or much less. Ex. *Cæsar he muíto máis estimádo que Pompêo*, Cæsar is much more esteemed than Pompey; *Pompêo foi muíto mênos felíz que Cæsar*, Pompey was much less happy than Cæsar.

Of the Superlative.

The Portuguese superlative is formed from the noun adjective, by changing the last letter into *íssimo* for the masculine, and into *íssima* for the feminine: thus, from *béllo* is formed *bellíssimo* and *bellíssima*, most handsome. But sometimes the superlative is formed by adding *muíto*, very, to the positive; as, *muíto álto*, very tall.

Observe that some superlatives are differently formed; as, *frigidíssimo*, from *frío*, cold; *amicíssimo*, from *amígo*, friend; *antiquíssimo*, from *antígo*, ancient; *capacíssimo*, from *capáz*, capable; *nobilíssimo*, from *nóbre*, noble; *acérrimo*, from *ácre*, sharp, or acerb; *riquíssimo*, from *ríco*, rich; *fertilíssimo*, from *fértil*, fruitful; *boníssimo*, from *bôm*, good; *fidelíssimo*, from *fiél*, faithful; *sacratíssimo*, from *sagrádo*, sacred, &c.

The most is expressed also in Portuguese by *o máis* and *a máis*; as the most fair, or fairest, *o máis béllo, a máis bélla.* But you must observe, that there are some adjectives which do not admit of *muito*, very, *o máis*, or *a mais*; as *mórto*, *desterrado*, &c.

Observe, that by changing the last letter of the superlatives into *amente*, superlative adverbs are

composed; as, from *doutíssimo*, learned; *doutíssimaménte*, most learnedly, &c. But the positive adverbs are formed by adding *ménte* to the feminine of the positive; as, *doutaménte*, learnedly, from *dôuta*, the feminine of *dôuto; prudenteménte*, prudently, from *prudênte*, prudent.

Of Numeral Nouns; and first, of Cardinal.

The cardinal nouns are such as express the number of things; as,

Húm,	one	*Vínte e dôus,*	twenty-two
Dôus,	two	*Vínte e três,* &c.	twenty-three, &c.
Três,	three		
Quátro,	four	*Trínta,*	thirty
Cínco,	five	*Quarênta,*	forty
Sêis,	six	*Cincoênta,*	fifty
Séte,	seven	*Sessênta,*	sixty
Oúto or *ôito,*	eight	*Setênta,*	seventy
Nóve,	nine	*Oitênta,*	eighty
Déz,	ten	*Novênta,*	ninety
O'nze,	eleven	*Cêm,*	a hundred
Dóze,	twelve	*Duzêntos,*	two hundred
Tréze,	thirteen	*Trezêntos,*	three hundred
Quatôrze,	fourteen	*Míl,*	a thousand
Quínze,	fifteen	*Dôus mil,*	two thousand
Dezasêis,	sixteen	*Milhaõ,* or *cônto,*	a million
Dezaséte,	seventeen	*Húma dezêna,*	half a score
Dezôuto,	eighteen	*Húma duzía,*	a dozen
Dezanóve,	nineteen	*Húma vintêna,*	a score
Vínte,	twenty	*Dúas vintênas,*	two scor
Vínte e húm,	twenty-one	*Três vintênas,*	three score

Observe, that all the cardinals that are adjective nouns, are not declined, being of the common gender, except *hum, húma,* one; *dôus, dúas,* two; and those composed of *cênto*, a hundred; as, *duzêntos, duzêntas,* two hundred; *quátro cêntos, quátro cêntas,* four hundred, &c. and when the feminine *húma* is preceded by *á,* and followed by *á oútra,* then *húma* signifies *first*, and *á ôutra, secondly.*

The plural, *húns, húmas,* is taken sometimes instead of *algúns, algúmas,* signifying some; as *húns reys,* some kings; *húmas raínhas,* some queens.

N. B. *Cênto* loses *to* before a noun, either masculine or feminine, and the *n* is changed into *m*; therefore you must say, *cem soldádos*, not *cento soldádos*. It only retains *to* and *n* when it is followed by another number, as *cénto e húm*, &c. a hundred and one, &c. and when it is substantive.

N. B. Sometimes *cênto* is made a substantive; as *hum cênto de castánhas*, one hundred of chesnuts; and so all the cardinal numbers, when preceded by an article, or by another noun of number, as *o cinco de páos*, the five of clubs; *húm séte*, a seven.

The cardinal number is rendered into English by the ordinal, when it expresses the day of the month, or the date of any act; as, *chegôu a quátro de Máyo*, he arrived the fourth day of May.

Ordinal Nouns.

Ordinal nouns are such as express the order of things; as,

Primêiro,	first
Segúndo,	second
Tercêiro,	third
Quárto,	fourth
Quínto,	fifth
Séxto,	sixth
Sétimo,	seventh
Oitávo,	eighth
Nôno,	ninth
Décimo,	tenth
Undécimo, or *onzêno*,	eleventh
Duodécimo,	twelfth
Décimo-tércio,	thirteenth
Décimo-quárto,	fourteenth
Dècimo-quínto,	fifteenth
Décimo-séxto,	sixteenth
Décimo-séptimo,	seventeenth
Décimo-oitávo,	eighteenth
Décimo-nôno,	nineteenth
Vigésimo, or *ventésimo*,	twentieth
Vigésimo-primeiro,	one and twentieth
Trigésimo,	thirtieth
Quadragésimo, or *quarantésimo*,	fortieth
Quinquagésimo,	fiftieth
Sexagésimo,	sixtieth
Septuagésimo,	seventieth
Octagésimo,	eightieth
Nonagésimo,	ninetieth
Cêntésimo,	the hundredth
Millésimo,	the thousandth
U'ltimo,	the laſt

The proportionable numbers are, *símplez*, *duplicádo* or *dobrádo*, *triplicádo* or *tríplice* or *tresdobrádo*, *quadruplicádo* or *quádruplo*, *cêntuplo*; a single, double, threefold, fourfold, a hundredfold.

The distributive nouns are, *hum á hum*, one by one; *dous á dous*, two by two.

In English all ordinal numbers may be formed into adverbs: but in Portuguese they have only *primeiraménte*, and *secundáriaménte*, or *segundáriamente*, first, secondly; and to express thirdly, fourthly, &c. they say, *em tercêiro lugar, em quárto lugár*, in the third place, in the fourth place.

A method (for those who understand French) to learn a great many Portuguese words in a short time.

We must observe, that the French syllable *cha* is generally expressed in Portuguese by *ca*, rejecting the *h*. Examp. *Charbon, charité, chasteté, chapón, chapélle, chapítre*, &c. the Portuguese say, *carvaõ, caridáde, castidáde, capaõ, capélla, capítulo*, &c. Observe also the following rules.

French words ending in *ance*, or *ence*; as, *constance, vigilance, cleménce, prudénce*, &c. in Portuguese end in *áncia* or *éncia*; as *constáncia, vigiláncia, cleméncia, prudéncia*, &c.

Agne makes *ánha*; montagne, *montánha*; campagne, *campánha*.

Ie makes *ia*; comedie, *comédia*. Here you lean the accent upon the *e*, and not upon the *i*, as in French; poesie, *poesía*.

Oire makes *ória*; gloire, *glória*; victoire, *victória*.

Ure makes *úra*; imposture, *impostúra*; figure, *figúra*.

Ison makes *zaõ*; raison, *razaõ*; prison, *prizaõ*.

On makes *aõ*; charbon, *carvaõ*; baron, *baraõ*.

Ulier makes *ulár*: regulier, *regulár*; particulier, *particulár*.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in e.

Ant, ánte; vigilant, *vigilánte*; amant, *amante*.

Ent, adjective, *énte*; prudent, *prudênte*; diligent, *diligênte*.

Té makes *dáde*; pureté, *puridáde*; liberalité, *liberalidáde.*

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in vel.

Able, *vel*; louable, *louvável*; aimable, *amável.*

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in ez.

Ois, names of nations, *ez*; François, *Francêz*; Anglois, *Inglêz.*

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in o.

Ain, and *ien*, names of nations, *âno*; Romain, *Románo*: Italien, *Italiáno*; Napolitain, *Napolitâno.*

Aire, *ário*: salaire, *salário*; téméraire, *temerário.*

Eau, *eo*, chapeau; *chapéo.*

Ent, substantive, *ênto*; sacrement, *sacramênto.*

Eux, *ôso*; généreux, *generôso*; gracieux, *graciôso.*

If, *ivo*; actif, *actívo*, passif, *passívo.*

C, *co*; porc, *pôrco*; Turc, *Túrco.*

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in or.

Eur, *or*; terreur, *terrôr*; humeur, *humôr*; chaleur, *calôr.*

Change of Terminations of the Verbs and Participles.

Er, in the infinitive mood of the first conjugation, makes *ár*; aimer, *amár*; chanter, *cantár.*

Ir makes *ir*, in the infinitive mood; as, partir, *partír*; sentir, *sentír.*

Oir makes *êr* in the infinitive mood; as, *concevoir*, *concebêr.*

The participles in *é* make *ádo*; aimé, *amádo*; parlé, *falládo.*

The participles in *i* make *ído*: dormi, *dormido*; menti, *mentído.*

The participles in *u* make *do*; as, *conçu*, *concebído*, *entendu*, *entendído.*

There are a great many Portuguese words that have no manner of analogy with the French, which prevent these rules from being general.

CHAP. III.

Of Pronouns.

THE pronouns are personal, conjunctive, mixed, positive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, or improper.

Of personal Pronouns.

The pronouns personal are *éu* and *nos* for the first person; they serve for the masculine and the feminine.

Tu and *vos* for the second: these serve also for the masculine and feminine.

E'lle, for the third person of the masculine gender; and *élles* in the plural.

E'lla, for the third person of the feminine gender, makes in the plural *éllas*.

The pronouns personal are declined with the article indefinite, *de, a, á, da*.

The Declension of personal Pronouns.

First Person.

Singular Number.	Plural Number.
Nom. *Eu*, I.	Nom. *nós*, we.
Gen. *de mim*, of me.	Gen. *de nós*, of us.
Dat. *a mim*, to me.	Dat. *a nós*, or *nos*, us.
Acc. *a mim*, me.	Acc. *a nós*, us.
Abl. *de mim*, or *por mim*, from *or* by me.	Abl. *de nós*, or *por nós*, from *or* by us.

With me is rendered by *comígo*; and sometimes they add the pronoun *mésmo* to it; *me* is expressed by *me* in the Portuguese; as speak to me, *falláï-me*; tell me, *dizéi-me*: send me, *mandái-me*; write to me, *escrevéi-me*; *elle dísse-me*, he told me, &c.

With us is rendered in Portuguese by *com nósco*.

Us is rendered by *nos.* Examp. tell us, *dizéi-nos*; give us, *dái-nos*; show us, *mostrái-nos*; *elle dísse-nos,* he told us, &c. In these examples *us* is not a pronoun personal, but conjunctive, as you will see hereafter.

Second Person.

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. *tu*, thou.	Nom. *vós*, ye *or* you.
Gen. *de ti*, of thee.	Gen. *de vós*, or *vós*, you.
Dat. *a ti*, or *te*, to thee.	Dat. *a vós*, or *vós*, you.
Acc. *a ti*, or *te*, thee.	Acc. *a vós*, or *vós*, you.
Abl. *de ti*, or *por ti*, from *or* by thee.	Abl. *de vós*, or *por vós*, from *or* by you.

With thee is rendered by *comtígo*; and sometimes they add to it the pronoun *mêsmo*. *You*, or *yourself*, after imperatives are rendered by *vos*, and not *vós*; as, be you contented, *contentái vos*; show yourself, *mostrái-vos*: hide yourself, *escondéi-vos.*

Thee or *thyself*, are expressed after imperatives by *te*; as *móstrate*, show thyself.

With you is rendered in Portuguese by *com vósco*.

Third Person. For the Masculine.

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. *élle*, he *or* it.	Nom. *élles*, they.
Gen. *délle*, of him, *or* of it.	Gen. *délles*, of them.
Dat. *a élle*, to him, *or* to it.	Dat. *a élles*, to them.
Acc. *a élle*, him, *or* it.	Acc. *a élles*, them.
Abl. *délle* or *por élle*, from *or* by him *or* it.	Abl. *délles* or *por élles*, from *or* by them.

The Portuguese have no particular pronoun, as our *it*, for things that are inanimate.

Remember that the pronoun *him*, or to *him*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese, by *lhe*, and *them*, or *to them*, by *lhes*.

With him is rendered in Portuguese sometimes by *com élle*, and sometimes by *comsigo*, to which they add the pronoun *mêsmo*.

Third Person. Feminine.

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. *élla*, she *or* it.	Nom. *éllas*, they.
Gen. *délla*, of her *or* of it.	Gen. *déllas*, of them.
Dat. *a élla*, to her *or* to it.	Dat. *a éllas*, to them.
Acc. *a élla*, her *or* it.	Acc. *a éllas*, them.
Abl. *délla*, or *por élla*, from *or* by her *or* it.	Abl. *déllas* or *por éllas*, from *or* by them.

Remember that the pronoun *her* or *to her*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese by *lhe*, and *them*, or *to them*, by *lhes*; as you will see in the pronouns conjunctive.

With her is rendered in Portuguese by *com élla* or *comsigo*.

Of the Pronoun si, himself, *or* one's self.

There is another pronoun personal that serves indifferently for the masculine and feminine: this is *si*, one's self. It has no nominative.

Gen. *de si*, of one's self, himself, *or* herself.
Dat. *a si*, to one's self, *&c.*
Acc. *a si*, one's self, *&c.*
Abl. *de si*, *por si*, from *or* by one's self.

It is joined with the pronoun *mésmo* or *mésma*; as *de* or *por si mésmo*, by himself; *por si mésma*, or *de si mésma*, by herself; *o hómem naõ áma senaõ a si mésmo*, man loves himself only; *quem nao hé bôm senaõ pára si, naõ hé bem que viva*, who minds no body but himself only, don't deserve to live; *o vício he abominável de si mésmo*, vice is hateful of itself; *a térra de si*, or *de si mésma he fértil*, the earth is fruitful of itself.

Observe that they join also the pronoun *mésmo* to pronouns personal, as the French do with their pronoun *même*, viz.

Eu mêsmo, myself. *nós mêsmos*, ourselves.
Tu mêsmo, thyself. *vós mêsmos*, yourselves.
E'lle mêsmo, himself. *êlles mêsmos* } themselves.
E'lla mêsma, herself. *éllas mêsmas* } themselves.
o hómem mêsmo, man, himself; *a mêsma virtúde*, virtue itself.

1st. Observe, that *mêsmo* with the article is also an adjective, signifying *the same*; thus *o mêsmo, a mêsma, as mêsmos, as mêsmas*, the same, relating to some nouns expressed or understood.

2dly. Note, That they also join the adjective *óutro*, other, to the plural of the pronouns personal, *I* and *thou*; so they say, *nós óutros*, we; *vós óutros*, you.

3dly. *Comsígo* may be rendered in English (as we have said above) by *with him* and *with her*; but you must observe, that it may be rendered also by *with them* in the plural; and sometimes by *about him, about her* or *about them*. Exam. *Elle* or *élla, núnca tráz dinhéiro comsígo*, he, *or* she, never has money about him, *or* about her.

Of conjunctive Pronouns.

The pronouns conjunctive are so called, because they always come immediately before or after the verb that governs them.

The pronouns conjunctive bear a great resemblance to the pronouns personal; the pronouns personal are,

Eu, I; *tu*, thou; *élle*, he; *nós*, we; *vós*, ye; *êlles*, they.

There are seven pronouns conjunctive, viz. *me*, to me, *or* me: *te*, to thee, *or* thee; *se*, to himself, *or* himself, to herself, *or* herself; *lhe* to him, *or* him, to her, *or* her; *nos*, to us, *or* us; *vos*, to you, *or* you, *lhes*, to them, *or* them.

Example.

Isto me agráda, this pleases me; *hé-me necessário*, I want.
Dêos te vê, God sees thee.
Ella se lôuva, she praises herself.

Eu lhe dirêi, I will tell him, *or* I will tell her.

Eu lhes promettí, I promised them: as well for the masculine as the feminine.

The pronoun conjunctive, *lhe*, is always put after the verb, when it is in the imperative mood; as *dizéi-lhe*, tell him; *cortái-lhe as ázas*, cut his wings; but when the verb is in some other mood, it may be put either before or after it; as *élle lhe cortôu*, or *élle cortôu-lhe a cabêça*, he has cut off his head. The same observation takes place in the other pronouns conjunctive.

The pronoun conjunctive, *se*, is sometimes followed by *me, lhe*, &c. as *offeréce-se me*, it is offered to me; *representôu-se lhe*, it was represented to him, &c.

1st. Note, that the pronouns conjunctive are very often joined to a verb, preceded or followed by the verb *havér*. Examp. *Dar-lhe héi tánta pancáda*, or *éu lhe héi de dar tánta pancáda, que*, &c. I will cudgel him so much, that, &c.

2dly. *Lhe* is sometimes rendered in English by *you*. Examp. *Que lhe paréce aquíllo?* What do you think of that? *assênta no que lhe dígo*, be persuaded, *or* believe what I tell you.

Of Pronouns mixed.

There are some pronouns in Portuguese which are composed of the pronouns personal and conjunctive, and which therefore are called mixed.

To clear up this matter, you must express them as underneath, changing the letter *e* of the pronoun conjunctive into *o* for the masculine, and *a* for the feminine; as to say, *to me of it*, instead of *me o*, or *me a*, you must say, *mo* or *ma*. In the like manner, instead of *lhe o* or *lhe a* you must say, *lho* or *lha*, &c. as you may observe in the following pronouns mixed, or rather contracted.

mo, m.	me of it, *or* it *or* him to me.	*to*	thee of it *or* it *or* him to thee.
ma, f.	me of it. *or* it *or* her to me.	*ta*	thee of it *or* it *or* her to thee.
mos, m. *mas*, f.	me of them, *or* them to me	*tos*, m. *tas*, f.	thee of them *or* them to thee.

selo, m. } it to himself, to herself, *or* to themselves.
sela, f. } it to herself, to himſelf, *or* to themſelves.
selos, m. } them to himself, to herself, *or* to themselves.
selas, f. } them to herself, to himself, *or* to themselves.

lho, m. { to him, *or* to her of it *or* it to him, *or* to her.

lha, f. { to him, *or* to her of it *or* it to him, *or* to her.

lhos, m. } to them of it, to him of them, *or* to her of them.
lhas, f. } to them of it, to him of them, *or* to her of them.

nolo, m. } us of it, *or* it to us.
nola, f. } us of it, *or* it to us.
nolos, m. p. } them to us.
nolas, f. p. } them to us.
volo, m. *vola*, f. } you of it, *or* it of you.
volos, m. p. *volas*, f. p. } you of them, *or* them to you.

Here you have some Examples.

Pâra dár-lho, to give it tò him *or* to her.
Dái-mo, give it me.
Eu to daréi, I'll give it you.
Entrégo-to, I deliver it to you.
Díze-lho, you tell it him, *or* her.
Entréga-lhos, deliver them to him, *or* to her.
Lá selo haja, leave that to himself.
Elle nolo dísse, he told us of it.
Eu volos mandaréi, I'll ſend to you.

If the verbs are in the infinitive, the pronouns mixed may be put either before or after the verbs; as, *para dizérmo*, or *para mo dizér*, to tell me it; but if the verbs are in the gerund, the pronouns

mixed must be transposed; as, *dizêndomo*, and not *mo dizêndo*, in telling me it.

You must make use of these pronouns, both masculine and feminine, according to the gender of the thing named, sent or delivered, and not of the person to whom the thing is said, sent, given, &c.

Of possessive Pronouns.

Pronouns possessive, so called, because they denote that the thing spoken of belongs to the person or thing they are connected with, are of two sorts, absolute and relative. See the remarks hereafter.

The English have no article in the nominative before the pronouns possessive; but the Portuguese have, as, *my*, *o mêu*, *a mínha*, fem. Plur. *os mêus*, *às mínhas*, fem.

The pronouns possessive in Portuguese are the following:

Sing. *mêu*, m. *mínha*, f. }
Plur. *mêus*, m. *mínhas*, f. } my.
Sing. *téu*, m. *túa*, f. }
Plur. *têus*, m. *túas*, f. } thy.
Sing. *sêu*, m. }
Plur. *séus*, m. } his *or* its.
Sing. *súa*, f. }
Plur. *súas*, f. } her *or* its.
Sing. *nósso*, m. *nossa*, f. }
Plur. *nóssos*, m. *nossas*, f. } our.
Sing. *vósso*, m. *vóssa*, f. }
Plur. *vóssos*, m. *vóssas*, f. } your.

The pronouns possessive are declined with the definite article *o* for the masculine, and *a* for the feminine.

Example.

Singular.

Nom. *a mêu lívro*, my book.
Gen. *do mêu lívro*, of my book.
Dat. *ao mêu lívro*, to my book.
Acc. *mêu lívro*, my book.
Abl. *do* ou *péllo mêu lívro*, from *or* by my book.

Plural.

Nom. *os mêus lívros*, my books.
Gen *dos mêus lívros*, of my books.
Dat. *aos mêus lívros*, to my books.
Abl. *dos* ou *pêllos meus lívros*, from *or* by my books.

Decline all the other masculines after the same manner, and their feminines by the article *a*; as my house; *a mínha cása*; of my house, *da mínha cása*, &c.

Note, you must not use the definite article when the pronouns possessive precede nouns of quality, as well as those of kindred, but the indefinite article *de, a*, &c.

Example.

Vóssa magestáde, your majesty.
De vóssa magestáde, of your majesty, &c.
Mêu páy, my father.
De mêu pây, of my father, &c.

From the above examples it appears that nouns declined by the indefinite article have no article in the nominative.

Though the definite article is sometimes used before nouns of kindred, yet we ought not to use it, according to the old proverb: *tu vivendo bonos, scribendo sequare peritos.*

Seu is sometimes made use of in room of *vósso* and *vóssa*, in the polite way of speaking: so they say, *tênho o sêu lívro*, I have your book: *falléi ao sêu criádo*, I spoke to your servant; *os séus ólhos saõ formósos*, your eyes are handsome.

Remarks upon the Possessives.

The pronouns possessive absolute always come before the noun they belong to. We have expressed them above.

Pronouns possessive relative are so called because they not being joined to their substantive, suppose it either expressed before, or understood, and are related to it. They are the following:

	Masc.	Fem.	
Sing.	*Méu,*	*minha,*	mine.
Plur.	*Méus,*	*minhas,*	
Sing.	*Téu,*	*túa,*	thine.
Plur.	*Téus,*	*túas,*	
Sing.	*Séu,*	*súa,* hers.	
Plur.	*Séus,*	*súas,* theirs.	
Sing.	*Nósso,*	*nóssa,*	ours.
Plur.	*Nóssos,*	*nóssas,*	
Sing.	*Vósso,*	*vóssa,*	yours.
Plur.	*Vóssos,*	*vóssas,*	

To express in Portuguese *it is mine, it is thine,* &c. we must say *he mêu, he têu,* &c.

The pronouns possessive absolute do not agree, in Portuguese, in gender with the noun of the possessor, as in English, but with that of the thing possessed; as, *a mãy âma a sêu fílho,* the mother loves her son; *o pái âma a súa fílha,* the father loves his daughter. So you see that the pronoun masculine *sêu,* in Portuguese, is sometimes rendered by *her* in English, and the feminine *súa* by *his.*

The same observation is to be made upon the possessives relative, according to the gender of the noun that is understood; therefore they say of a hat, (for instance) belonging to a lady, *he o sêu,* it is hers; because the noun understood, viz. *chapéo,* hat, is of the masculine gender.

We have already said, that *sêu,* and *súa,* are sometimes rendered into English by *your,* when they are absolute: but you must also observe, that they are sometimes rendered into English by *yours,* when they are pronouns relative, and that in the polite way of speaking; and so they say, speaking of any thing belonging to a gentleman or lady, *he o sêu,* or

he a súa, it is yours; but if the gentleman or lady are not present, or if they do not speak directly to them, though present, then the pronouns *sêu* and *súa* must be rendered into English by *his* or *hers*.

Note, That the pronouns possessive absolute, in Portuguese, agree also in number with the noun of the thing possessed; hence it is that they say *a súa história*, its history, speaking of a kingdom, province, &c. or, his history, speaking of any history composed by a man; or, her history, speaking of that written by a woman; or, their history, speaking of that written by several hands, or of several people. And from this example you may learn, that the Portuguese have no particular pronoun possessive for things that are inanimate, as we have the pronoun *its*. Hence at last it follows, that when the Portuguese possessives *sêu* and *súa* are relative, they are rendered into English by *his*, or *hers*, or *theirs*, according to the gender and number of the noun of the possessor that is understood.

You must also observe, that they sometimes add the third pronoun personal, *dêlle*, of him, *dêlles*, of them, *délla*, of her, *déllas*, of them; to denote more plainly whose thing it is they speak of; as *o sêu lívro dêlles*, their book; as, *as súas palávras délla*, her words, &c.

Note, that the possessives absolute are left out when they are preceded by a verb, or by a pronoun conjunctive, which sufficiently denote whose thing it is they speak of; the Portuguese being then contented with the article; as *dêvo-lhe a vída*, I owe my life to him, or to it; *dóe-me a barríga*, my belly aches.

When the pronouns possessive absolute are before nouns of different genders in the same sentence, and with which they are grammatically construed, they ought to be repeated; as, *sêu pái e súa mãy*, his father and mother: not *sêu pái e mãy*.

Moreover, the Portuguese use the pronoun possessive absolute in the following case, when we use the possessive relative; a friend of mine, *hum dos méus amígos.*

The possessives *mínha, túa, súa, nóssa, vóssa,* may be also relative, but with a different meaning. Examples; *Levarêi a mínha avânte,* I will insist upon it, I will obtain it; *êlle levará a súa avânte,* he will insist upon it, he will do it; *leváí a vóssa avânte,* go on with your resolution; *fazêr das súas,* to play tricks, to dodge.

Os méus, os sêus, &c. signify my relations, or my friends, thy relations, or thy friends; as, *os sêus naõ o quérem,* his parents or relations do not like him; *dêixa-o hir com os sêus,* let him go with his people, his countrymen, &c.

Take notice, that when the pronoun possessive is accompanied by a pronoun demonstrative, they do not put the article in the nominative; they do not say *o éste méu lívro,* but *éste méu lívro,* this book of mine. But in all other cases they make use of the indefinite article; as *d' éste* or *déste vósso lívro,* &c.

Of the Pronouns demonstrative.

They are called pronouns demonstrative, because they serve to point out or demonstrate any thing or person; as, this book, *éste lívro;* that man, *aquêlle hómem.*

There are three principal demonstratives in Portuguese, viz. *éste,* this; *ésse,* that; *aquêlle,* that; but observe that *éste* shews the thing or person that is just near or by us; *ésse* shews the thing that is a little farther, or near the person; and *aquêlle* shews what is very distant from the person who speaks, or is spoken of, and is expressed in English by *that there,* or *yonder.* You must also observe, that *ésse, éssa,* is used in writing to any person to express the place or town wherein he dwells; as *tênho falládo néssa cidáde*

com múitos amígos, I have spoken in your city with many friends.

These Pronouns are declined thus:

		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular.	Nom.	*êste,*	*ésta,*	*ísto,*	this.
	Gen.	*dêste,*	*désta,*	*dísto,*	of this.
	Dat.	*a êste,*	*a ésta,*	*a ísto,*	to this.
	Acc.	*êste,*	*ésta,*	*ísto,*	this.
	Abl.	*dêste,*	*désta,*	*dísto,*	from this.
				No Neut.	
Plural.	Nom.	*êstes,*	*éstas,*		these.
	Gen.	*dêstes,*	*déstas,*		of these.
	Dat.	*a êstes,*	*a éstas,*		to these.
	Acc.	*êstes,*	*éstas,*		these.
	Abl.	*dêstes,*	*déstas,*		from these.

		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular.	Nom.	*êsse,*	*éssa,*	*ísso,*	that *or* it.
	Gen.	*dêsse,*	*déssa,*	*dísso,*	of that &c.
	Dat.	*a êsse,*	*a éssa,*	*a ísso.*	to that.
	Acc.	*êsse,*	*éssa,*	*ísso,*	that.
	Abl.	*dêsse,*	*déssa,*	*dísso,*	from that.
				No Neut.	
Plural.	Nom.	*êsses,*	*éssas,*		those.
	Gen.	*dêsses,*	*déssas,*		of those.
	Dat.	*a êsses,*	*a éssas,*		to those.
	Acc.	*êsses,*	*éssas,*		those.
	Abl.	*dêsses,*	*déssas,*		from those.

		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular.	Nom.	*aquêlle,*	*aquélla,*	*aquíllo,*	that.
	Gen.	*daquêlle,*	*daquélla,*	*daquíllo,*	of that.
	Dat.	*á aquêlle,*	*a aquélla,*	*a aquíllo,*	to that.
	Acc.	*aquêlle,*	*aquélla,*	*aquíllo,*	that.
	Abl.	*daquêlle,*	*daquélla,*	*daquillo,*	from that.
				No Neut.	
Plural.	Nom.	*aquêlles,*	*aquéllas,*		those.
	Gen.	*daquêlles,*	*daquéllas,*		of those.
	Dat.	*a aquêlles,*	*a aquéllas,*		to those.
	Acc.	*aquêlles,*	*aquéllas,*		those.
	Abl.	*daquêlles,*	*daquéllas,*		from those.

You must observe, that there is an elision of the vowel of the indefinite article in the genitive and ablative of the pronouns *éste* and *ésse*, both in the singular and plural; and that they write and pronounce *déste, déstas*, &c. instead of *de éste, de éstas;* and so in the neuter they write *dísso, dísto*, instead of *de ísso, de ísto*. The same observation you must make upon the pronoun *aquêlle*, wherein you will see another elision besides, in the dative case.

Note, That both the Portuguese and Spaniards have demonstratives of the neuter gender; though they do not agree with the substantives as in Latin, because they do not say *ísto hómem*, but *éste hómem*, this man. But the word *cóusa*, thing, is always understood, though the neuter demonstrative does not agree with it; so that it is the same thing to say *ísto*, or *ésta côusa*, this thing; *ísso*, or *éssa cóusa*, that thing, &c. Example, *ísso he* or *éssa he a côusa de que nós estámos fallándo*, that is the thing we are speaking of; *aquíllo he* or *aquélla he a côusa que vós devêis fazêr*, that is the thing you must do, &c.

When the preposition *em*, in, comes before the pronouns demonstrative, they make an elision of the vowel of it, and change the consonant *m* into *n;* and so, instead of writing and pronouncing *em éste, em ésta, em ísto, em ísso, em aquíllo*, they write and pronounce *néste, nésta, nísto, nísso*, &c. in this, in that, &c.

The words *óutro, óutra*, are often joined to the pronouns demonstrative, taking off the last *e;* as *estóutro, essôutro, aquellóutro*. Example; *Estóutro hómem*, this other man; *estôutra molhér*, this other woman; *essôutro hómem*, that other man.

They also join very often the pronoun *mêsmo*, the same, to the demonstrative; as *éste mésmo hómem*, this very same man; *aquíllo mêsmo*, that very same thing.

Aquí, alí, and *lá* are sometimes added to the demonstrative, or on the noun that comes after it, in

order to specify and particularize it still more; as *êste hómem aquí*, this man; *aquélla molhér lá*, that woman: *aquí*, denoting a near, or present object; and *lá*, a distant and absent one.

The pronouns *aquélle, aquélla, aquêlles, aquéllas*, when they relate to persons, and are followed by the relative *que*, are rendered into English by *he who*, or *he that*, *she who* or *that*, *they who* or *that*; as *aquêlle que áma a virtúde he felíz*, he who loves virtue is happy; *aquêlles que desprézaõ a sciência naõ conhécem o valôr délla*, they who despise learning know not the value of it. You must observe, that when *aquêlle, aquélla*, &c. are preceded by *êste, ésta*, &c. then *êste* signifies the last thing or person spoken of, and *aquêlle*, &c. the first; as *Cárlos fôi gránde, Frederíco ambiciôso, êste valênte, aquêlle poderoso*, Charles was great, Frederic ambitious, the first powerful, the last courageous.

The pronoun possessive absolute *his, her, their*, construed in English with a noun followed by the pronoun relative *who* or *that* before a verb, is made into Portuguese by the genitive of the pronouns *aquêlle, aquélla, aquêlles*, followed by *que*, and the possessive is left out; as, all men blame his manners who often says that, which himself does not think, *tódo o múndo censúra o procediménto daquélle que tem por costúme dizêr o que naõ tem no pensamênto*; Providence does not prosper their labours that slight their best friends, *a Providência naõ abencôa o trabálho daquêlles que desprézaõ os sêus melhóres amígos.*

The English pronoun *such* followed by *as* or *that* (but not governed of the verb substantive *to be*), is also rendered into Portuguese by *aquélles que*, or *aquêlles táes que*, or *aquêlle que*; as, such as do not love virtue do not know it, *aquêlles* or *aquéllcs táes que naõ ámaõ a virtúde, naõ a conhécem.*

The pronouns *ísso, ísto, aquíllo*, before *que*, are Englished by *what*; as *elle diz aquíllo que sábe*, he says what he knows.

Aquêlle is also used to shew contempt; as *que quér aquêlle hómem?* What does that man desire?

Of the Pronouns interrogative.

The pronouns interrogative serve to ask questions, and are as follows; who, what, which, *quem, que, qual.*

Example.

Quem hé?	who is it?
Quem vos dísse ísso?	who told you so?
Que querêis?	what will you have?
Com que se sustênta?	what does he maintain himself with?
Que estáis fazêndo?	what are you doing?
De que se faz ísto?	from what is this done?
Que lívro he êste?	what book is this?
Que negócios têndes?	what affairs have you?
Que cása hé?	what house is it?
De qual falláis vós?	which do you speak of?
Quál dêlles?	which of them?
Quem or *qual dos dôus?*	which *or* whether of the two?

These pronouns are thus declined.

Singular and Plural. Masculine and Feminine.		Singular and Plural. Masculine and Feminine.	
Nom. *quem,*	who.	Nom. *que,*	what.
Gen. *de quem,*	of whom.	Gen. *de que,*	of what.
Dat. *a quem,*	to whom.	Dat. *a que,*	to what.
Acc. *quem,*	whom.	Acc. *que,*	what.
Abl. *de quem,*	from whom.	Abl. *de que,*	from what.

Qual is used in speaking both of persons and things, and is declined thus:

Singular.	Masculine and Feminine.
Nom. *qual,*	which *or* what.
Gen. *de qual,*	of which *or* what.
Dat. *á qual,*	to which *or* what.
Acc. *qual,*	which *or* what.
Abl. *da qual,*	from which *or* what.

Plural. Masculine and Feminine.

Nom.	*quáes,*	which *or* what.
Gen.	*de quáes,*	of which *or* what.
Dat.	*a quáes,*	to which *or* what.
Acc.	*quaes,*	which *or* what.
Abl.	*de quáes,*	from which *or* what.

Observe, that when the word *quer* is added to *quem*, or *qual*, it quite alters the meaning; *quemquér* signifying whoever, or any person, and *qualquér* any one, whether man, woman, or thing; and sometimes they add the participle *que* to them, as *quemquér, que*, &c.

Of the Pronouns relative.

Pronouns relative are those which shew the relation, or reference, which a noun has to what follows it. They are the following; *qual*, which; *que*, that or which; *cújo*, whose; *quem*, who.

Qual, in a sense of comparison, is followed by *tal*, and then *qual* is Englished by *as*, and *tal* by *of*.

N. B. When *qual* is only a relative, it is declined with the definite articles *o* or *a*.

The pronoun *que* may be relative both to persons and things, and is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; as *o lívro que*, the book which; *os lívros que*, the books which; *a cárta que*, the letter which; *as cártas que*, the letters which; *o méstre que ensína*, the master who teacheth; *a molhér que tênho*, the wife that I have; *o hómem que éu âmo*, the man whom I love; and it is declined thus:

Singular and Plural.

Nom.	*que,*	which *or* who.
Gen.	*de que,*	of which *or* of whom.
Dat.	*a que,*	to which *or* to whom.
Acc.	*que,*	which *or* whom.
Abl.	*de que,*	from which *or* from whom.

Que is sometimes a conjunction; as *crêyo que hirêi*, I believe that I shall go. See the Syntax.

The relative *quem*, who, is only relative to persons; but in the nominative case of the singular is rendered into English by *he who*, or *who*; as, *quem fálla déve considerár*, &c. he who speaks ought to consider, &c. *éu naõ séi quem*, I know not who.

Observe, that *quem* is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; but it has no nominative in the plural.

Quem is declined thus:

Singular and Plural.

Nom.	*quem,*	he who, *or* she who, *or* whoever.
Gen.	*de quem,*	of whom.
Dat.	*a quem,*	to whom.
Acc.	*quem,*	whom.
Abl.	*de quem,*	from whom.

Quem is sometimes a particle disjunctive, and then it signifies *some*; as, *quem cánta, e quem ri*, some sing, and some laugh; and sometimes it serves to exclamation; as *quem me déra estár em casa!* how fain would I be at home!

Cújo, cúja, is declined thus:

		Masc.	Fem.	
Sing.	Nom.	*cújo,*	*cúja,*	whose.
	Gen.	*de cújo,*	*de cúja,*	of whose.
	Dat.	*a cújo,*	*a cúja,*	to whose.
	Acc.	*cújo,*	*cúja,*	whose.
	Abl.	*de cújo,*	*de cúja,*	from whose.

The plural is formed by adding *s* to the singular; as, *cújos, cujas*, whose, &c.

Note, that *cújo* must be followed by the noun or term which it refers to, and with which it agrees in gender, number and case; as, *a pessôa cúja reputaçaõ vós admiráis*, the person whose reputation you wonder at; *o céo cújo soccórro núnca fálta*, heaven, whose assistance never fails; *cúja bélla cára*, whose fair visage: *cújas bellêzas*, whose beauties; *a cújo*

pál, to whose father; *de cújos irmãos tênho recebido*, from whose brothers I have received. Observe also that *cújo* is not to be repeated, though the terms which it refers to be of different number; as, *cúja valía e óbras*, whose value and deeds.

Note, that, *o, a, os, as, lo, la, &c.* are also pronouns relative, when joined to verbs. See the syntax, chap. iv.

Of the improper Pronouns.

These pronouns are called *improper*, because indeed they are not properly pronouns, but have a great resemblance with pronouns, as well as with adjectives. They are the following:

Hum,	one.
Alguém,	somebody.
Algúm,	some.
Ninguém,	nobody.
Nenhúm,	none.
Cadahúm,	every one, each.
Câda,	every.
Outro, ôutra,	other.
Outrem,	another.

Qualquér, any one; whether man, or woman, or thing.
Qualquér dos dôus, either of the two, *or* whethersoever of the two.
Quemquér, whoever, *or* any person.
Tôdo, all, *or* every. *Tal*, such, &c.

Hum has two terminations, viz. *hum, húma*; and in the plural it makes *huns*, and *húmas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

Alguém has only one termination, and it is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article.

Algúm has two terminations, viz. *algúm, algúma*; and in the plural, *algúns, algúmas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

Ninguém has only one termination, and is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article; *ninguém o crê*, nobody believes it.

Nenhúm has two terminations, viz. *nenhúmas, nenhúma*, and in the plural *nenhúns, nenhúmas*; and is only declinable with the indefinite article; *nenhúm hómem*, no man; *de nenhúm efféito*, of no effect.

Cadahúm has two terminations. viz. *cadahúm, cadahúma*; but it has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article.

Cáda has but one termination. It has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article: *cáda día*, every day; *cáda mez*, every month.

Outro has two terminations, viz. *óutro, óutra*; and in the plural, *óutros, óutras*. It is declinable both with the definite and indefinite articles.

Outrem has only one termination. It has no plural, and takes the indefinite article.

Qualquér has but one termination. It makes *quaesquér* in the plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. *Qualquér* is said both of persons and things.

Quemquér has but one termination. It has no plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. It is rendered in English by *any body: quemquér vos dirá*, any body will tell you. *Quemquér* is used in speaking of a person.

Tôdo has two terminations, viz. *tôdo, tôda*; and in the plural, *tôdos, tôdas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article. It is sometimes taken substantively, and then it signifies *the whole*; as *o tôdo hé mayór que a súa párte*, the whole is bigger than its part.

Tal has only one termination. It makes *táes* in the plural, and it is declined with the indefinite article. It is common to the masculine and to the feminine genders; and sometimes it is joined to *qual*; as, *tal qual êlle hé*, such as it is.

Tal supplies sometimes the place of the person whose name is not specified; as, *hum tal velháco déve sêr castigádo*, such a rogue ought to be punished.

CHAP. IV.

Of Verbs.

THE verb is a part of speech which serves to express that which is attributed to the subject in denoting the *being* or *condition* of the things and persons spoken of, the *actions* which they do, or the *impressions* they receive.

The first and the most general division of Verbs is into personal and impersonal.

A verb personal is conjugated by three persons.

Example.

Sing.	*êu âmo,*	I love.
	tu âmas,	thou lovest.
	êlle âma,	he loves.
Plur.	*nós amâmos,*	we love.
	vós amáis,	ye love.
	êlles âmaõ,	they love.

A verb impersonal is conjugated by the third person of the singular number only; as, *chóve,* it rains, *convêm,* it behoves.

A verb, considered in regard to the syntax, is of four sorts, viz. active, passive, neuter, and reciprocal.

Some of the verbs are regular, and others irregular.

Some are also called auxiliary verbs. We shall give their definitions in their proper places.

Before you begin to learn the conjugations, it will be proper to observe, that all the verbs may be

conjugated with the pronouns personal, *eu, tu, êlle,* &c. or without them.

Of the auxiliary Verbs.

The auxiliary verbs are so called, because they help to the conjugation of other verbs. They are four in Portuguese, viz. *havêr, têr,* to have; *sêr, estár,* to be. The auxiliary verb *sêr,* to be, is also called the verb substantive, because it affirms what the subject is, and is always followed by a noun that particularizes what that subject is; as *sêr ríco, prudénte, dôuto,* &c. to be rich, wise, learned, &c.

The Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb têr, *or* havêr, *to have.*

The Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.	*êu ténho,* ou *hey,*	I have.
	tu téns, ou *has,*	thou hast.
	êlle tém, ou *há,*	he has *or* hath.
Plur.	*nos têmos,* ou *havêmos,* ou *hêmos,*	we have.
	vos têndes, ou *havéis,* ou *hêis,*	you have.
	êlles tém, ou *haõ,*	they have.

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	*êu tínha,* ou *havía,* ou *hía,*	I had.
	tú tínhas, ou *havías,* ou *hías,*	thou hadst.
	élle tínha, ou *havía,* ou *hía,*	he had.
Plur.	*nós tínhamos,* ou *havíamos,* ou *híamos,*	we had.
	vós tínhieis, ou *havíeis,* ou *híeis,*	you had.
	élles tínhaõ, ou *havíaõ,* ou *híaõ,*	they had.

Preterperfect definite.

Sing.	*éu tíve,* ou *hôuve,*	I had.
	tu tivéste, ou *houvéste,*	thou hadst.
	élle têve, ou *hôuve,*	he had.
Plur.	*nós tivémos,* ou *houvémos,*	we had.
	vós tivéstes, ou *houvéstes,*	you had.
	élles tivéraõ ou *hovéraõ,*	they had.

Preterperfect.

Sing.	*êu ténho tído,*	I have had.
	tu téns tído,	thou hast had.
	élle têm tído,	he has had.
Plur.	*nós témos tído,*	we have had.
	vós têndes tído,	you have had.
	élles tem tído,	they have had.

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	*êu tínha tído,*	I had had.
	tu tínhas tído,	thou had had.
	élle tínha tído,	he had had.
Plur.	*nós tínhamos tído,*	we had had.
	vós tínhieis tído,	you had had.
	élles tínhaõ tído,	they had had.

This tense may also be conjugated thus; *tivéra, tivéras, tivéra, tivéramos, tivéreis, tivéraõ.*

First Future.

Sing.	*êu terêi,* ou *haverêi,*	I shall *or* will have.
	tu terás, ou *haverás,*	thou shalt *or* wilt have.
	élle terá, ou *haverá,*	he shall *or* wilt have.
Plur.	*nós terêmos,* ou *haverêmos,*	we shall *or* will have.
	vós terêis, ou *haverêis,*	ye shall *or* will have.
	élles teráõ, ou *haveráõ,*	they shall *or* will have.

Second Future.

Sing. *êu héi de tér,* ou *havêr,* &c. I must have, *&c.*

Third Future.

Sing. *êu haverêi de têr,* ou *havêr,* &c. I shall be obliged to have, *&c.*

Fourth Future.

Sing. *êu havía de têr,* ou *havér,* &c. I was to have, *&c.*

Imperative.

Sing.	*têm tu,* ou *hájas tu,*	have thou.
	ténha élle, ou *hája élle,*	let him have.
Plur.	*tenhâmos,* ou *hajâmos nós,*	let us have.
	têndе, ou *havêi, vós,*	have ye.
	ténhaõ, ou *hájaõ élles,*	let them have.

The imperative has no first person, because it is impossible to command one's self.

Optative and Subjunctive.

I join them together, because their tenses are similar.

Present.

Sing.	*que éu ténha*, ou *hája*,	that I have, *or* that I may have.
	que tu ténhas, ou *hájas*,	thou hast, *or* mayest have.
	que élle ténha, ou *hája*,	he has, *or* may have.
Plur.	*que nós tenhâmos*, ou *hajâmos*,	we have, *or* may have.
	que vós tenháis, ou *hajáis*,	ye have, *or* may have.
	que élles ténhaõ, ou *hájaõ*,	they have, *or* may have.

First Preterimperfect.

Sing.	*que éu tivéra* or *tivésse*,	that I had, *or* I should, would, &c. have, &c.
	houvéra, or *houvésse*,	
	que tu tivéras or *tivésses*,	
	houvéras or *houvésses*,	
	que élle tivéra or *tivésse*,	
	houvéra or *houvésse*,	
Plur.	*que nós tivéramos* or *tivéssemos*,	that we had, *or* we should, would, &c. have, &c.
	houvéramos or *houvéssemos*,	
	que vós tivéreis or *tivésseis*,	
	houvéreis or *houvésseis*,	
	que élles tivéraõ or *tivéssem*,	
	houvéraõ or *houvéssem*,	

Second Preterimperfect.

Sing.	*éu tería* ou *havería*,	I should, would, *or* could have, &c.
	tu terías ou *haverías*,	
	élle tería ou *havería*,	
Plur.	*nós teríamos* ou *haveríamos*,	we should, would, *or* could have, &c.
	vós teríeis ou *haveríeis*,	
	élles teríaõ ou *haveríaõ*,	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	*que éu ténha tído* ou *havído*,	that I have had.
	que tu ténhas tído ou *havído*,	thou hast had.
	que élle ténha tído ou *havído*,	he has had.
Plur.	*que nós tenhâmos tído* ou *havído*,	we have had.
	que vós tenháis tído ou *havído*,	you have had.
	que êlles tênhaõ tído ou *havído*,	they have had.

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

Sing.	*se êu tivéra* ou *tivésse* *se tu tivéras* ou *tivésses* *se êlle tivéra* ou *tivésse*	*tído,*	if I had had, &c.
Plur.	*se nós tivéramos* ou *tivéssemos* *se vós tivéreis* ou *tivésseis* *se êlles tivéraõ* ou *tivéssem*		

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

Sing.	*êu tería* *tu terías* *élle tería*	*tído,*	I should have had, &c.
Plur.	*nós teríamos* *vós teríeis* *élles teríaõ*		

First Future.

Sing.	*se êu tivér,*	if I shall have.
	tu tivéres,	thou shalt have.
	êlle tivér,	he shall have.
Plur.	*se nós tivérmos,*	if we shall have.
	vós tivérdes,	you shall have.
	êlles tivérem,	they shall have.

This tense may be conjugated also thus: *houvér, houvéres, houvér; houvérmos, houvérdes, houvérem.* See the synt. of the auxiliary Verbs.

Second Future.

It is composed of the First Future and the Participle.

Sing.	*se êu tivér* *tivéres* *tivér*	*tído,*	if I shall have had, &c.
Plur.	*tivérmos* *tivérdes* *tivérem*		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

têr, to have.

Preterperfect.

têr tído, to have had.

Participles.

Preterit. Sing. *tído, tída*. Plur. *tídos, tidas*, had.

Future.

que há de têr, that is to have.

Gerunds.

téndo, having *or* in having. *téndo, tído*, having had.

Supine.

It is supplied in Portuguese by the prepositions *a* or *para*, and the verb in the infinitive; as,

para têr, to have.

In like manner are conjugated its compounds *conténho, deténho, manténho*, &c.

Remarks upon the auxiliary verb, têr, *to have.*

The verb *têr*, to have, is an auxiliary or helping verb, which serves to conjugate other verbs: example, *têr lído*, to have read; *nós têmos feito*, we have done; *élles têm vísto*, they have seen, &c.

When the verb *têr* is followed by the participle *que*, before an infinitive mood, it denotes the duty, inclination, &c. of doing any thing; as, *que têndes que fazêr?* what have you to do? *ténho que fazêr húma visíta*, I must pay a visit; *élle tem muíto que dizêrvos*, he has a great many things to tell you.

Of the auxiliary verb havêr.

This is one of the most useful verbs in Portuguese, since it is not only auxiliary to itself, as *éu héi de havêr*, I must have; *eu havía de havêr*, I was to have, &c. but also to all sorts of verbs; as *éu héi de cantár*, I will sing, or I must sing, or I am to sing; *êu héi de hír*, I must go; *êu havía de fallár*, I was to speak; *éu héi de escrevêr*, I must write, &c. In which examples you may see that the verb *havêr*, when auxiliary, has generally the particle *de* and the verb of the infinitive mood after it; and

that then it denotes a firm resolution, possibility, or necessity of doing any thing, therefore it is not to be rendered into English by the verb *to have;* as you may see by the second, third, and fourth future of the indicative mood.

The verb *havêr*, with the particle *de*, and the verb *sér*, to be, after it, is an auxiliary both to the passive verbs, and sometimes to the verb *sér* itself; as, *héi de sér felíz*, I shall be happy: *O príncipe ha de sér respeitádo*, the prince ought to be, *or* must be, respected.

The same verb *havêr* is also auxiliary without the particle *de;* but then it is put after the verb to which it is auxiliary; and so they say, *dárvos-héi*, I will give you; *dárlhe-héi*, I will give to him, &c. In which examples you may observe, that the auxiliary verb *havêr* is put after the verb and the pronouns conjunctive, *te*, *lhe*, &c. and sometimes it is put after the verbs and the pronoun mixed; as, *mandár volo-héi*, I'll send it to you. Take notice, however, that in the foregoing examples the verb *havêr* may be put before the other verb; but then it requires the particle *de*, and has a different meaning; as, in the first example, you may say, *héi de dárvos*, I must give to you. You must also observe, that when the indicative present of the auxiliary verb *havêr* is auxiliary to other verbs, as in the foregoing examples, you must cut off the last letters *ei* from the future of the verbs: and so you may say *dárlhe-héi*, or *héi de dár-lhe;* but not *daréi lhe-héi*, nor *héi de daréi lhe*. Moreover, when the preterimperfect *havía* is to be auxiliary to any verb, and it is to be placed after it, you must make use of *hía*, *hías*, *hía*, *híamos*, *híeis*, *hião;* and so you may say, *dar-lhe-hía*, *hías*, &c. but not *dar-lhe-havía*, *havías*, &c. I should give to him, thou shouldst, &c.

We shall not be at a loss how to express the interrogation in Portuguese, if we do but put the pronouns personal after the verbs, as in English, and

we shall never mistake in saying *teréi êu?* shall I have? *têmos nós?* have we? *tens tu?* hast thou? *tem élle?* has he? but sometimes they do not mention the pronouns at all; as, *que farêmos?* what shall we do? *cantarêmos?* shall we sing?

Observe, that *havér* is sometimes Englished by *to be;* as, *que ha de sêr de mím?* what is to become of me?

When we speak by negation, we must use the word *naõ* before the verb; as, *naõ ténho,* I have not; *vós naõ conhecéis,* you do not know, &c.

The conjugation of the auxiliary verb *sêr*, or *estár*, to be.

Indicative.

Present.

Sing.	*êu sôu* or *estôu,*	I am.
	tu és or *estás,*	thou art.
	élle hé or *está,*	he is.
Plur.	*nós sômos* or *estâmos,*	we are.
	vós sôis or *estáis,*	you are.
	élles saõ or *estáõ,*	they are.

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	*êu éra* or *estáva,*	I was.
	éras or *estávas,*	thou wast.
	éra or *estáva,*	he was.
Plur.	*nós éramos* or *estávamos,*	we were.
	éreis or *estáveis,*	you were.
	éraõ or *estávaõ,*	they were.

Preterperfect definite.

Sing.	*êu fúi* or *estíve,*	I was.
	fôste or *estivéste,*	thou wast.
	fôi or *estéve,*	he was.
Plur.	*fômos* or *estivémos,*	we were.
	fôstes or *estivéstes,*	you were.
	fôraõ or *estivéraõ,*	they were.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *tér*, to have, and its own participle, *sído*, or *estádo*.

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the preterimperfect indicative, and the participle *sído*, or *estádo*.

Sing.	*êu tínha sído* or *estádo*,	I had been.
	tínhas sído or *estádo*,	thou hadst been.
	tínha sído or *estádo*,	he had been.
Plur.	*tínhamos sído* or *estádo*,	we had been.
	tínheis sído or *estádo*,	you had been.
	tínhaõ sído or *estádo*,	they had been.

This tense may also be conjugated thus; *fôra*, or *estivéra*; *fôras*, or *estivéras*; *fôra*, or *estivéra*; *fôramos*, or *estivéramos*; *fôreis*, or *estivéreis*; *fôraõ*, or *estivéraõ*.

Future.

Sing.	*êu serêi* or *estarêi*,	I shall *or* will be.
	serás or *estarás*,	thou shalt be.
	será or *estará*,	he shall be.
Plur.	*serêmos*, or *estarêmos*,	we shall be.
	serêis or *estarêis*,	you shall be.
	seráõ or *estaráõ*,	they shall be.

Imperative.

Sing.	*sê tu* or *está*,	be thou.
	séja or *estéja elle*,	let him be.
Plur.	*sejâmos* or *estejâmos nós*,	let us be.
	sêde or *estái vós*,	be you.
	séjaõ or *estéjaõ élles*,	let them be.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

Sing.	*que êu séja* or *estéja*,	that I may be, *or* that I be.
	sejas or *estéjas*,	thou mayst be, *or* be.
	séja or *estéja*,	he may be, &c.

Plur.	*sejâmos* or *estejâmos*,	we may be.
	sejáis, or *estejáis*,	you may be.
	séjaõ or *estéjaõ*,	they may be.

First Preterimperfect.

Sing.	*que êu fôra* or *fôsse*, *estivéra* or *estivésse*,	that I were *or* might be.
	fôras or *fôsses*, *estivéras* or *estivésses*,	thou wert.
	fôra or *fôsse*, *estivéra* or *estivésse*,	he were.
Plur.	*que nós fôramos* or *fôssemos*, *estivéramos* or *estivéssemos*,	that we were.
	fôreis or *fôsseis*, *estivéreis* or *estivésseis*,	you were.
	fôraõ or *fôssem*, *estivéraõ* or *estivéssem*,	they were.

Second Preterimperfect.

Sing.	*êu sería* or *estaría*,	I should *or* would be.
	serías or *estarías*,	thou shouldest be.
	sería or *estaría*,	he should be.
Plur.	*seríamos* or *estaríamos*,	we should be.
	seríeis or *estaríeis*,	you should be.
	seríaõ or *estaríaõ*,	they should be.

Preterperfect.

It is compounded of the present conjunctive of the auxiliary verb *têr*, and its own participle *sído*, or *estádo*,

Sing.	*que eu ténha sido* or *estádo*,	that I have been.
	ténhas sído or *estádo*,	thou hast been.
	ténha sido, &c.	he has been.
Plur.	*tenhâmos sído*, &c.	that we have been.
	tenháis sido, &c.	you have been.
	ténhaõ sído, &c.	they have been.

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *têr*, and its own participle.

Sing.	*se éu tivéra* or *tivésse* *sído* or *estádo*	if I had been.
	tivéras, &c.	thou hadst been.
	tivéra, &c.	he had been.
Plur.	*tivéramos*, &c.	we had been.
	tivéreis, &c.	you had been.
	tivéraõ, &c.	they had been.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *têr*, and its own participle *sído* or *estádo*.

Sing.	*êu tería sído* or *estádo*	I should *or* would have been.
	terías, &c.	thou shouldst have been.
	tería, &c.	he should have been.
Plur.	*teríamos*, &c.	we should have been.
	teríeis, &c.	you should have been.
	teríaõ, &c.	they should have been.

First Future.

Sing.	*quândo êu fôr* or *estivér*,	when I shall be.
	fôres or *estivéres*,	thou shalt be.
	fôr or *estivér*,	he shall be.
Plur.	*fôrmos* or *estivérmos*,	we shall be.
	fôrdes or *estivérdes*,	you shall be.
	fôrem or *estivérem*,	they shall be.

Second Future.

It is compounded of the future subjunctive of the verb *têr*, and its own participle.

Sing.	*quândo êu tivér sído* or *estádo*,	when I shall have been.
	tivéres sído, &c.	thou shalt have been.
	tivér sído, &c.	he shall have been.
Plur.	*tivérmos sído*, &c.	we shall have been.
	tivérdes sído, &c.	you shall have been.
	tivérem sído, &c.	they shall have been.

Infinitive.

Present.

sêr or *estár*; to be.

Preterperfect.

têr sído or *estádo*, to have been.

Participles.

Pret.

sído or *estádo*, been.

Future.

que há de sêr, or *estár*, that is to be.

Gerunds.

sêndo or *estândo*; being.
têndo sído or *estádo*, having been.

Supine.

para sêr or *estár*, to be.

Remarks upon the verb *sêr* and *estár*.

There is a considerable difference between these verbs, *sér* and *estár*, both in Portuguese and Spanish. In English there is no word to distinguish them, since they are both rendered into English by *to be*. *Sér* signifies the proper and inseparable essence of a thing, its quality or quantity; *sêr hómem*, to be a man; *sér bôm*, to be good; *sêr álto*, to be tall; *sêr lárgo*, to be wide; *sêr brânco*, to be white, &c. But *estár* denotes a place, or any adventitious quality; as, *estár em Lôndres*, to be in London; *estár de saúde*, to be in health; *estár frío*, to be cold; *estár quênte*, to be warm; *estár doênte*, to be sick; *estár infadádo*, to be angry; *estár allégre*, to be merry, &c.

Take notice, that you may use *estár* before the gerunds, but not *sêr*; therefore you may say, *estôu fallândo, lendo*, &c. I am speaking, reading, &c, but not *sôu fallândo*, &c.

The three Conjugations of regular Active Verbs.

A regular verb is such as is confined to general rules in its conjugation.

A verb active denotes the action or impression of the subject, and governs a noun which is the object of that action or impression; as, *amár a virtúde*, to love virtue; *recebêr cártas*, to receive letters.

The regular Portuguese verbs have three different terminations in the infinitive; to wit, in *ar*, *er*, *ir*; as, *amár*, to love; *temêr*, to fear; *admittír*, to admit.

An easy Method of learning to conjugate the Portuguese Verbs.

I have reduced all the tenses of the Portuguese verbs to eight; four of which are general, and have the same terminations in all the verbs; and the other four may be likewise made general by changing some letters, and all the conjugations reduced to one.

The general tenses are, the future indicative, the first and second preterimperfect subjunctive, and the first future subjunctive.

The future indicative is terminated in all the verbs, in

réi, rás, rá; rémos, réis, raõ.

The imperfect subjunctive, in

ra or *sse*, *ras* or *sses*, *ra* or *sse*; *rámos* or *ssemos*, *réis* or *sséis*, *raõ* or *ssem*.

The second imperfect, in

ría, rías, ría; ríamos, ríeis, ríaõ.

The first future subjunctive, in

es, mos, des, em.

Note, that I have only put the termination of the second person singular of the future subjunctive, because the first and third of the same number are like their respective infinitives of the three cõnjugations, which however keep both their last consonant

and vowel before the terminations I have marked for the second person singular, and for the whole plural. As to the future indicative, you have nothing to do but add *éi* to the respective present infinitive of the three conjugations, in order to form the first person singular; and if you add to the same infinitive present *as*, you will form the second person singular of it, and so of all the rest, by adding to the infinitive present, *a*, *emos*, *eis*, *aõ*.

The imperfect subjunctive has two terminations for every person, both in the singular and plural; but if you cut off the last consonant *r* of the infinitive, and then add to it the terminations above-mentioned, you shall form the imperfect subjunctive, according to its two different terminations. Lastly, if you cut off the last consonant of the infinitive, and add to it the terminations above-mentioned, you will form the second imperfect subjunctive.

The present indicative of the three conjugations is formed by changing the last letters of the infinitive, viz. *ar*, *er*, *ir*, into *o*; as, *âmo*, *entêndo*, *admítto*, from *amár*, *entendêr*, *admittír*.

The preterimperfect indicative is formed in the first conjugation, by changing the last consonant of the infinitive, viz. *r*, into *va*, *vas* *va*, *vámos*, *véis*, *vaõ*; but in the second conjugation it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *ia*, *ías*, *ía*, *íamos*, *íeis*, *íaõ*; and in the third by changing the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into, *a*, *as*, *a*; *ámos*, *éis*, *aõ*.

The perfect definite in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination *ar* of the infinitive into *éi*, *áste*, *ôu*, *ámos*, *ástes*, *áraõ*; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *i*, *éste*, *éo*, *émos*, *éstes*, *éraõ*. In the third conjugation, the same tense

is formed by changing the termination *ir* of the infinitive into *í*, *íste*, *ío*, *ímos*, *ístes*, *íraõ*.

The present subjunctive in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination *ar* of the infinitive into *e*, *es*, *e*, *émos*, *éis*, *em*; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *a*, *as*, *a*, *ámos*, *áis*, *aõ*. In the third conjugation, the same tense is formed by changing the termination *ir* of the infinitive into the same terminations, *a*, *as*, *a*, &c.

As to the imperative mood, you may only observe, that the second person singular is always the same as the third person singular of the present indicative, in all the conjugations.

The participles of the preterperfect tense in the first conjugation are formed by changing the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into *do* for the masculine, and *da* for the feminine; and into *dos*, *das*, for the plural; but when you come to verbs of the second conjugation, you change the termination *r* of the infinitive into *ído*, *ída*, &c.

In the third conjugation, you must change the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into *do* for the masculine, *da* for the feminine, &c.

The first Conjugation of the verbs in ar.

The Indicative Mood.

I shall put the pronouns personal, *éu*, *tu*, *élle*, &c. no more.

Present.

âmo,	I love.
âmas,	thou lovest.
âma,	he loves.
amâmos,	we love.
amáis,	ye love.
âmaõ,	they love.

Preterimperfect.

amáva,	I did love.
amávas,	thou didst love.
amáva,	he did love.
amávamos,	we did love.
amáveis,	you did love.
amávaõ,	they did love.

Preterperfect definite.

améi,	I loved.
amáste,	thou lovedst.
amóu,	he loved.
amámos,	we loved.
amástes,	you loved.
amáraõ,	they loved.

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *amádo,* and the present indicative auxiliary verb *ter.*

ténho amádo,	I have loved.
tens amádo,	thou hast loved.
tem amádo,	he has loved.
têmos amádo,	we have loved.
têndes amádo,	you have loved.
têm amádo,	they have loved.

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *amádo,* and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *ter.*

N. B. This tense may be conjugated thus, *amára, amáras, amára, amáramos, amáreis, amáraõ,* or,

tínha amádo,	I had loved.
tínhas amádo,	thou hast loved.
tínha amádo,	he had loved.
tínhamos amádo,	we had loved.
tínheis amádo,	you had loved.
tínhaõ amádo,	they had loved.

Future.

amaréi,	I shall *or* will love.
amarás,	thou shalt love.
amará,	he shall love.

amarêmos,	we shall love.
amaréis,	you shall love.
amaráõ,	they shall love.

Imperative.

âma tu,	love thou.
âme élle,	let him love.
amêmos nós,	let us love.
amái vós,	love you.
âmem élles,	let them love.

Optative and Subjunctive.

que êu âme,	that I may love.
âmes,	thou mayest love.
âme,	he may love.
amêmos,	we may love.
améis,	you may love.
âmem,	they may love.

First Preterimperfect.

que êu amára, or *amásse,*	that I might *or* could love.
amáras, or *amásses,*	they mightest love.
amára, or *amásse,*	he might love.
amáramos, or *amássemos,*	we might love.
amáreis or *amásseis,*	you might love.
amáraõ or *amássem,*	they might love.

When we find the conjunction *if* before the indicative imperfect, we must use the imperfect of the subjunctive or optative, when we speak by way of wish or desire; as, If I did love, *se éu amásse,* or *amára,* and not *se êu amáva,* if I had loved; if I had, *se éu tivêra, tivésse,* and not *se éu tînha;* and so in all the verbs.

Second Preterimperfect.

amaría,	I should love.
amarías,	thou shouldst love.
amaría,	he should love.
amaríamos,	we should love.
amaríeis,	you should love.
amaríaõ,	they should love.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amádo* and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

que éu ténha amádo,	that I have loved.
ténhas amádo,	thou hast loved.
ténha amádo,	he has loved.
tenhâmos amádo,	we have loved.
tenháis amádo,	you have loved.
ténhaõ amádo,	they have loved.

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amádo* and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

se éu tivéra or *tivésse amádo,*	if I had loved.
tivéras or *tivésses amádo,*	thou hadst loved.
tivéra or *tivésse amádo,*	he had loved.
tivéramos or *tivéssemos amádo,*	we had loved.
tivéreis or *tivésseis amádo,*	you had loved.
tivéraõ or *tivéssem amádo,*	they had loved.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amádo* and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

tería amádo,	I should have loved.
terías amádo,	thou shouldst have loved.
tería amádo,	he should have loved.
teríamos amádo,	we should have loved.
teríeis amádo,	ye should have loved.
teríaõ amádo,	they should have loved.

Future.

quándo éu amár,	when I shall love.
amáres,	thou shalt love.
amár,	he shall love.
amármos,	we shall love.
amárdes,	you shall love.
amárem,	they shall love.

Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *amádo*, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

quândo éu tivér amádo,	when I shall have loved.
tivéres amádo,	thou shalt have loved.
tivér amádo,	he shall have loved.
tivérmos amádo,	we shall have loved.
tivérdes amádo,	you shall have loved.
tivérem amádo,	they shall have loved.

Infinitive.

Present.

amár, to love.

Preterperfect.

tér amádo, to have loved.

Participle.

Present.

que âma, or *amânte,* that loves.

Pret.

amádo, masc. *amáda,* fem. loved.

Future.

que há de amár, that is to love.

Gerunds.

amândo, loving.
têndo amádo, having loved.

Supine.

para amár, to love.

Note, the verbs terminating in the infinitive in *cár* take *qu* in those tenses, where the *c* would otherwise meet with the vowel *e*; and those terminating in the infinitive in *gar* take an *u* in those tenses, where the *g* would otherwise meet with the same vowel *e*; that is to say, in the first person singular of the preterperfect definite, in the third person

singular, in the first and third plural of the imperative, and in the whole present subjunctive, which are the tenses I shall give you by way of example in the verbs *peccàr* and *pagár*.

Peccár, to sin.

Preterperfect definite.

êu pequêi, I sinned—instead of *peccéi*.

Imperative.

péque élle, let him sin: *pequêmos nós*, let us sin; *péquem élles*, let them sin—and not *pécce êlle*, &c.

Present subjunctive.

que éu péque, tu péques, that I may sin—
and not *que eu pécce, pécces*, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

paguéi, I paid.

Págar, to pay.

Imperative.

págue êlle, paguêmos nós, páguem élles, let him pay, &c.

Present subjunctive.

que êu págue, págues, págue, paguêmos, paguéis, páguem, that I may pay, *&c.*—and not *page, pages*, &c.

The other tenses are conjugated like *amár*.

Regular verbs in *ar*.

Abafár, to choke, *or* to smother.
Abalár, to shake.
Abanár, to fan.
Abastár, to satiate.
Abaxár, to bring *or* let down.
Abençoár, to bless.
Abocanhár, to carp.
Abominár, to abominate.
Abotoár, to button.
Acabár, to finish.
Admoestár, to admonish.
Affrontár, to abuse.
Agarrár, to lay hold of.
Alagár, to overflow.
Amaldiçoár, to curse.
Annulár, to annul, *or* to make void.
Apressár, to press, *or* hasten.
Aquentár, to warm.
Argumentár, to argue.
Assoprár, to blow.
Atár, to tie.
Avassalár, to subdue, to conquer.
Azedár, to sour.

Of the Verbs passive.

Before we proceed to the second conjugation, it is necessary to know that the Verbs passive, which express the suffering of an action, are nothing more than the participles of verbs active, conjugated with the verb *sér*, to be.

Example.

Present tense.

êu sôu amádo,	I am loved.
tu és amádo,	thou art loved.
êlle hé amádo,	he is loved.
nôs sómos amádos,	we are loved.
vós sôis amádos,	you are loved.
êlles saõ amádos,	they are loved.

and so throughout the other moods and tenses.

The second conjugation of the verbs in *êr.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

véndo,	I sell.
vêndes,	thou sellest.
vênde,	he sells.
vendêmos,	we sell.
vendéis,	you sell.
vêndem,	they sell.

Preterimperfect.

vendía,	I did sell.
vendías,	thou didst sell.
vendía,	he did sell.
vendíamos,	we did sell.
vendíeis,	you did sell.
vendíaõ,	they did sell.

Preterperfect definite.

vendí,	I sold.
vendéste,	thou soldest.
vendéo,	he sold.

vendêmos,	we sold.
vendêstes,	you sold.
vendêraõ,	they sold.

Preterperfect.

ténho
téns
tém
têmos
têndes
tém
} *vendído,* { I have sold, *&c.*

Preterpluperfect.

tínha
tínhas
tínha
tínhamos
tínheis
tínhaõ
} *vendído,* { I have sold, *&c.*

This tense may also be conjugated thus; *vendêra, vendêras, vendêra, vendêramos, vendêreis, vendêraõ,*

Future.

venderéi,
venderás,
venderá,
venderêmos,
venderéis,
venderáõ,
} I shall or will sell, *&c.*

Imperative Mood.

vênde tu,	sell thou.
vênda élle,	let him sell.
vendâmos nós,	let us sell.
vendéi vós,	sell ye.
vêndaõ élles,	let them sell.

Obtative and Subjunctive.

que êu vênda,
vêndas,
vênda,
vendâmos,
vendáis,
vêndaõ,
} that I may sell, *&c.*

THE TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOJI'S ... AL.

Preterimperfect.

que éu vendêra or *vendésse,*	that I might or could sell, &c.
vendêras or *vendésses,*	
vendêra or *vendêsse,*	
vendêramos or *vendéssemos,*	
vendêreis, or *vendêsseis,*	
vendêraõ or *vendéssem,*	

Second Preterimperfect.

vendería,	I should sell, &c.
venderías,	
vendería,	
venderíamos,	
venderíeis,	
venderíaõ,	

Preterperfect.

que êu ténha	*vendído,*	that I have sold, &c.
ténhas		
ténha		
tenhámos		
tenháis		
ténhaõ		

Preterpluperfect.

se êu tivéra or *tivésse,*	*vendído,*	if I had sold, &c.
tivéras or *tivésses,*		
tivéra or *tivésse,*		
tivéramos or tivéssemos,		
tivéreis or *tivésseis,*		
tivéraõ or *tivéssem,*		

Second Preterpluperfect.

êu tería	*vendído,*	I should have sold, &c.
terías		
tería		
teríamos		
teríeis		
teríaõ		

Future.

quândo êu vendêr,	when I shall sell, &c.
vendêres,	
vendêr,	
vendêrmos,	
vendêrdes,	
vendêrem,	

Second Future.

quando êu tivér
tivéres
tivér
tivérmos
tivérdes
tivérem
} *vendído,* { when I shall have sold, &c.

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

vendêr, to sell.

Preterperfect.

têr vendído, to have sold.

Participle.

Present.

que vênde, that sell, that sells.

Preterit.

vendído, masc. *vendída,* fem. Plur. *vendídos, vendídas,* sold.

Future.

que ha de vendêr, that is to sell.

Gerund.

vendêndo, selling.
têndo vendído, having sold.

Supine.

para vendêr, to sell.

After the same manner as the verb *vendêr,* are conjugated all the other regular verbs of the second conjugation ending in *er;* as the following;

Acometér, to attack.
Bebêr, to drink.
Comêr, to eat.
Comprehendér, to perceive, *or* apprehend.
Cometér, to commit.
Concedêr, to grant.
Corrêr, to run.
Devêr, to owe.
Escondér, to hide.
Emprendér, to undertake.
Metér, to put in.
Offendér, to offend.
Prometér, to promise.
Respondêr, to answer.
Reprehendêr, to reprove.
Temér, to fear.
Varrêr, to sweep, *&c.*

The third conjugation of the verbs ending in *ir*.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

admítto,	I admit, &c.	*admittímos.*
admíttes,		*admittís.*
admítte,		*admíttem.*

Preterimperfect.

admittía,	I did admit, &c.	*admittíamos.*
admittías,		*admittíeis.*
admittía,		*admittíaõ.*

Preterperfect definite.

admittí,	I admitted.	*admittímos.*
admittíste,		*admittístes.*
admittío,		*admittíraõ.*

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *admittído*, and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb. *tér*.

ténho admittído,	I have admitted.
téns admittído, &c.	thou hast, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the particle *admittído*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

tínha admittído, &c.	I had admitted.
tínhas admittído, &c.	thou hadst, &c.

This tense may also be conjugated thus; *admittíra*, *admittíras*, *admittíra*, *admittíramos*, *admittíreis*, *admittíraõ*.

Future.

admittiréi, I shall or will admit.
admittirás,
admittirá,
admittirêmos,
admittiréis,
admittirão,

Imperative.

admítte tú, admit thou.
admítta êlle, let him admit.
admittâmos nós, let us admit.
admittí vós, admit ye.
admíttaõ êlles, let them admit.

Obtative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que êu admítta, that I may admit, &c.
admíttas,
admítta,
admittâmos,
admittáis,
admíttaõ,

First Preterimperfect.

que êu admittíra or *admittísse*, that I might admit, &c.
admittíras or *admittísses*,
admittíra or *admittísse*,
admittíramos or *admittíssemos*,
admittíreis or *admittísseis*,
admittíraõ or *admittíssem*,

Second Preterimperfect.

admittiría, I should or would admit, &c.
admittirías,
admittiría,
admittiríamos,
admittiríeis,
admittiríaõ,

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the particle, *admittído*, and the present subjunctive of the verb *tér*.

que êu ténha admittído, that I have admitted.
ténhas admittído, &c. thou hast admitted, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *têr* and the participle *admittído*.

se êu tivéra admittído,	If I had admitted.
tivéras, &c.	thou hadst admitted, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *têr* and the participle *admittído*.

êu tería admittído,	I should have admitted.
terías, &c.	thou shouldst, &c.

First Future.

se êu admittír,	If I shall admit, &c.
admittíres,	
admittír,	
admittírmos,	
admittírdes,	
admittírem,	

Second Future.

It is composed of the first future subjunctive of the verb *têr* and the participle *admittído*.

se êu tivér admittído,	If I shall have admitted.
tivéres, &c.	thou shalt, &c.

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

admittír, to admit.

Preterperfect.

têr admittído, to have admitted.

Participle.

Present.

admittído, for the masc. *admittída,* for the fem. admitted.

Future.

que há de admittír, that is to admit.

Gerunds.

admittíndo,	admitting.
têndo admittído,	having admitted.

Supines.

para admittír, to admit.

Conjugate after the same manner the following verbs:

Abrír, to open.
Conduzír, to conduct.
Introduzír, to introduce.
Induzír, to induce.
Produzír, to produce.
Luzír, to shine.
Nutrír, to nourish.
Reduzír, to reduce, to bring to.
Traduzír, to translate.
Deduzír, to deduct, &c.

Of the irregular Verbs in ar.

There are in each conjugation some verbs which do not conform to the common rule, and on that account are called irregulars.

There are but two of the first conjugation, which in some of their tenses depart from the rule of the verb *amár*, viz, *estar* and *dár*. We have already conjugated the first, and the second is conjugated in the following manner.

Indicative.

Present.

dóu, I give.	*dâmos*, we give.
dás, thou givest.	*dáis*, you give.
dá, he gives.	*daõ*, they give.

Preterimperfect.

dáva, I did give, &c. (as in regular verbs of the first
dávas, &c. conjugation.)

Preterperfect definite.

déi, I gave.	*démos*, we gave.
déste, thou gavest.	*déstes*, you gave.
dêu, he gave.	*déraõ*, they gave.

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *dádo* and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *têr*; as *ténho dádo*, I have given, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the particle *dádo* and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *têr*; as *éu tínha dádo*, &c. I had given, &c.

Future.

daréi, I shall *or* will give, &c. (as in the verb *amár*)
darás, &c.

Imperative.

dá tu, give thou. *dê élle*, let him give. *dêmos nós*, let us give. *dái vós*, give thou. *dém êlles*, let them give.

Obtative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que êu dê, that I may give, &c.
dês,
dê,
dêmos,
dêis,
dêm,

Preterimperfect.

que êu déra or *désse*, that I might give, &c.
déras or *désses*,
déra or *désse*,
déramos or *déssemos*,
déreis or *désseis*,
déraõ or *déssem*,

Second Imperfect.

daría, I should give, &c.
darías,
daría,
daríamos.
daríeis.
daríaõ.

The preterperfect, preterpluperfect, and the second preterpluperfect, are composed of the participle *dádo*, and the auxiliary verb *tér*, as in the regular verbs.

Future.

quândo êu dér, when I shall give, &c.
déres,
dér,
dérmos,
dérdes,
dérem,

Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *dádo*, &c. as the regular verbs.

Infinitive.

Present.

dár, to give, *&c.* as in the regular verbs.

Of the irregular Verbs in er.

I begin with *fazêr*, *podêr*, and *sabêr*, because they occur oftenest in discourse.

Fazêr, to do *or* make.

Indicative.

Present.

fáço,	I do.	*fazêmos*,	we do.
fázes,	thou dost.	*fazéis*,	you do.
fáz,	he does.	*fázem*,	they do.

Imperfect.

fazía, I did *or* did make, *&c.* *fazíamos*.
fazías, *fazíeis*.
fazía, *fazíaõ*.

Preterperfect definite.

fíz, I made, *&c.* *fizémos*,
fizéste, *fizéstes*,
fêz, *fizéraõ*.

Preterperfect.

ténho féito, I have done, *&c.*
téns feito, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

tínha feíto, I had done, *&c.*
tínhas feíto, &c.

Future.

farêi, I shall do, *&c.* (according to the regular verb.)
farás, &c,

Imperative.

		façâmos nós,	let us do.
fáze tu,	do thou.	*fazêi vós*,	do you.
fáça élle,	let him do.	*fáçaõ élles*,	let them do.

Optative.

Present.

que êu fáça, that I may do, *&c.* (according to the regular verbs.)
fáças,
fáça, &c.

Preterimperfect.

que êu fizéra or *fizésse*, that I might do, *&c.*
fizéras or *fizésses*,
fizéra or *fizésse*,
fizéramos or *fizéssemos*,
fizéreis or *fizésseis*,
fizéraõ or *fizéssem*,

Second Imperfect.

faría, I should do, *&c.* *faríamos.*
farías, *faríeis.*
faría, *faríaõ.*

Future.

quândo êu fizér, when I shall do, *&c.*
fizéres,
fizér,
fizérmos,
fizérdes,
fizérem,

Second Future.

quândo êu tivér féito, when I shall have done.
tivéres féito, &c.

Infinitive.

fazér, to do.

Gerunds.

fazêndo, doing *or* in doing.

Participle.

feito, made *or* done.

After the same manner are conjugated *desfazêr*, to undo; *contrafazér*, to counterfeit; *refazér*, to make again.

Podêr, to be able.

Indicative.

Present.

pósso,	I can *or* am able.	*podêmos*,	we can.
pódes,	thou canst.	*podêis*,	you can.
póde,	he can.	*pódem*,	they can.

Imperfect.

podía, I could *or* was able, &c.
podías, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

púde,	I could.	*pudémos*,	we could.
pudéste,	thou couldst.	*pudéstes*,	you could.
pôde,	he could.	*pudéraõ*,	they could.

Preterperfect.

ténho podído, &c. I have been able, &c.

Future.

poderéi, I shall be able, &c.
poderás, &c.

There is no Imperative.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que éu póssa, that I may be able.
póssas, thou mayest be able, &c.
póssa,
possâmos,
possáis,
póssaõ,

Imperfect.

que éu pudéra or *pudésse*, that I might be able.
pudéras or *pudésses*, thou mightst be able, &c.
pudéra or *pudésse*,
pudéramos or *pudéssemos*,
pudéreis or *pudésseis*,
pudéraõ or *pudéssem*,

Second Imperfect.

podería, I should be able, &c.
poderías, &c.

Future.

quândo êu pudér, when I shall be able, &c.
pudéres,
pudér,
pudérmos,
pudérdes,
pudérem,

Infinitive.

Present.

podér, to be able.

Gerunds.

podêndo, being able.

Participle.

pudído, been able.

Sabér, to know.

Indicative.

Present.

sêi,	I know.	*sabêmos*,	we know.
sábes,	thou knowest.	*sabéis*,	you know.
sábe,	he knows.	*sábem*,	they know.

Imperfect.

sabía, I did know.
sabías, thou didst know, &c.
sabía, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

sôube, I knew, &c.	*soubémos*.
soubéste,	*soubéstes*.
sôube,	*soubéraõ*.

Preterperfect.

ténho sabído, I have known, &c.

Future.

saberéi, I shall *or* will know, &c. (according to the
saberás, &c. regular verbs.)

Imperative.

		saibâmos nós,	let us know.
sábe tu,	know thou.	*sabéi vós*,	know you.
saíba élle,	let him know.	*saíbaõ élles*,	let them know.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que êu sáiba, I may know.
sáibas, thou mayst know, &c.
sáiba,
saibâmos,
saibáis,
sáibaõ,

Imperfect.

que êu soubéra or *soubésse*, that I might know, &c.
soubéras or *soubésses*,
soubéra or *soubésse*,
soubéramos or *soubéssemos*,
soubéreis or *soubésseis*,
soubéraõ or *soubéssem*,

Second Imperfect.

sabería, I should know, &c. *saberíamos*.
saberías, *saberíeis*.
sabería, *saberíaõ*.

Future.

quândo êu soubér, when I shall know, &c.
soubéres,
soubér,
soubérmos,
soubérdes,
soubérem,

Infinitive.

Present.

sabêr, to know.

Gerund.

sabêndo, knowing.

Participle.

sabído (for the masc.) *sabída* (for the feminine,) known.

Of the irregular Verb trazêr, *to bring.*

Indicative.

Present.

trágo,	I bring.	*trazémos,*	we bring, &c.
trázes,	thou bringest.	*trazéis.*	
tráz,	he brings.	*trázem.*	

Imperfect.

trazia, I did bring.
trazías, &c. thou didst bring, &c. (according to the regulars.)

Preterperfect definite.

trôuxe,	I brought.	*trouxémos.*
trouxéste,	thou broughtest, &c.	*trouxéstes.*
trôuxe,		*trouxéraõ.*

Preterperfect.

ténho trazído, I have brought, &c.
tens trazído, &c.

Future.

traréi,	I shall *or* will bring, &c.	*trarémos.*
trarás,		*traréis,*
trará,		*traráõ.*

Imperative.

		tragâmos nós,	let us bring.
tráze tu,	bring thou.	*trazéi vós,*	bring you.
tràga élle,	let him bring.	*trágaõ élles,*	let them bring.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que êu tràga, that I may bring, &c.
trágas,
tràga,
tragâmos,
tragáis,
trágaõ,

Imperfect.

que êu trouxéra or *trouxésse*, that I may bring, &c.
trouxéras or *trouxésses*,
trouxéra or *trouxésse*,
trouxéramos or *trouxéssemos*,
trouxéreis or *trouxésseis*,
trouxéraõ or *trouxéssem*,

Second Imperfect.

êu traría, I should bring, &c. *traríamos*.
trarías, *traríeis*.
traría, *traríaõ*.

Future.

quãndo êu trouxér, when I shall bring, &c.
trouxéres,
trouxér,
trouxêrmos,
trouxérdes,
trouxérem,

Infinitive.

Present.

trazêr, to bring.

Gerund.

trazêndo, bringing.

Participle.

trazído, masc. *trazída*, fem. brought.

The conjugation of the Irregular Verb vêr, *to see.*

Indicative.

Present.

véjo, I see, *vêmos*.
vês, thou seest, *vêdes*.
vê, he sees, &c. *vém*.

Imperfect.

vía, I did see, &c.
vías,
vía, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

ví,	I saw, &c.	*vímos.*
víste,		*vístes,*
vío,		*viraõ.*

Preterperfect.

ténho vísto, I have seen, &c.
téns vísto, &c.

Future.

veréi, I shall see, &c.
verás, &c.

Imperative.

vê tu,	see thou.
véja élle,	let him see.
vejâmos nós,	let us see.
véde vós,	see you.
véjaõ élles,	let them see.

Optative.

que éu véja,	that I may see, &c.	*vejâmos.*
véjas,		*vejáis.*
véja,		*véjaõ.*

Imperfect.

que éu víra or *vísse,* that I might see, &c.
víras or *vísses,*
víra or *vísse,*
víramos or *víssemos,*
víreis or *vísseis,*
víraõ or *víssem,*

Second Imperfect.

éu vería,	I should see, &c.	*veríamos.*
verías,		*veríeis.*
vería,		*veríaõ.*

Future.

quándo éu vir, when I shall see, &c.
víres,
vír,
vírmos,
vírdes,
vírem,

Infinitive.

vêr, to see.

Gerund.

vêndo, seeing.

Participle.

vísto, vísta, seen.

In like manner are conjugated the compounds *antevêr*, *prevêr*, and *revêr*.

The verb *provêr*, when it signifies *to provide for*, or, *to take care of*, is conjugated in the present indicative thus:

êu provénho, I take care of, &c.	*provímos.*
provéns,	*províndes.*
provém,	*provém.*

But when it signifies *to make provision*, it is conjugated thus:

êu provéjo, I make provision, &c.	*provêmos.*
provés,	*provéis.*
provê,	*próvem.*

The conjugation of the auxiliary verb *dizér*, to say.

Indicative.

Present.

dígo, I say, &c.	*dizémos.*
dizes,	*dizéis.*
díz,	*dízem.*

Preterimperfect.

dizía, I did say, &c.
dizías, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

dísse, I said, &c.	*dissémos.*
disséste,	*disséstes.*
dísse,	*dissérão.*

Preterperfect.

ténho dítto, I have said, &c.
téns dítto, &c.

Future.

diréi, I shall *or* will say, &c.
dirás, &c.

Imperative.

díze tu,	say thou.
diga élle,	let him say.
digâmos nós,	let us say.
dizéi vós,	say you.
dígaõ élles,	let them say.

Optative.

que êu díga, that I may say, &c.
dígas, &c.

Imperfect.

que êu disséra or *dissésse*, that I might say, &c.
disséras or *dissésses*,
disséra or *dissésse*,
disséramos or *disséssemos*,
disséreis or *disséseis*,
disséraõ or *disséssem*.

Second Imperfect.

diría, I should say, &c.
dirías, &c.

Future.

quândo êu dissér, when shall I say, &c.
disséres
dissér, &c.

Infinitive.

dizêr, to say.

Gerund.

dizéndo, saying.

Participles.

dítto, dítta, said.

Observe, that the compounds *desdizêr*, to unsay, and *contradizêr*, to contradict, are in all points conjugated like *dizêr*.

The Conjugation of the irregular Verb querêr, *to be willing.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

quéro,	I will, *or* am willing.
quéres,	thou art willing.
quér,	he is willing, *&c.*
querêmos,	
queréis,	
quérem,	

Imperfect.

querία,	I was willing, *&c.*
querίas, &c.	

Preterperfect definite.

quίz,	I have been willing, *&c.*
quizéste,	
quίz,	
quizémos,	
quizéstes,	
quizéraõ,	

Future.

quereréi,	I shall be willing, *&c.*
quererás, &c.	

Imperative.

queίras tu,	be thou willing.
queίra êlle,	let him be willing.
queirâmos nôs,	let us be willing.
queiráis vós,	be you willing.
queίraõ êlles,	let them be willing.

Optative and Subjunctive.

que êu quéira,	that I may be willing, *&c.*
queίras, &c.	

Imperfect.

que éu quizéra or *quizésse,*	that I were willing.
quizéras or *quizésses,*	thou wert willing.
quizéra or *quizésse,*	he were willing.
quizéramos or *quizéssemos,*	we were willing.
quizéreis or *quizésseis,*	you were willing.
quizéraõ or *quizéssem,*	they were willing.

Second Imperfect.

éu querería,	I should *or* would be willing, *&c.*
quererías, &c.	

Future.

quândo éu quizér,	when I shall be willing, *&c.*
quizéres, &c.	

Infinitive.

querér, to be willing.

Gerund.

querêndo, being willing.

Participle.

querído, been willing.

Note, that *quér* is sometimes a conjunction, when repeated in a sentence, and that it is rendered into English by *whether* and *or*; as, *quér vós o tenháis feíto, quér naõ,* whether you have done that or no. But when it is not repeated, and is joined to the particle *se*, it is sometimes rendered into English by *at least*; as, *hum se quér,* one at least; and sometimes by *however*, when joined in the particle *que*; as *cômo quer que séja,* however it be. In all which cases, it is not to be confounded with the third person singular of the indicative of the verb *querér.*

Take notice that the verb *querér* is sometimes used with the particle *se* instead of the verb *devêr*; as, *as côusas naõ se quérem feítas à préssa,* things must not be done in a hurry.

Of the irregular Verb valêr, *to be worth.*

I shall put no other tenses of this verb than the present indicative, the imperative, and the present of the subjunctive, none but these being irregular.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

válho,	I am worth, &c.
váles,	
vále or *val,*	
valêmos,	
valéis,	
válem,	

Imperative.

vále tu,	be thou worth.
válha élle,	let him be worth.
valhâmos nós,	let us be worth.
valéi vós,	be you worth.
válhaõ élles,	let them be worth.

Subjunctive.

que éu válha,	that I may be worth, &c.
válhas,	
válha,	
valhâmos,	
valháis,	
válhaõ,	

Of the irregular Verb perdêr, *to lose.*

This verb changes the *c* before *o* of the present indicative into *d* in the other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses, if you except the imperative and present subjunctive; in which it is conjugated in the following manner:

Indicative.

Present.

pérco,	I lose, &c.	*perdémos.*
pérdes,		*perdéis.*
pérde,		*pérdem.*

Imperative.

pérde tu,	lose thou.
pérca élle,	let him lose.
percâmos nós,	let us lose.
perdéi vós	lose you.
pércaõ élles,	let them lose.

Subjunctive.

que éu pérca, that I may lose, &c.
pércas,
pérca, &c.

The compounds of the verb *têr*, as, *conténho*, I contain; *deténho*, I detain, &c. are conjugated like it.

Some verbs of this conjugation are only irregular in the participle passive; as, *escríto*, from *escrevêr*; *absôlto*, from *absolvér*.

Those that have the *j* before *o* in the present indicative change the *j* into *g* in all tenses and persons, in which the *j* would otherwise meet with the vowels *i* or *e*; as, *elegér*, to elect; *eu eléjo, tu eléges*, &c. I elect, &c.

Imperfect.	Preter-def.
elegía, &c.	*elegí, elegêste*, &c. I elected, &c.

The verbs ending in *éyo* in the present indicative, change that termination into *ía* in the imperfect, and into *i* in the preter-definite, and are so conjugated.

Indicative.

Present.

éu lêyo,	I read, &c.	*lêmos.*
lês,		*lêdes.*
lê,		*lém.*

Imperfect.

éu líá, I did read, &c.
lías, &c.

Preter definite.

êu li, I read, *&c.*
lêste, &c.

Imperative.

		leâmos nós,	let us read.
lê tu,	read thou.	*lêde vós*,	read you.
léa êlle,	let him read.	*léaõ êlles*,	let them read.

Subjunctive.

que êu léa, that I may read, *&c.*
léas,
léa, &c.

You may observe that they lose the *y* through all the other moods and tenses. The verb *crér*, to believe, is conjugated in the same manner.

Of the irregular Verbs in ir.

Ir, to go.

Indicative Mood.

Present tense.

vôu,	I go.	*vâmos*,	we go.
vás,	thou goest.	*ídes*,	you go.
vái,	he goes.	*vaõ*,	they go.

Preterimperfect.

hía,	I did go, *&c.*	*híamos*,
hías,		*híeis*.
hía,		*híaõ*.

Preterperfect definite.

fúi,	I went,	*fômos*,	we went.
fôste,	thou wentest.	*fôstes*,	you went.
fôi,	he went.	*fôraõ*,	they went.

Preterperfect.

ténho, *téns*, &c. } *ído* { I have gone, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

tínha, / *tínhas,* { *ído,* } I had gone, &c,

Future.

iréi, I shall or will go, &c.
irás, &c.

Imperative.

		vámos nós,	let us go.
vái tu,	go thou,	*íde vós,*	go ye.
vá élle,	let him go,	*vaõ élles.*	let them go.

Optative and Subjunctive.

que éu vá, that I may go, &c.
vás,
vá,
vámos,
vádes,
vaõ,

First Preterimperfect.

que éu fôra or *fôsse,* that I might go, &c.
fôras or *fôsses,*
fôra or *fôsse,*
fôramos or *fôssemos,*
fôreis or *fôsseis,*
fôraõ or *fôssem,*

Second Preterimperfect.

iría, I should go, &c.
irías, &c.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ído* and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér.*

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ído* and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér.*

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ído* and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér*.

Future.

quândo êu fôr, when I shall go, &c.
fôres,
fôr,
fôrmos,
fôrdes,
fôrem,

Second Future.

quândo êu tivér, *tivéres*, &c. { *ído* } when I shall have gone, &c.

Infinitive.

Present.

ir, to go.

Gerund.

índo, going.

Part.

ído, done.

Vir, to come.

Indicative.

Present.

vénho, I come, &c.	*vímos*,
véns,	*víndes*,
vém,	*vém*.

Imperfect.

vínha, I did come, &c.	*vínhamos*.
vínhas,	*vínheis*.
vínha,	*vínhaõ*.

Preter definite.

vím, I came, &c.	*viémos*.
viéste,	*viéstes*.
véio,	*viéraõ*.

Preterimperfect.

ténho víndo, I have come, &c.
téns víndo, &c.

Future.

viréi, I shall come, &c.
virás, &c.

Imperative.

		venhâmos nós,	let us come.
vém tu,	come thou.	*vínde vós*,	come you.
vénha êlle,	let him come.	*vénhaõ êlles*,	let them come.

Optative.

Present.

que êu vénha.

Imperfect.

que êu viéra, or *viésse.*

Second Imperfect.

viría, virías, &c.

Infinitive.

Present.

vír, to come.

Gerund.

víndo, coming.

Part.

víndo, come.

The compounds of *vir*; as *convír*, to be convenient; *sobrevír*, to come unlooked for, are conjugated in the same manner.

Of the irregular Verbs, mentír, *to lie,* sentír, *to feel;* servír, *to serve;* ferír, *to wound.*

These verbs change the *i* of the first person singular of the present tense, indicative, into *e* in the

other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses and moods, except in the imperative and the present conjunctive, in which they are conjugated thus:

Indicative.

Present.

êu mínto,	*tu mêntes,*	*elle mênte,* &c.
êu sínto,	*tu sêntes,*	*elle sênte,* &c.
éu sírvo,	*tu sérves,*	*elle sérve,* &c.

Imperative.

mênte tu,	*mínta élle,*	*mintâmos nós,*	*mentí vós,*	*míntaõ élles.*
sênte tu,	*sínta êlle,*	*sintâmos nós,*	*sentí vós,*	*síntaõ élles.*
sérve tu,	*sírva élle,*	*sirvâmos nos,*	*serví vós,*	*sírvaõ êlles.*

Subjunctive.

mínta,	*míntas,* &c.
sínta,	*síntas,* &c.
sírva,	*sírvas,* &c.

The compounds, *desmentír*, *assentír*, *consentír*, *dissentír*, *presentír*, are conjugated like *mentír* and *sentír*; and also the verbs *afferír*, *referír*, *conferír*, *deferír*, *differír*, *inferír*.

Of the irregular Verbs affligír, *to afflict;* corrigír, *to correct*, fingír, *to feign;* ungír, *to anoint;* compungír, frigír, dirigír, tingír, cingír, &c.

These verbs change the *g* of the infinitive mood into *j* in those tenses where the *g* would otherwise meet with the vowels *o*, as in the first person singular of the present indicative *afflíjo;* or *a*, as in the third person of the imperative in both numbers, in the first plural of the same tense, and in the present subjunctive.

Of the irregular Verb seguír, *to follow.*

This verb changes the *e* of the infinitive mood into *i* in the first person singular of the present indi-

cative, *éu sígo*, I follow: in the present subjunctive *que éu síga*, that I may follow: and in the imperative, where it is conjugated thus: *ségue tu, síga élle, sigámos nós, seguí vós, sígaõ élles.*

Take notice that the *u* is lost in those tenses where it would otherwise meet with the vowels *o* and *a*, as you see in the examples; and this observation also takes place in the verbs *distinguír*, to distinguish; *extinguír*, to extinguish, &c.

The compounds are *perseguír*, to persecute; *conseguír*, to obtain; *proseguír*, to pursue.

Of the irregular Verb ouvír, *to hear.*

This verb changes the *v* of the infinitive mood into *ç* in the first person singular of the present indicative, *éu óuço*, I hear, *tu óuves*, &c. in the present subjunctive, and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus: *óuve tu, óuça élle, ouçámos nós, ouví vós, óuçaõ élles,* hear thou, &c.

Of the irregular Verb dormír, *to sleep.*

This verb changes the *o* of the infinitive mood into *u* in the first person singular of the present indicative, thus, *éu dúrmo, tu dórmes, élle dórme,* &c. I sleep, *&c.* In the present subjunctive, *que éu dúrma*, &c. that I may sleep; and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus; *dórme tu, dúrma élle, durmámos nós, dormí vós, dúrmaõ élles,* sleep thou, *&c.*

Of the irregular Verb fugír, *to fly away.*

This verb is irregular in the present indicative, and is thus conjugated: *fújo, fóges, fóge, fugímos, fugís, fógem,* I run away, *&c.* It is also irregular in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus: *fóge tu, fúja élle, fujámos nós, fugí vós, fújaõ élles.* Finally, it is irregular in the present subjunctive; *que éu fúja, fújas,* &c.

It keeps the *u* in all other tenses and moods, as also the *g*.

The verb *surgír*, to arrive, *or* to come to an anchor, has the same irregularity, and makes *súrto*, in the participle passive.

The verbs *subír*, *cubrír*, *encubrír*, *descubrír*, *acudír*, *bullír*, *sumír*, *consumír*, *cuspír*, *construír*, *tossír*, &c. have the same irregularity in regard to the letter *u*.

Of the irregular Verb pedír, *to ask.*

This verb is irregular in the first person singular of the present indicative and subjunctive, as well as in the imperative, in which it changes the *d* into *ç*.

Indicative.

êu péço, I ask, &c.	*nós pedímos.*
tu pédes,	*vós pedís.*
êlle péde,	*êlles pédem.*

Imperative.

		peçâmos nos,	let us ask.
péde tu,	ask thou.	*pedí vós,*	ask you.
péça êlle,	let him ask.	*péçaõ êlles,*	let them ask.

Subjunctive.

que êu péça, that I may ask, &c.	*peçámos.*
péças,	*peçáis.*
péça.	*péçaõ.*

In like manner is conjugated the verb *medír*, to measure: *eu méço, tu médes*, &c.

Of the irregular Verb vestír, *to dress.*

Indicative.

Present.

êu vísto, I dress, &c.	*vestímos.*
véstes,	*vestís.*
véste,	*véstem.*

MAHARAJA SER... LIBRARY

Imperative.

		vistámos nos,	let us dress.
véste tu,	dress thou.	*vestí vós*,	dress you.
vísta élle,	let him dress.	*vístaõ élles*,	let them dress.

Subjunctive.

Present.

que éu vísta,	that I may dress, &c.	*vistámos.*
vístas,		*vistáis*,
vísta,		*vístaõ.*

In all other tenses and moods it keeps the letter *e*; and in like manner is conjugated the verb *despír.*

Of the irregular Verb sortír, *to furnish*, or *stock.*

Feyjó says, that the *o* of this verb is to be changed into *u*, in those tenses where the *t* is followed by *e* or *a*, and that it is to be kept, when the *t* is followed by *i*; but in the *Fábula dos planêtas* we read, *surtío efféyto*, it took effect: and in *Andrade 2. part. Apologet.* we read, *naõ sortíraõ efféyto*, where the verb *sortíraõ* is in the same tense, viz. in the preterperfect definite; therefore nothing can be determined about the irregularity of this verb.

Of the irregular Verb carpír, *to weep.*

This verb is defective, and is only used in those tenses and persons where the *p* is followed by *i*; as *carpímos, carpís*, we weep, you weep. Preterimperfect, *carpía, carpías*, &c. I did weep, *&c.*

Of the irregular Verb parír, *to bring forth young as any female doth.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

êu paíro,	I bring forth, &c.	*parímos.*
páres,		*parís.*
páre,		*párem.*

Imperfect.

paría, &c.

Imperative Mood.

		pairâmos.
páre tu,	bring thou forth, &c,	*parí.*
paíra élla,		*páiraõ.*

Subjunctive.

Present.

que êu paíra,	that I may say, &c.	*pairâmos.*
pairas,		*pairáis.*
paíra,		*paíraõ.*

Of the irregular Verb repetír, *to repeat.*

Indicative.

Present.

repíto,	I repeat, &c.	*repetímos.*
repétes,		*repetís.*
repéte,		*repétem.*

Imperfect.

repetía, repetías, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

repetí, repetíste, &c.

Imperative.

repéte tu,	repeat thou, &c.	*repitâmos,* &c.
repíta êlle,		

Subjunctive.

Present.

que êu repíta, that I may repeat, &c.
repítas, &c.

Imperfect.

repetíra, or *repetísse,* that I might repeat.

Of the irregular Verbs sahír, *to go out, and* cahír, *to fall.*

Indicative.

Present.

sáyo,	I go out, &c.	*sahímos.*
sáhes,		*sahís.*
sáhe,		*sáhem.*

Preterimperfect.

sahía, sahías, &c.

Preterperfect definite,
sahí, sahíste, &c.

Imperative.

	sahámos nós.
sáhe tu,	*sahí vós.*
sáya êlle,	*sáyaõ êlles.*

Subjunctive.

que êu sáya, sáyas, &c.

This is the common way of writing the irregular tenses of the verb *sahír* as well as those of the verb *cahír*, viz. *ou cáyo, tu cáhes*, &c. I fall, *&c.* according to *Feyjó*,

Of the irregular Verb, ordír, *to warp in a loom.*

Feyjó says that this verb changes the *o* into *u*, in those persons where it would otherwise meet with the syllables *da, de, do.*

Of the irregular Verb advertír, *to warn.*

Advertír is irregular in the following tenses, only by changing *vir* into *vêr*.

Indicative.

Present.

advírto, I warn, &c.	*advertímos.*
advértes,	*advertís.*
advérte,	*advértem.*

Imperative.

	advirtamos nós.
advérte tu, warn thou, &c.	*advertí vós.*
advírta êlle,	*advírtaõ êlles.*

Subjunctive.

Present.

que êu advírta, that I may warn, &c.	*advirtámos.*
advírtas,	*advirtáis.*
advírta,	*advírtaõ.*

The Conjugation of the irregular Verb pôr, *to place.*

Indicative.

Present.

pônho, I put, &c.	*pômos.*
pôens,	*pôndes.*
pôem,	*pôem.*

Preterimperfect.

púnha, I did put.	*púnhamos.*
púnhas,	*púnheis.*
púnha,	*púnhaõ.*

Preterperfect definite.

púz, I put, &c.	*puzémos.*
puzéste,	*puzéstes.*
pôz,	*puzéraõ.*

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *têr*, and the participle *pósto.*

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pôsto*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *têr*.

Future.

poréi, I shall *or* will put, &c.	*porêmos.*
porás,	*poréis.*
porá,	*poráõ.*

Imperative.

	ponhâmos nós.
pôem, put thou, &c.	*pônde vós.*
pônha êlle,	*pônhaõ êlles.*

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que êu pônha, that I may put, &c.
pônhas, &c.

First Preterimperfect.

que êu puzéra or *puzésse*, that I might put, &c.
puzéras or *puzésses*, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

eu poría, I should put, &c.
porías, &c.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pôsto*, and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér.*

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pôsto*, and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér.*

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pôsto*, and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér.*

Future.

quãndo éu pusér, when I shall put, &c.
puséres, &c.

Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *pôsto*, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *tér.*

Infinitive.

Present.

pôr, to put.

Gerund.

pôndo, putting.

Participle passive.

pôsto, put.

After the same manner are conjugated the verbs derived from *por*; as *compôr*, to compose; *dispôr*, to dispose; *propôr*, to propose, &c.

Some verbs are irregular, only in the participle passive; as *abérto*, from *abrír*; *escríto*, from *escrevér*, &c.

Of Verbs Neuter.

Verbs neuter are those which make a complete sense of themselves, and do not govern any case af-

ter them, like the verbs active; as *dormír*, to sleep; *andár*, to go; *tremér*, to tremble, &c. But you must take notice that we meet with some verbs neuter which may govern an accusative; as *dormír hum sôno profúndo*, to sleep soundly; *éu fúi andândo méu camínho, e naõ dísse hũma palávra*, I went my way, and said not a word. We may also say, that the verbs neuter are those which, in their compound tenses, are seldom or never conjugated with the verb *sér*, to be; as, I sleep, I tremble, I speak, &c. We may indeed say, *éu tênho dormído*, I have slept; *éu ténho tremído*, I have trembled; but not, I am slept, &c. I said *seldom*, because sometimes the verbs neuter may be conjugated with the verb *ser*; as, *sér bem falládo*, to have a good name.

It is necessary to be acquainted with the nature of a verb neuter, to avoid mistakes in the participle, as may be seen in the Syntax of Participles.

Of Reciprocal Verbs.

The name of Reciprocal Verbs is given to such as return the action upon the agent, and are conjugated through all their tenses with the pronouns conjunctive *me*, *te*, *se*, &c.

Example.

Indicative.	Present.
éu me arrepêndo,	I repent, &c.
tu te arrepêndes,	
élle se arrepênde, &c.	

Imperfect.	
éu me arrependía,	I did repent, &c.

and so of the rest.

Yet we are to take notice that the pronouns conjunctive *me*, *te*, &c. may be placed either before or after the verb, in the indicative, and consequently we may say, *éu me lêmbro*, or *eu lêmbro-me*, I re-

member; *me lembréi*, or *lembréi-me*, I remembered, &c. But in the imperative they ought to be placed after the verb, as in the following

Example.

lémbra-te tu, remember thou, &c.
lémbre-se êlle,

lembrêmo-nos nós.
lembrái-vos vós.
lêmbrem se élles.

In which example you must observe also, that the first person plural, which in the other verbs is like the first person plural of the present subjunctive, has the last consonant, *s*, cut off; and so from *lembrêmos* we cut off the *s* to make *lembrêmo-nos;* and from *arrependámos* we make *arrependámo-nos*, &c. In regard to the infinitive, we may say, *hé necessário arrependêr-se dos peccádos*, it is necessary to repent sins; *he necessário lembrár-se*, it is necessary to remember; and not *se arrependêr*, or *se lembrár*. In like manner we may say, *lembrándo-me*, remembering, and not *me lembrándo.* Yet you must take notice that the present infinitive may be preceded by the particle *pará*, (which forms the Portuguese supine) and then the pronoun conjunctive may be placed either before or after it; and so we may say, *para lembrár-se*, or *para se lembrár*, to remember, or in order to remember.

As for the subjunctive mood, you must put the pronoun conjunctive before the present: but you must carefully observe, that the pronouns conjunctive must be placed before it when preceded by the particles *se*, if, *que*, that; and so you may say, *que éu me lembrásse, se éu me lembrásse*, that I might remember, &c. but not *que eu lembrásse me*, &c. But when the first preterimperfect is not preceded by any particle, then you must place the pronoun conjunctive after it; as, *arrependêrame éu dísso*, I wish I repented it.

In the second preterimperfect we may place the pronouns conjunctive either before or after it, there-

fore you may say *arrependería-me se*, &c. or *éu me arrependería se*, &c. I should repent if, &c.

In the future you must always place the pronouns conjunctive before it; and so we may say, *quândo éu me lembrár*, when I shall remember: but not *quándo êu lembrár-me*.

Note, all the verbs active may become reciprocals.

Example.

êu me âmo, I love myself.
tu te âmas, thou lovest thyself.
élle se âma, he loves himself.
nós nos amâmos, we love ourselves, &c.

The Conjugation of the reciprocal Verb ir-se, *to go away.*

Indicative.

Present.

êu me vôu, I go away.
tu te vás, &c. thou goest away, &c.

Preterimperfect.

êu me hía, I did go away.
tu te hías, &c. thou didst go away, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

êu me fúi, I went away.
tu te fôste, &c. thou wentest away, &c.

Preterperfect.

êu me tênho ído, I am gone away, *or* I have gonè away.
tu te téns ído, &c. thou hast gone away, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

éu me tínha ído, I was gone away, *or* I had gone away.
tu te tínhas ído, &c. thou hast gone away, &c.

Future.

êu me iréi, &c. I shall *or* will go away.
tu te irás, &c. thou shalt go away.

Imperative.

vái-te, go thou away.
vá-se, let him go away.
vâmo-nos, let us go away.
íde-vos, go away, get away, *or* get you gone.
vão-se, let them go away.

Subjunctive.

Present.

que éu me vá, that I may go away.
que tu te vás, &c. that thou mayest go away, &c.

First Preterimperfect.

éu me fôra, or *me fôsse,* I went away.
te fôras, or *te fôsses,* &c. thou wentest away, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

éu me iría, I would, &c. go away.
tu te irías, thou wouldst, &c.

Preterperfect.

que êu me ténka ído, that I have gone away, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

que éu me tivéra, or *me tivésse ído,* that I had gone away.

Second Preterpluperfect.

éu me tería ído, I should have gone away, &c.

Future.

quándo éu me fôr, when I shall go away, &c.

Second Future.

quándo éu me tivér ído, when I shall have gone away, &c.

Infinitive.

ír-se, to go away.

Preterperfect.

tér-se ído, to have gone away.

Participles.

Present.

que se vá, that is gone away.

Preterit.

ído, gone away.

Future.

que há de ír-se, that is to go away.

Gerunds.

índo-se, going away.
téndo-se ído, having gone away.

Supine.

para ír-se, to go, *or* in order to go away.

You must observe, that in the compound tenses the pronouns *me*, *te*, &c. are placed before the auxiliary verb.

2dly. This verb is also said of vessels to signify their being leaky; as *vái-se a cúba*, the tub leaks. It is also used before the gerunds; as, *o invérno vái-se acabándo*, the winter is drawing towards an end; *élles vaõ-se preparándo*, they are preparing themselves: in which examples and in the like, the verb is to be rendered into English by the verb *to be* itself, and without addition of the adverb *away*; and sometimes it is placed before the present infinitive; as, *ír-se deitár*, to go to bed.

Of the reciprocal Verb vír-se, *to come away.*

This verb is to be conjugated like the verb *vir*; but you must place the pronouns conjunctive, *me*, *te*, &c. according to the observations we have made above.

Of the reciprocal Verb avír-se, *to agree.*

This is a compound verb, which is to be conjugated by putting the particle *a* before the verb *vír* in all its tenses and moods; but you must always

make use of the observations already made about the pronouns conjunctive; and the same care must be had with the reciprocal verb *havêr-se*, to behave; in the conjugation of which, you have nothing to do but to add the pronouns conjunctive to the verb *havêr*.

Impersonal Verbs.

There are three sorts of verbs impersonal, which have only the third person singular.

The first are properly impersonals of themselves; as,

succéde,	it happens.
bástа,	it is enough, *or* it suffices.
chóve,	it rains.
trovéja,	it thunders.

The second are derived from verbs active, followed by the particle *se*, which renders them impersonal; as, *áma*-se, they love; *díz-se*, they say; *nóta-se*, it is noted. They are also called passive impersonals.

The third, which have a great affinity with reciprocal verbs, are conjugated with the pronouns conjunctive, *me, te, lhe, nos, vos, lhes*; as *dóe me, dóe te, dóe-lhe*, &c.

The impersonal verbs of themselves are,

convém, it is convenient.
succêde, it happens, or it falls out.
está-me bem, it becomes me.
bástа, it is enough.
há-se, it is necessary.
chovísca, it misles.
chóve, or *cáhe pédra*, it hails.
géa, it freezes.
néva, it snows.
fuzíla, or *relampaguéa*, it lightens.
impórta, it matters, it concerns.
paréce, it seems.

and the like, which are conjugated with the third persons, singular of each tense; as,

Indicative.

Present.

chóve, it rains.

Imperfect.

chovía, it did rain.

Preterperfect definite.

chovéo, it rained.

Preterperfect.

tem chovído, it has rained.

Preterpluperfect.

tínha chovído, it had rained.

Future.

choverá, it shall *or* will rain.

Imperative.

chôva, let it rain.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que chôva, that it may rain.

Imperfect.

que chovêra, or *chovêsse*, that it might rain.

Second Imperfect.

chovería, it should rain.

Future.

quândo chovêr, when it shall rain.

Second Future.

quândo tivér chovído, when it shall have rained.

Infinitive.

chovêr, to rain.

The particle *se*, which composes the second sort of impersonal verbs, may be placed either before or after them; as *diz-se*, they say; *sábe-se*, it is known; *sabía-se*, it was known: *lógo se sôube*, it was immediately known; *se díz*, it is said, *&c.* but sometimes they make no use of the particle *se*, and only put the verb in the third person plural; as, *dízem*, instead of *se díz*, they say.

In like manner all the verbs active may become impersonal.

In regard to these verbs, take notice, that when the noun that follows them is in the singular number, you must put the verb in the singular; if the noun be in the plural, you put the verb in the plural.

Example.

Lôuva-se o capitaõ, they praise the captain.
Lôuvaõ-se os capitaẽs, they praise the captains.
Vê-se hum hómem, they see a man.
Vêm-se hómens, they see men.

When *lhe* is used after the word *se*, then *lhe* is to be rendered into English by *his* or *her*; as, *lôuva-se-lhe o valór*, they praise his *or* her courage.

The third sort of impersonal verbs are such as are conjugated with the pronouns personal, *me*, *te*, *lhe*, &c. with the third person singular.

Example.

Indicative.

Present.

desagráda-me,	I am displeased, *or* it displeases me.
desagráda-te,	thou art displeased.
desagráda-lhe,	he *or* she is displeased.
desagráda-nos,	we are displeased.
desagráda-vos,	you are displeased.
desagráda-lhes,	they are displeased.

Imperfect.

desagradáva-me, I was displeased.

Preterperfect definite.

desagradôu-me, I was displeased.

Future.

desagradár-me-há, I shall be displeased.

Optative.

que me desagráde, that I may be displeased.

Imperfect.

que me desagradára or *me desagradásse*, that I were displeased.

Second Imperfect.

desagradár-me-hía, I should be displeased.

Conjugate after the same manner,

succéde-me, it happens to me.
dóe-me, it grieves *or* it pains me.
paréce-me, it seems to me.
hé-me precíso, it behoves me.
agráda-me, it pleases me.
lémbro-me, I remember.

Many of these impersonal verbs have the third person singular and plural; as,

dóe me a pérna, my leg pains me.
dóem-me os ólhos, I have sore eyes.
o vósso vestído paréce-me nôvo, your coat appears new to me.
os vóssos sapátos me parécem múito comprídos, your shoes seem to me too long.

Of the Verb sêr, *to be.*

The verb *ser* is also used as an impersonal, as it appears in the following examples: *hé têmpo de levantár-se*, it is time to get up; *éra têmpo de hír*, it was time to go, *&c.* and particularly when it is conjugated with the adjectives *precíso* or *necessário*; as, *he precíso* or *necessário fazêr isto*, this must be done; *éra precíso or necessário escrevér*, it was necessary to write; *éu iría, se fôsse precíso*, I would go, if it

should be necessary; *hé precíso que êu vá*, I must go; *hé precíso que êu léya*, I must read; *hé precíso que êlle côma*, he must eat; *sería precíso que êu fôsse*, I should go. You see by the last examples, that when the verb *ser* and the adjective are before the conjunctive mood, with the participle *que*, the conjunctive is rendered in English by the infinitive; but if the verb *ser* is followed by the relative *or* participle *que*, it must then be rendered in English in the following manner; as *êu hé que ténho feíto aquíllo*, 'tis I who have done that; *tu hé que téns, &c.* 'tis thou who hast, &c. *êlle hé que tem, &c.* 'tis he who, &c. *nós hé que têmos*, &c. 'tis we who have, &c. *vós hé que têndes, &c.* 'tis you who have, &c. *êlles hé que têm, &c.* 'tis they have, &c. *a léy hé que o mânda*, 'tis the law that prescribes it; *élla hé que o crê*, 'tis she who believes it; *êlles hé que o fizéraõ?* is it they have done it? *êu hé que o fíz*, 'twas I who did it; *entáõ hé que êu tómo as mínhas medídas*, 'tis then I take my measures; *entaõ he que êu vi*, 'twas then I saw, *or only* then I saw. You may observe that *que* is not relative in the last examples, and that it is left out in English.

Of the Verb havêr, *when it is impersonal.*

It is to be so conjugated.

Indicative.

Present.

hâ, or *naõ há*, there is, *or* there is not, *or* there are, *or* there are not.

Imperfect.

havía, there was, *or* there were.

Preterperfect definite.

hôuve, there was, *or* there were.

Preterperfect.

tem havído, there has been *or* there have been.

Preterpluperfect.

tínha havído, there had been.

Future.

haverá, there shall be.

Imperative.

hája, let there be.

Optative and Subjunctive.

que hája, that there may be.

Imperfect.

que houvéra or *houvésse,* that there were.

Second Imperfect.

havería, there would be.

Preterperfect.

que ténha havído, if there had been.

Preterpluperfect.

se tivésse havído, if there had been.

Future.

quândo houvér, when there will *or* shall be.

Second Future.

quândo tivér havído, when there shall have been.

Infinitive.

havêr, there to be.

Pret.

têr havído, there to have been.

Gerunds.

havêndo, there being.
têndo havído, in there having been.

Those who learn Portuguese are greatly at a loss how to render the following expressions, *there is not ;*

is there? and though there is nothing so easy; however, I have explained them at large in the following conjugation.

Conjugation of the Verb impersonal there is, há, *when it marks the place, through all its tenses.*

There is of it,	*há la dísso.*
There is not of it,	*naõ há lá dísso.*
Is there of it?	*há lá dísso?*
Is there not of it?	*naõ há lá dísso?*
There was of it,	*havía lá dísso.*
There was not of it,	*naõ havía lá dísso.*
Was there of it?	*havia lá dísso?*
Was there not of it?	*naõ havía lá dísso?*
There was of it,	*hôuve lá dísso.*
There was not of it,	*naõ hôuve lá dísso.*
Was there of it?	*hôuve lá dísso?*
Was there not of it?	*naõ hôuve lá dísso?*
There shall be of it,	*haverá lá dísso.*
There shall not be of it,	*naõ haverá lá dísso.*
Shall there be of it?	*haverá lá dísso?*
Shall there not be of it?	*naõ haverá lá dísso?*
That there may be of it,	*que hája la dísso.*
That there may not be of it,	*naõ hája lá dísso.*
That there were of it,	*que houvéra* or *houvésse lá dísso.*
That there were not of it,	*naõ houvéra* or *houvésse lá dísso.*
There would be of it,	*havería lá dísso.*
There would not be of it,	*naõ havería lá dísso.*
Would there not be of it?	*naõ havería lá dísso?*
If there had been of it,	*se tivésse havído lá dísso.*
If there had not been of it,	*se naõ tivésse havído lá dísso.*
Had there been of it?	*tería havído lá dísso?*
Had there not been of it?	*naõ tería havído lá dísso?*
There would have been of it,	*tería havído lá dísso.*
There would not have been of it,	*naõ tería havído lá dísso.*
Would there have been of it?	*tería havído lá dísso?*
Would there not have been of it?	*naõ tería havído lá dísso?*
When there will be of it,	*quândo houvér lá disso.*
When there will not be of it,	*quândo naõ houvér lá disso.*

When there will have been of it,	*quándo tivér havído lá dísso.*
When there will not have been of it,	*quándo naõ tivér havído lá dísso.*
Will there have been of it?	*terá havído lá dísso?*
Will there not have been too much of it?	*naõ terá havído lá dísso?*
For there having been too much of it,	*por tér havído lá demasiadaménte dísso.*
In there having been too little of it.	*téndo havído lá múito pôuco dísso.*

Most ways of speaking beginning with *some*, and the verb *to be*, are expressed in Portuguese by the impersonal *há;* as, some friends are false, *ha amígos fálsos;* some Christians are unworthy of that name, *há Christãos que naõ saõ dígnos de tal nóme.*

Observe that *há* comes before a substantive even of the plural number.

The impersonal *ha* is besides used to denote a quantity of time, space, and number; as, *há déz ânnos que morréo*, he has been dead these ten years; or, he died ten years ago; *ha trínta milhôens d'álmas em Frânça*, there are thirty millions of souls in France; *de Páris a Lôndres ha* 120 *légoas*, Paris is 120 leagues from London.

The question of space is asked thus, *quánto há de Paris a Londres?* how far is Paris from London?

Of the impersonal Verb há-se, *it is necessary, or must.*

This verb answers to the Italian *bisógna*, and to the French *il faut*, and always requires after it the particle *de*, and the infinitive. It denotes the necessity of doing something, and is Englished by *must*, and sometimes by the verb *to be*, through all its tenses, with some of these words, *necessary, requisite, needful:* and as it denotes the necessity of doing something in general, without specifying who *must*, therefore the subject coming before *must* may be either *I* or *we, he*, or *she*, or *any body*, according to the sense of the speech; as,

Há se de fazêr aquíllo, one, *or* we, *or* you, *or* he, *or* somebody must do that.

Há-se de hír, I *or* you, *or* we *or* somebody must go.

Sometimes the verb coming after this impersonal, is Englished by the passive voice; as, *há-se de fazêr ísto*, this must be done.

It is very often joined with *mistér;* as, *há-se de mistér dinhéiro para demándas*, one must have money to go to law; *há-se de mistér hum bôm amígo para fazêr fortúna no múndo*, to push one's fortune in the world, one must have a good friend.

As for the conjugation of this verb, you must make use of the verb *to be* with *necessary*, as I have already said.

Example.

Present, *há-se*, it is necessary. Imperfect, *havía-se*, it was necessary; and so through all the tenses and moods.

You must take notice, that sometimes the infinitive that follows the particle *de* is placed between this impersonal and its particle *se;* as, *há-de achár-se*, it will be found, and sometimes the infinitive precedes the impersonal, and this follows the particle *se;* as, *achár-se-há*, it will be found; and in this case you must not join the particle *de* to it. Observe, that the infinitive may be also placed between the imperfect tense of this impersonal verb and its particle *se;* as, *havía de achár-se*, it was to be found; but when the infinitive precedes both the impersonal and its particle *se*, then you must put the particle *se* before the impersonal, and make use of the imperfect *hía*, and not *havía;* so you may say, *achár-se hía*, and not *achár-se-havía.*

Of the defective Verbs carpír, *to weep, and* soêr, *to be wont.*

The verb *carpír* is used only in those tenses and persons where the *p* is followed by an *i*; as, *carpímos, carpís,* we weep, you weep. Preterimp. *carpía, carpías,* &c. I did weep, &c.

The verb *soér* is only used in the third persons of the present indicative of the preterimperfect of the same mood, and in the gerund; as, *élle sóe,* he is wont; *élles sóem,* they are wont. Imperf. *élle soía,* he was wont; *élles soíaõ,* they were wont. Gerund, *soéndo,* being wont.

CHAP. V.

Of the Participles.

THE participle is a tense of the infinitive, which serves to form the preterperfects and preterpluperfects of all the verbs; as, *ténho amádo,* I have loved; *tínha amádo,* I had loved.

Amádo is a participle, and all the verbs in *ar* form the participle in *ádo*; as, *amádo, cantádo,* &c.

Amádo is likewise a noun adjective. Example. *Hômem amádo, molhér amáda; livros amádos, létras amádas.*

Some participles are frequently abridged; as, *envôlto,* or *envolvído, corrúpto* or *corrompído, enxúto* or *enxugádo*; and several others, which the use of authors will point out to you.

The regular verbs ending in *er* or *ir* form the participle in *ido*; as, *vendído, recebído, luzído, nutrído,* &c.

There are three sorts of participles; namely, active, passive, and absolute.

The active participles are composed of the verb *tér*; as, *ténho amádo, tínha amádo*, &c.

The passive participles are preceded by the verb *sér*, to be; as, *sôu amádo, sêndo louvádo*, &c.

The passive participles are of the same nature as those called *absolute* in Latin; and you must observe, that *having* and *being* are often left out in Portuguese.

EXAMPLE.

Feíto ísto, having done this.
Díto ísto, having said so.
Acabáda a cêa, after he *or* they have supped.

The auxiliary and participle are not always immediately joined together in compound tenses; as, *Nós têmos, com a gráça de Déos, vencído os nóssos inimígos*, we have, by the grace of God, overcome our enemies.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Adverbs.

THE adverb is that which gives more or less force to the verb.

The adverb has the same effect with the verb as the adjective with the substantive: it explains the accidents and circumstances of the action of the verb.

There are a great many sorts; as, adverbs of time, place, quantity, &c.

Adverbs of time; as, at present, *presentemênte*; now, *agóra*; yesterday, *ôntem*; to day, *hóje*; never,

núnca; always, *sémpre;* in the mean time; *entretánto.*

Adverbs of place; as, where, *ónde;* here, *aqui;* from whence, *dónde;* there, *alí;* from hence, *daquí;* above, *em címa;* below, *em báxo;* far, *lónge;* near, *pérto.*

Adverbs of quantity; as, how much, *quánto,* how many, *quántos;* or *quántas;* so much, *tánto;* much, *múito;* little, *póuco.*

A great many adverbs are formed from adjectives, changing *o* into *aménte;* *sânto, santaménte,* holily; *ríco, ricaménte,* richly; *dóuto, doutaménte,* learnedly.

From adjectives in *e* or *l* we likewise form adverbs, by adding *ménte* to them; as,

Constánte, constanteménte, constantly.
Diligénte, diligenteménte, diligently.
Prudénte, prudenteménte, prudently.
Fiél, fielménte, faithfully.

In order to assist the memory of those who are learning the Portuguese language, I have here collected a large number of adverbs, which, by frequent repetition, may be easily retained, especially those terminated in *ménte.*

A Collection of Adverbs.

Abundanteménte, abundantly.
Com razaõ, justaménte, justly.
Absolutaménte, absolutely.
A Escachapérnas, or *a cavalleíro,* a-straddle.
Agóra, or *por hóra,* now at this time.
Já para já, now, immediately
Com condiçáõ, upon condition.
De párte, aside.
De travéz, askew, asquint; as, *olhár de travéz,* to look askew, *or* asquint.
Actualménte, actually.
De propósito, purposely.
Adéos, farewell.
Admiravelménte, *Maravilhosaménte,* *A's míl maravílhas,* admirably.
Astutaménte, cunningly.
Atreiçoadaménte, treacherously.
De maravílha, very seldom.
A miúdo, often.
Assím, so.
Taõ, so.
A'préssa, in haste.
Facilménte, easily.
A'o avésso, or *ás avéssas,* the wrong side outward.

De improvíso, or *improvisaménte*, at unawares.
Antigaménte, anciently.
Quási, pretty near, almost.
Entáõ, then.
Dêsde entáõ, since that time.
Dêsdequándo? since when?
De quándo ha? from what time? how long?
De quándo em quándo, now and then, ever and anon.
Quândobem, or *aínda quándo*, albeit, although it should be.
Quándo muíto, at the most.
Quándo mênos, at least.
Cá, here, or hither.
Lá, there.
Alí, there, in that place.
Ahí, there, expresses the place where stands the person spoken to; as, *ahí ônde estás*, there where you are.
Acolá, there.
Tráz, or *detráz*, behind.
Para tráz, backward.
I'sto hé, to wit.
Em véz, instead.
Também, also.
Tânto que, *Lógo que*, as soon as.
De pensádo, wilfully.
Acáso, by chance.
Fixaménte, stedfastly.
Finalménte, finally.
Livreménte, freely.
Múito, much.
Depréssa, quickly.
Aquí, here.
Até aquí, as far as here, *or* till now, *or* hitherto.
D'aquí em diânte, henceforward, *or* hereafter.
Bem, well.
A'manhãa, to-morrow.
A'manhãa pela manhãa, to-morrow morning.
Despôis d' a' manhãa, after to morrow.
Ultimaménte, lastly.
Cômo, as.
Cômo? how?
Cêdo, soon.
Tárde, late.
Primeíro que, before that.
Primeíro que túdo, before all, *or* in the first place.
Fóra, abroad, out.
Já, already
De sálto, at one jump.
De quândo em quândo, from time to time.
A'ntes, before.
Despôis, afterwards.
Juntamênte, together.
Enteiramênte, entirely.
A'o redór, or *em tôrno*, about.
De bálde, in vain.
Loucamênte, madly.
Muíto, very.
Atrevidamênte, boldly.
Felicemênte, happily.
Vergonhósamente, shamefully
Núnca, never.
Núnca mais, never since.
Lógo, immediately.
Aínda, yet; as, *aínda naõ véio*, he is not come yet.
Aínda, even; as, *sería vergônha aínda o fallár nísso*, it were a shame even to speak of it.
Nem se quér, even.
Vilmênte, basely.
Mal, ill.
Máis, more;
Mênos, less.
Até, until *or* even.
Sim, yes.

Naõ, no, not.
O'nde, where.
De cór, by heart.
A's vêzes, sometimes, from time to time.
Quândo, when.
Náda, nothing.
Verdadeiramênte, truly.
Déntro, within.
Devagár, softly.

CHAP. VII.

Of the Prepositions.

PREPOSITIONS are a part of speech indeclinable, most commonly set before a noun, a pronoun, or verb.

Every preposition requires some case after it, as you will see in the following collection:

Genitive.

A'ntes do día, before day-break.
Diânte de Deos, before God.
Dêntro da igrêja, within the church.
De tráz do palácio, behind the palace.
Debáxo da mêsa, under the table.
Em címa da mêsa, upon the table.
Além, besides.
Além dos máres, on that side of the seas.
Além dísso, besides that, moreover.
Além de que, idem.
Aquem, or *dáquem dos máres*, on this side of the seas.
Ao redór, or *em contôrno da cidáde*, round about the city.
Pérto de Lôndres, near London.
Acêrca da quêlle negócio, concerning that affair.
Fora da cása, out of the house.
Fóra de perigo, out of danger.
Fóra de si, out of one's wits.

This preposition governs also a nominative; as, fóra sêu irmãõ, *except his brother*, or *his brother excepted.*

De frônte de minha cása, over-against my house.
De frônte da igréja, facing the church.
Despôis de céa, after supper.

Dative.

Quânto áquillo, with respect to that.
Pegádo á murálha, close to the wall.

Désde o bíco do pé até a cabêça, from top to toe.

Accusative.

Perânte o juíz, before the judge.
Entre, between, among, *or* amongst.
E'ntre os hómens, among men.
Sóbre a mésa, upon the table.
Confórme, or *segúndo a léy*, according to the law.
Por amôr de Dêos, for God's sake.
Pelo múndo, through the world.
Pela rúa, through the streets.
Pelas térras, through the lands.
Por grânde que séja, let it never be so great.
Côntra êlles, against them.
Tráz do témplo, behind the temple.
Durânte, during; as, *durânte o invérno*, during the winter.

We shall be more particular about prepositions when we examine their construction.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Conjunctions.

A CONJUGATION is an indeclinable part of speech which serves to join the members and parts of speech together, in shewing the dependency of relation and coherency between the words and sentences.

Some conjugations are copulative, which join, and, as it were, couple two terms together; as, *e*, and: *Portuguêses e Inglêses*, Portuguese and English.

Some are disjunctive, which shew separation or division; as, *nem*, nor, neither; *ou*, either, or. Example; *nem éste, nem aquêlle*, neither this, nor that; *ou éste, ou aquêlle*, either this or that; *nem máis, nem mênos*, neither more nor less; *quér o fáça, quer naõ, túdo para mim hé o mésmo*, it is all one to me whether he does it, or no; *quer séja verdáde, quer naõ*, whether it be true, or not; *nem se quér hum*, not even one.

The adversative denote restriction, or contrariety; as, *mas*, or *porém*, but; *comtúdo*, yet, however; *mas ántes*, or *pello contrário*, nay.

The conjunctions conditional suppose a condition, and serve to restrain and limit what has just been said; as, *se*, if; *com condiçám que*, *com ísto que*, *dádo cáso que*, provided that, or upon condition that, or in case that, &c.

The concessive, which shew the assent we give to a thing; as, *embóra*, or *séja embóra*, well and good; *está féito*, done, agreed.

The causal shew the reason of something; as, *porqué*, for, or because, or why.

The concluding denote a consequence drawn from what is before; as, *lógo* or *por consequência*, therefore, then, or consequently.

The transitive, which serve to pass from one sentence to another; as, *além dísso*, moreover, or besides that; *sóbre túdo*, or *em súmma*, after all, upon the whole, in the main; *a propósito*, now I think on't, or now we are speaking of that.

There are others of a different sort; as, *se quér*, or *ao mênos*, at least; *aíndaque*, although; *de sórte que*, so that; *ántes quéro pedír que furtár*, I'll rather ask than steal; *ántes morreréi que dizêr-volo*, I'll rather die than tell you; *já que*, since, &c.

To the above-mentioned parts of speech grammarians have added *Interjections*, which are particles serving to denote some passion or emotion of the mind; but there is another sort, which may be called demonstrative; as, *aquí* and *lá*; Ex. *éste hómem aquí*, this man; *aquélla molhér lá*, that woman, &c. and some others continuative, because they denote continuation in the speech; as, *com efféito*, in effect; *álem dísso*, besides; *óra vejámos*, now let us see; *finalmênte fômenos embóra*, and so, sir, we went away. To which we may add those invented to imitate the sounds of dumb creatures, and the noise which is occasioned by the clashing of bodies against one another; as, *záz*, *tráz*, thwick-thwack, &c.

Interjective Particles.

Of Joy.

Ha, ha, ha! Ha, ha, ha!
Oh que gôsto! Oh joy!

Of Grief.

Ay! Alas! ah!
Ay de mim! Woe is me! lack!
Mêu Déos! My God!

Of Pain.

Ay! Ay!
Oh! Oh!

To encourage.

A'nimo!
O'ra vámos! } Come, come on!

To call.

O, olá, Ho, hey, hip!

Of admiration or surprise.

O, O lá, ahi! Lack-a-day!
A'pre! Heyday!

Of aversion.

I'rra!
Náda! } Away, away with, fye!
Fóra!

For making people go out of the way, or stand away.

Gúardem-se, or *arrédem-se!* Have a care, clear the way, *or* stand away!

For shouting.

Víva! Huzza!

Of silence.

Caláivos! Hush! Peace!

Of cursing and threatening.

Ai, guái! Woe!

For derision.

Ah! Ah! oh! oh! oh!

Of wishing.

O' provéra a Déos! Would to God!

Oxalá! or *hah!* O that!
O se! Would!

The interjection *O* serves for different emotions of the mind, as admiration, grief, wish, &c. and sometimes is used ironically, but differently uttered, according to the emotion which it expresses.

Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language.

An^{to}	*António*	Anthony
Seb^{am}	*Sebastiám*	Sebastian
B^{mo} P^{e}	*Beatíssimo Pádre*	The most blessed Father
Cap^{m}	*Capitaõ*	Captain
Comp^{a}	*Companhía*	Company
Corr^{o}	*Carrêio*	Post
D.	*Dom* or *Dona*	Don *or* Dona
D^{r}, D^{or}	*Doutôr*	Doctor
D^{s}	*Dêos*	God
D^{o}, D^{a}	*Dítto, dítta,*	Said
Exmo, Exma	*Excellentíssimo, ma*	Most excellent
V. E.	*Vóssa excellência*	Your Excellence
V. S.	*Vóssa senhoría*	Your Lordship
V. A.	*Vóssa altêsa*	Your Highness
V. M. *or* V^{mce}	*Vóssa mercê*	You
V. P.	*Vóssa paternidáde*	Your Paternity
V. Mag^{de}	*Vóssa magestáde*	Your Majesty
S.	*Sânto*	Saint
Fran^{co}	*Francisco.*	Francis
G^{de}	*Guárde*	Save
J. H. S.	*Jesús*	Jesus
M^{s} a^{s}	*Muítos ânnos*	Many Years
M^{e}	*Méstre*	Master
S^{or}, S^{ra}	*Senhôr, ôra,*	Sir, Lady
R^{mo}	*Reverendíssimo*	Most Reverend
P^{a}	*Para*	For
Q^{e}	*Que*	That
Q^{do}	*Quândo*	When
Q^{m}	*Quem*	Who
Q^{to}	*Quânto*	How much
Supp^{te}	*Supplicânte*	Petitioner
Gen^{al}	*Generál*	General
Tent^{e}	*Tenênte*	Lieutenant
V. G.	*Vérbi grátia*	For Example.

And many others, that must be learned by use.

A NEW

PORTUGUESE GRAMMAR.

PART II.

CHAP. I.

Of the Division of Syntax.

SYNTAX is a Greek word, by the Latins called *construction*; and it signifies the right placing and connecting of words in a sentence. It is divided into three sorts; the first, of Order or Arrangement; the second, of Concordance; the third of Government. The Syntax of Order or Arrangement, is the fit disposition of words in a sentence. The Syntax of Concordance, is when the parts of speech agree with one another, as the substantive with the adjective, or the nominative with the verb. The Syntax of Government, is when one part of speech governs another.

For the sake of those who, perhaps, have not a grammatical knowledge of their own language, I shall lay down some general rules of Portuguese construction.

Of the Order of Words.

1. The nominative is that to which we attribute the action of the verb, and is generally ranged in the first place; it may be either a noun or pronoun, as, *Francísco escréve,* Francis writes; *éu fállo,* I speak.

2. When the action of the verb is attributed to many persons or things, these all belong to the nominative, and are ranged in the first place, together with their conjunction; as, *Pédro e Páulo lém,* Peter and Paul read.

3. The adjectives belonging to the nominative substantive, to which the action of the verb is attributed, are put after the substantive, and before the verb; as, *os estudántes morigerádos e diligéntes estúdaõ,* the obedient and diligent scholars do study.

4. If the nominative has an article, this article always takes the first place.

5. Sometimes an infinitive is put for a noun, and stands for a nominative; as *o dormír faz bem,* sleeping does one good: and sometimes a verb with its case; as, *he ácto de humanidáde ter compaixáõ dos afflíctos,* to have compassion on the afflicted is an act of humanity.

6. The nominative is sometimes understood; as, *ámo,* where you understand *éu;* and so of the other persons of the verb.

7. After the nominative you put the verb; and if there is an adverb, it is to be placed immediately after the verb, whose accident and circumstances it explains; as, *Pêdro áma por extrêmo a gloria,* Peter is extremely fond of glory.

8. The cases governed by the verb are put after it; they may be one, or many, according to the nature of the action; as, *éu ámo a Pédro,* I love Peter. *Fáço presênte de hum lívro a Páulo,* I make a present of a book to Paul.

9. The preposition is always put before the case it governs; as, *pérto de casa*, near the house.

10. The relative is always placed after the antecedent; as, *Pédro o qual estúda*, Peter who studies.

II. *Of Concordance.*

1. The adjectives agree with their substantives in gender, number, and case; as, *hómem virtuôso*, a virtuous man; *bélla molhér*, a handsome woman; *sumptuósos palácios*, &c. sumptuous palaces, &c.

2. When two or more substantives singular come together, the adjective belonging to them must be put in the plural; as, *tânto el rêy cômo a raínha montádos a cavállo parécem bem*, both the king and the queen look well when they ride.

3. If the substantives happen to be one in the singular and the other in the plural, or to be of different genders, the adjective common to both agrees in number and gender with the last; as, *êlle tínha os ólhos e a bôca abérta*, or *êlle tínha a bôca e os ólhos abértos*, his eyes and mouth were opened. *As lagôas e ríos estávaõ congeládos*, the ponds and rivers were frozen.

4. But when there is one or many words between the last noun and the adjective, that adjective (common to all) agrees with the noun masculine, though the last noun be feminine; and if the nouns are in the singular, then the adjective common shall be put in the plural number and masculine gender; as, *o río e a lagôa estávaõ cogeládos*; the pond and river were frozen. *O trabálho, a indústria, e a fortúna unídos*; pains, industry, and fortune joined together.

5. Every verb personal agrees with its nominative, expressed or understood, both in number and person.

6. The relative *qual* with the article agrees entirely with the antecedent; but without the article

and denoting an absolute quality, it agrees with what follows; as, *aquêlle coraçaõ o qual*, &c. that heart which, *&c.* *Considerândo quáes seríaõ as condiçôens*, &c. considering which would be the conditions, *&c.*

7. The question and answer always agree in every thing; as, *a que senhôra pertênce vm^ce? êlle respondêo, pertênço á raínha:* To what lady do you belong, sir? and he answered, I belong to the queen.

III. *Of the Dependence of the Parts of Speech on one another.*

1. The nominative being the basis of the sentence, the verb depends on it, as the other cases depend on the verb. The adjective depends on the substantive that supports it; and the adverb on the verb whose accidents it explains.

2. The genitive depends on a substantive, expressed or understood, by which it is governed.

3. The accusative depends either on a verb active, or on a preposition.

4. The ablative depends on a preposition by which it is governed; as, *párto de Rôma*, I go from Rome.

5. The dative and vocative have, strictly speaking, no dependence on the other parts: the dative is common, as it were, to all nouns and verbs; the vocative only points out the person to whom you speak.

I now come to the Construction of the several parts of speech.

CHAP. II.

Of the Syntax of Articles.

BEFORE we come to the syntax of the articles, remember that *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns, but not when joined to the verbs.

Those who understand Latin will quickly perceive the difference, if they take notice that every time they render *o*, *a*, by *illum*, *illam*, *illud*; or by *eum*, *eam*, *id*; and *os*, *as*, by *illos*, *illas*, *illa*; or by *eos*, *eas*, *ea*; they are relative pronouns.

1. The article is used before the names of the species or things which can be spoken of; therefore nouns of substances, arts, sciences, plays, metals, virtues, and vices, having no article before them in English, require the article in Portuguese; as,

O óuro e a práta naõ pódem fazér felíz ao hómem, gold and silver cannot make the happiness of man.

A virtúde naõ hé compatível com o vício, virtue cannot agree with vice.

A philosophía he húma sciência múito nóbre, philosophy is a very noble science.

Joguêmos as cârtas, let us play at cards.

2. The article is not placed before a substantive which is followed by the adjective of number that stands for a surname, or meet with a proper or Christian name; as, *Joseph Primeíro*, Joseph the First.

3. When a book or some part of it, as chapter, page, &c. is quoted, the adjective of number may come either before or after the substantive; but if it comes after, the two words are construed without article; as, *lívro primeíro*, *capítulo segúndo*, &c. book i. chapter ii. If the adjective of number

comes before the substantive, it takes the article; as, *o primeiro lívro*, the first book.

4. *O* placed before *que* signifies *what* or *which*; as, *fáça o que quisér*, let him do what he likes; *o que êu fiz*, which I did.

5. The article is never made use of before proper names of men, women, gods, goddesses, saints.

6. The article is not used in Portuguese before the pronouns possessive relative; as, *de quem he ésta cása? he mínha, hé túa, &c.* whose house is this? it is mine, it is thine, &c.

7. When a mount's, mountain's or hill's name, is preceded by the word *monte*, it takes neither article or preposition; as, *o Mônte Atlánte*, Mount Atlas; *os Mòntes Pirenêos*, the Pirenean Mountains; but after the word *sérra*, a ridge of hills, it takes the article; as, *a Sérra da Estrêlla*, Mount-Strella; *Sérra do Potósi*, Mount Potosi; however, they say, also, *Sérra Lióa.*

8. The noun of the measure, weight, and the number of the things that have been bought, requires the articles; as, *o trígo vénde-se a tánto o alqueire*, what is sold so much a peck, three quarts and one pint.

A manteíga vênde-se a tánto o arrátel, butter cost so much a pound.

Os óvos vêndem-se a tânto a dúzia, eggs are sold so much a dozen.

9. No article is used with proper names of persons and planets, except *a térra*, the earth; *a sól*, the sun; *a lúa*, the moon.

10. When proper names are used in a determinate sense, that is, when they are applied to particular objects, then they take the article; *o Déos dos Christáõs*, the God of Christians; *o Archimédes de Inglatérra*, the Archimedes of England. The proper names of renowned poets and painters keep also the article; as, *o Camões*, *o Pópe*, *o Tásso*, *o Ticiáno*, &c.

11. The indefinite article *de* is used before nouns following one of this, *sórte, espécie, génere*, and any other noun of which they express the *kind, character, quality*, and *nature:* which sort of nouns are usually Englished by an adjective, or even by the substantive itself placed adjectively, and making together, as it were, but a word compound; as, *Dor de cabêça*, the head ach; *húma sórte de fruto*, a sort of fruit; *fallár de tôlo*, a foolish speech.

Sometimes the English adjective may be made by an adjective too in Portuguese, as in the last example *húm fallár tôlo*, a foolish speech; but sometimes too the Portuguese express the English adjective by a substantive of the same signification with *de* before the other noun, though they have an adjective of the same nature as the English adjective; as, *o diábo de mínha molhér*, my devilish wife; and sometimes the adjective is used by them substantively, or the substantive is understood; as, *o velháco de meu fílho*, my rascally son; *a velháca de súa mãy*, his *or* her rascally mother. Finally they also make use of the definite article; as, *o diábo do hómem*, or *da molhér*, the devilish man *or* woman; *a póbre da molhér*, the poor woman, &c.

12. Nouns are used without article in the following cases:

1st. At the title of a performance, and in the middle of sentences, where they characterise in a particular manner the person or thing spoken of, in which case the English use especially the particle *a*; as,

Discúrso sôbre as obrigacôens da religiaõ natural, a discourse concerning the obligations of natural religion.

Priméira párte, the first part.

O Conde de Clermont, príncipe do Sángue, morrêo, &c. the count of Clermont, a prince of the blood, died, *&c.*

O S.to Antonio, náo de novênta péças, the St. Anthony; a ninety gun ship.

2dly. In sentences of exclamation; as,

As máis béllas flôres sáõ as que mênos dúraõ; qualquér chúva as desmáia, o vênto as múrcha, o sól as queíma, e acába de secár; sem fallár núma infinidáde de inséctos que as perséguem e deítaõ a perdêr; naturál e verdadeíra imágem da belléza das senhôras! the handsomest flowers last but a very short time; the least rain tarnishes them, the wind withers them, the sun scorches them, and completes the drying of them; without mentioning an infinite number of insects that spoil and hurt them: a natural and true image of the ladies beauty!

3dly. When they meet with a noun of number in an indefinite sense; as, *mil soldádos de cavállo côntra cem infántes*, a thousand horse against an hundred foot.

Ténho lído dôus poétas, I have read two poets, that is, any pair out of all that ever existed.

But before a noun of number, in a definite sense, it would take the article; as,

Ténho lído os dôus poétas, I have read both poets; because this plainly indicates a definite pair, of whom some mention has been made already.

Os cem infántes que combatêraõ contra os mil de cavállo, que, &c. the hundred foot that fought with the thousand horse, that, &c.

4thly. After the verb *sér*, when it signifies *to become*, and after *sér tomádo por*, to be accounted; *passár por*, to pass for; as, *élle será doutôr com o têmpo*, he will become a doctor in time; *élle pássa por marinheíro*, he passes for a sailor.

When the adjective is used substantively, then it must have the neuter Portuguese article *o* before it;

O vêrde offênde mênos a vísta que o vermélho, green hurts the eye less than red.

There are also some adverbs preceded by the neu-

tral article *o;* as the following, *o melhôr que éu pudér*, the best I will be able; *o mênos que fôr possível*, the less it will be possible.

Articles are repeated in Portuguese before as many nouns (requiring the article) as there are in the sentence; as,

O ôuro, a práta, a saúde, as hônras, e os deleítes nãõ pódem fazêr felíz ao hómem que nãõ tem sciência nem virtúde, gold, silver, health, honours, and pleasures, cannot make a man happy without wisdom and virtue.

The article *o* is put before the word *senhôr*, sir, or my lord; as,

O senhôr dúque, my lord duke; *o senhôr presidênte*, my lord the president; *os senhôres*, the gentlemen; *dos senhôres*, of the gentlemen.

You must observe the same rule for the feminine article *a*, which is to be prefixed to *senhôra*, my lady, *or* madam; as, *a senhôra duquêza*, or *condêssa de, &c.* my lady duchess, *or* countess of, &c.

The article is never used in Portuguese as it is in English, before *máis* more, or *mênos* less, in the following sentences, *quânto máis vivêmos, tânto máis aprendêmos*, the longer we live, the more we learn; *quânto máis hum hydrópico bébe, máis sêde tem*, the more an hydropick drinks, the more thirsty he is; *quânto máis hum hómem he póbre, quânto mênos cuidádos tem*, the poorer people are, the less care they have, &c.

Sometimes the English particle *to*, before infinitives, is rendered in Portuguese by the article *o*; as, *he fácil o dizêr, o vêr, &c.* it is easy to say, to see, &c.

In a word, *the natural associators with articles* are those *common appellatives*, which denote the several genera and species of beings, or those words which, though indefinite, are yet capable, through the article, of becoming definite. Therefore *Apollonius*

makes it part of the pronoun's definition, to refuse coalescence with the article; and it would be absurd to say *o eu*, the I; or *o tu*, the thou; because nothing can make those pronouns more definite than they are.

N. B. When the adjective *hum, húma*, is used as an article in Portuguese, it respects our primary perception, and denotes individuals as unknown; but the articles, *o, a*, respect our secondary perception, and denote individuals as known. To explain by an example: I see an object pass by which I never saw till then; what do I say? *Alí vái hum póbre com húma bárba comprída*, there goes a beggar with a long beard. The man departs and returns a week after; What do I say then? *Alí vái o póbre da bárba comprída*, there goes the beggar with the long beard.

CHAP. III.

Of the Syntax of Nouns; and first, of the Substantives.

WHEN two or more substantives come together without a comma between them, they all govern each the next in the genitive, the first governing the second, the second the third in the same case, and so on; (that is, the first is always followed by the preposition *de*, or by the article before the next noun) but that genitive can never come in Portuguese before the nouns that governs it, as in English:

A philosophía de Newton, Newton's philosophy.
As guárdas do príncipe, the prince's guards.
A pórta da cása, the house-gate.

Eís aquí a cása do compânheiro do irmáõ de mînha molhér, here is my wife's brother's partner's house.

When two substantives singular are the nominative of a verb, this must be put in the plural; as, *mêu irmáõ e mêu pái estáõ no cámpo*, my brother and my father are in the country.

If the nominative is a collective name, the verb is always put in the singular; as, *tôda a cidáde assistío*, all the city was present.

Of the Syntax of Adjectives.

Of adjectives, some are put before the noun, and some after; and others may be put indifferently, either before or after.

The pronouns adjective possessive, *mêu, têu, séu, &c.* and adjectives of number, come before the substantive as in English. Ex. *Mêu pái*, my father; *a súa cása*, his house; *dúas peçôas*, two people; *o priméiro hómem*, the first man.

But when the adjective of number stands for a surname, or meets with a proper or Christian name, it comes after the substantive, without the article; as, *Joáõ* V. John the fifth.

These following Adjectives come after the Substantive.

1st. Verbal adjectives and participles; as, *hum hómem divertído*, a comical, a merry man; *húma molhér estimáda*, a woman esteemed.

2dly. Adjectives of names of nations; as, *hum mathemático Ingléz*, an English mathematician; *hum alfaiáte Francéz*, a French taylor; *música Italiána*, Italian music.

3dly. Adjectives of colour; as, *hum vestído négro*, a black suit of clothes; *hum capóte verméIho*, a red cloak, &c.

4thly. Adjectives of figure; as, *húma mésa redônda*, a round table; *hum câmpo triangulár*, a triangular field, &c.

5thly. Adjectives expressing some physical or natural quality; such are *quênte*, hot; *frío*, cold; *húmido*, wet; *corcovádo*, hunch-backed, &c.

Most other adjectives are placed before or after the substantive; as, *sánto*, holy; *verdadeíro*, true, &c.

If the substantive has three or more adjectives belonging to it, they must absolutely be put after it with the enclitic *e* before the last, which must likewise be observed, even when there be but two adjectives; for the Portuguese don't say, *húma desagradável enfadônha óbra*, &c. but *húma óbra desagradável e enfadônha*, &c. a disagreeable, tedious work.

Of adjectives, some always require after them either a noun or verb, which they govern; as, *dígno de louvôr*, praise-worthy; *dígno de sêr amádo*, worthy to be loved; *capáz de ensinár*, capable to teach; and these have always the particle *de* after them.

Some will be used absolutely without being ever attended by any noun or verb; as, *prudênte*, wise; *incurável*, incurable, &c.

Others may be construed both with and without a noun, which they govern; *élla he húma molhér insensível*, she is a woman without any sensibility; *élla he insensível ao amôr*, she is insensible and a stranger to the passion of love.

The following adjectives, which require the preposition *de* before the next infinitive, govern the genitive case. Observe, that some of them require in English the preposition *at* or *with* before the next noun.

Dígno, worthy: as, *êlle he dígno de louvôr*, he is worthy of praise. This adjective is sometimes followed by *que*; as, *dígna que sêu nóme fósse, &c.* her name deserved to be, &c.

Indígno, unworthy; as, *indígno da estimaçáõ què fáço dêlle*, unworthy of the esteem which I have for him.

Capáz, capable; *incapáz*, incapable; as, *capáz*, ou *incapáz de servír a própria pátria*, capable *or* incapable to serve one's country.

Notádo, charged; as, *notádo de avaréza*, charged with avarice.

Contênte, glad; as *estôu contênte do succésso que êlle têve*, I am glad *or* overjoyed at his success.

Cançádo, tired; as, *cançádo de estudár*, tired of studying.

Dezejôso, greedy; as, *dezejôso de glória*, greedy of glory, &c. as likewise adjectives signifying fullness, emptiness, plenty, want, desire, knowledge, remembrance, ignorance, or forgetting.

All adjectives signifying inclination, advantage and disadvantage, profit or disprofit, pleasure or displeasure, due, submission, resistance, likeness, govern the dative case; as, *insensível ás affrôntas*, insensible of affronts; *ser inclinádo a algúma côusa*, to be inclined to something; *nocívo á saúde*, hurtful to health.

These adjectives signifying dimensions, as, *álto*, high, tall; *lárgo*, wide, broad; and *comprído*, long, come after the words of the measure of magnitude, both in English and Portuguese; but they are preceded by *de* in Portuguese; as, *dés pés de lárgo*, ten feet broad; *séis pés de comprído*, six feet long, &c. they also turn the adjective of the dimension into its substantive, with the word of the measure before: but the word of the dimension is always preceded by *de*; as, *séis pés de altúra*, six feet high; *déz pés de largúra*, ten feet broad.

The adjectives signifying experience, knowledge, or science, require *em*, or *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*, after them; as, *versádo nos lívros*, versed in books; *expérto na medicína*, expert in medicine.

The cardinal nouns require the genitive case after them; as, *hum dos dôus*, one of the two.

The ordinal nouns, as well as the collective and proportional, likewise require the genitive after them; as, *o primeíro dos rêys*, the first of the kings, *húma dúzia de óvos*, a dozen of eggs, &c.

Of the Syntax of the Comparatives and Superlatives.

The comparative is not made of the positive in Portuguese, as in Latin and English, but by adding *máis* more, or *ménos* less, which govern *que*, signifying *than*; as, *o tódo hé mayór que a párte*, the whole is greater than the part; *o sêu amánte he máis béllo, máis môço, e máis ríco que élla*, her lover is handsomer, younger, and richer than she is; *éu ácho-o agóra ménos béllo do que quándo o compréi*, I now find it less handsome than when I brought it.

The simple comparatives *máis*, and *mênos*, meeting with a noun of number, are attended by *de*; as, *aínda que êlle tivésse máis de cem hómens*, though he has above an hundred men; *êlle tem máis de vínte ánnos*, he is above twenty.

When the comparison is made by *so as, as much as*, they must be rendered by *cómo*.

Example.

O mêu lívro he táõ béllo cômo o vósso, my book is as handsome as yours; *hum príncipe naõ he taõ poderóso cômo hum rêy*, a prince is not so powerful as a king.

They put sometimes *muíto* and *póuco* before the simple comparatives *máis* and *mênos*; as, *êlle hé muíto máis grânde*, he is taller by much; *êlle hé pôuco máis grânde*, he is taller by little, &c.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Syntax of Pronouns.

WE have sufficiently explained the pronouns in the first part; and to avoid any further repetition, I shall only observe, that,

1st. The English make use of the verb *to be*, put impersonally through all its tenses in the third person, before the pronouns personal, *I, thou, he, she, we, you, they*; it is I; it is he, &c. In Portuguese the verb *to be*, on this occasion, is not impersonal; and they express, it is I, by *sôu éu*; it is thou, *és tu*; it is he, *he élle*; it is we, *sômos nós*; it is ye, *sóis vós*, it is she, *he élla*; it is they, masc. *sáõ élles*; it is they, fem. *sáõ éllas*; and in like manner through all the tenses; as, it was I, *éra eu*; it was we, *éramos nós*, &c.

2dly. The Portuguese seldom make use of the second person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends, or speaking to God, or a father and mother to their children, or to servants; thus, you are in the right of it, is expressed by *vm*^{ce} *tem razáõ*, instead of *téndes razáõ*; *cômo está vm*^{ce}*?* how do you do? In the plural they say *vm*^{ces}.

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *vm*^{ce} *V. S. V. E.* &c. it does not agree in gender with *vm*^{ce} *V. S.* &c. but with the person we speak to or we speak of, therefore they speak to a lady or woman thus; *vm*^{ce} *he muíto bélla*, you are very beautiful; and to a man they say, *vm*^{ce} *he múito bôm*, you are very good.

3dly. *Nós* is generally used by the king, a governor, or a bishop, in their writings, and then it signifies in English *we*; as, *nós mandâmos*, or *mandámos*, we command; but *nos* before or after a verb in Por-

tuguese signifies *us* in English; as, *élle nos disse*, he told us; *dái-nos témpo*, give us time.

4thly. *Vós* is also applied to a single person, but only speaking to inferiors, or between familiar friends, to avoid the word thou, *tu*, which would be too gross and unmannerly.

5thly. The pronouns conjunctive are joined to verbs, and stand for the dative and accusative cases, as, *déu me*, he gave me; *áma-me*, love me; but the pronouns personal are used instead of them when they are preceded by a preposition, and not immediately followed by a verb; *élle fallóu cóntra mim*, he spoke against me.

6thly. When *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, are joined to the present infinitive mood, they change the last *r* of it into *lo*, *la*, *&c.* thus; *para áma-lo*, to love him; *para vêla*, or, *vê las*, to see her, *or* them, &c. and when they are joined to the preterperfect indicative of the verb *fazér*, and some others that have that tense ending in *iz*, they change the last *z* of them into *lo*, *la*, *&c.* as *fi-lo*, I did it; *élle fé-lo*, he did, *or* made it, &c. but when they are joined to the future indicative of any verb with the auxiliary verb *havêr*, then they change the terminations *réi*, *rás*, &c. of the futures into *lo*, *la*, *&c.* as *fá-lo-hei*, I'll do it; *ama-lo-hei*, I'll love him, &c.

Remarks on the Pronouns.

1st. *Him*, or *it*, which follow the verb in English, must be expressed in Portuguese, as in the following examples:

When *him* or *it* in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it must be expressed in Portuguese by *o* before or after the verb. Exam. I call him *or* it, *éu o chámo*, or *éu chámo-o*.

When *him* or *it* in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or

lo after it, making an elision of the last consonant of the verb. Exam. Thou callest him *or* it, *tu o châmas*, or *tu châma lo.*

When *him* or *it* is joined with the third person singular of a verb, it may be expressed by *o* before or after the verb. Ex. He calls him *or* it, *élle o châma*, or *élle châma-o.*

When *him* or *it* is with a verb in the first person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision as in the second case. Ex. We call him *or* it, *nós o chamâmos*, or *nós chamâmo-lo.*

When *him* or *it* is after a verb in the second person plural, it is expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision, &c. Ex. You call him *or* it, *vos o chamáis*, or *vos chamái-lo.*

When *him* or *it* follows the verb in the third person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *no* after it. Examp. They call him *or* it, *élles o châmaõ*, or *élles châmaõ-no.*

2dly. *Her* or *it* after a verb in English is expressed in Portuguese by *a*, according to the rules just now proposed.

3dly. *Them* after a verb is expressed in Portuguese by *os* for the masculine, and by *as* for the feminine, according to the gender and the rules proposed.

4thly. The words *o, a, os, as,* must always be put after the gerunds, but not before the infinitives. Examp. Seeing him, we must not say, *o vendo*, but *vêndo-o*, because *vêndo* is a gerund. To see him, instead of saying *para vér-o*, you must say *para o-vêr*, is in the infinitive.

5thly. The words *lo, la, los, las,* must always be put after the verbs. Examp. To see him, you must say, *para vê-lo*, or *para o vêr*, and not *para lo vêr.* The same words must follow also the adverb *eí;*

and so you must say, *eí-lo aquí*, here he is; *eí-lo alí*, there he is; *eí-los aquí*, here they are; *eí-la alí*, there she is; *eí-las alí*, there they are. They follow likewise the persons of the verbs; *êu fi-lo; tu fizéste-lo; êlle fê-lo; nos fizémo-lo*, &c. I made it, &c.

Note, that I have been speaking of the words *o, a, os, as, lo, la, los, las*, and not of the articles *o, a, os, as;* because when those words precede, and sometimes when they follow the verbs, they are not articles, but pronouns relative. They are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns.

CHAP. V.

Of the Syntax of Verbs.

THE verbs through every tense and mood (except the infinitive) ought to be preceded by a nominative case, either expressed or understood, with which they must agree in number and person. The nominative is expressed when we say, *êu âmo, tu cântas;* understood when we say, *cânto, dígo*, &c.

The Portuguese, as well as English, use the second person plural, though they address themselves but to a single person.

Example.

Méu amígo, vós náõ têndes razáõ, my friend, you are in the wrong.

And if we would speak in the third person, we must say, *vem^{ce} tem razáõ*, sir, you are in the right.

The verb active governs the accusative; as, *âmo a virtúde*, I love virtue.

The verb passive requires an ablative after it; as *os dôutos sáõ envejádos péllos ignorántes*, the learned are envied by the ignorant.

You must observe, that there is in Portuguese another way of making the passive, by adding the relative *se* to the third person singular or plural; as *áma se Déos*, God is loved.

When there are two nominatives singular before a verb, it must be put in the plural number.

When a noun is collective, the verb requires the singular, not the plural; as, *a génte está olhándo*, the people are looking.

Syntax of the auxiliary Verbs.

The verb *tér* is made use of to conjugate all the compound tenses of verbs; as, *ténho amádo, tínha amádo*, I have loved, I had loved.

Tér signifies also to possess, to obtain; as *tenho dinheíro*, I have money; *tem muíta capacidáde*, he has a great deal of capacity.

Havér, in account books and trade, expresses credit or discharge.

Havér is also taken impersonally in Portuguese, and it signifies in English *there be*; as *ha muíto ôuro no México*, there is a great quantity of gold in Mexico.

Havér-se, made reciprocal, is the same as *to behave, to act*; as *hôuve-se o governadôr com tal prudência que, &c.* the governor behaved with such wisdom, that, &c.

We have already observed the difference betwixt *sêr* and *estár*.

The verb *estár* is also used to conjugate the other verbs, chiefly expressing action; as *estôu lêndo, estôu escrevêndo*, I am reading, I am writing.

Estár, with the preposition *em*, in, or with *no, na, nos, nas*, signifies *to be present in a place*; as, *estôu no cámpo*, I am in the country.

Estár, with the preposition *para* denotes the inclination of doing what the following verb expresses, but without a full determination; as, *estôu para ir me para Lôndres*, I have a mind to go and live in London.

Estár, with the preposition *por*, and the infinitive of the verb following, means, that the thing expressed by the verb is not yet done; as, *ísto está por escrevêr*, this is not yet written; *ísto está por alimpár*, this is not yet cleaned; *estár por alguêm* signifies to agree with one, or to be of his opinion.

N. B. See in the Third Part the different significations of the verbs *estár* and *havêr*.

When *sér* signifies the possessive of one thing, it governs the genitive; as, *a rúa hé d' el-réy*, the street belongs to the king; *ésta cása hé de mêu páy*, this house belongs to my father.

Em ser is taken for a thing to be whole or entire, without any alteration or mutilation; as, *as fazêndas estáõ em sér*, the goods are not sold.

Of the Syntax of Verbs active, passive, &c.

When two verbs come together, with or without any nominative case, then the latter must be in the infinitive mood; as, *quer vm^ce aprendêr a fallár Inglêz?* will you learn to speak English?

All verbs active govern the accusative; but if they are followed by a proper name of God, man, or woman, or any noun expressing their qualities or title, then it governs the dative case; as, *conhêço a sêu páy*, I know his father; *Acháraõ a Joaõ no camínho*, they found John in the road.

All verbs of gesture, moving, going, resting, or doing, as also the verbs that have the word that goes before, and the word that comes after, both belonging to one thing, require the nominative after them; as, *Pêdro vâi errádo*, Peter goes on wrong;

o póbre dórme descançádo, the poor sleeps without care. Also the verb of the infinitive mood has the same case, when verbs of wishing and the like come after them; as, *tôdos dezéjaõ ser rícos*, every body wishes to be rich; *ántes quiséra ser dôuto que parecêlo*, I had rather be learned than be accounted so.

After verbs the Portuguese express *yes* and *no* by *que sim* and *que náõ*, Example, *créyo que sim*, I believe yes; *créyo que náõ*, I believe not; *dígo que sim*, I say yes; *cuído que náõ*, I think not; *apósto que sim*, I lay yes; *queréis apostár que náõ?* have you a mind to lay not?

Verbs signifying *grief*, *compassion*, *want*, *remembrance*, *forgetting*, &c. will have the genitive; as, *pêsame muíto da mórte de sêu irmáõ*, I am very sorry for the death of your brother; *élle mórre de fóme*, he perishes by hunger; *lêmbre-se do que me dísse*, remember what you said to me; *compadeçí-me das súas disgráças*, I pitied him for his misfortunes; *esquecí-me de túdo ísto*, all this I forgot.

The reciprocals of jeering, boasting, and distrusting, govern also the genitive; as, *jactár-se*, *gloriár-se*, *picár-se*, *envergonhár-se*, &c.

All the verbs active govern the dative only when the substantive represents a person; as, *êu conhêço a vm*[ce], &c. I know you, &c.

The following verbs belong to this rule of the dative:

Jogár, to play; as, *jogár cártas*, to play at cards; *jogár aos céntos*, to play at picquet; *jogár ao xadrêz*, to play at chess, &c.

Obedecêr, *desobedecêr*, *agradár*, *comprazêr*; as, *êu obedêço a Dêos e el-réy*, I obey God and the king; *comprazêo em túdo aos soldádos*, in all he pleased the soldiers.

Mandár, when it signifies to command an army, company, &c. requires the accusative, but, when other things, the dative; as *élle mandáva a cavallaría*, he commanded the horse; *o governadôr man-*

dôu a tôdos os moradôres que se retirássem para súas cásas, the governor ordered all the inhabitants to retire into their houses.

Ir, to go; as, *vôu a París*, I go to Paris.

Assistír, ajudár, socorrêr, to help; as, *assístír ao offício divíno*, to assist at divine service.

Saudár, to salute or greet; as, *êlle sáuda a tôdos*, he salutes every body.

Fallár, to speak; *satizfazêr*, to satisfy; *servír*, to serve; *favorecêr*, to favour; *ameaçár*, to threaten.

The verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying, pardoning, will have the person in the dative case.

The impersonals *acontecêr, succedêr, importár, pertencêr*, and the like to these, will have often two datives, of person; as, *a mim me succedêo*, it happened to me; *a êlle lhe convêm*, it suits him, *or* it is convenient for him; *a êlle náõ lhe impórta*, it does not concern him, &c.

All the active verbs require an accusative; and the Latin verbs which govern the accusative of the things, and the dative of the person, govern generally the same in Portuguese; as, *escrevéi o que dígo a vósso irmáõ*, write to your brother what I do say.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying, will have an accusative of the doer or sufferer, and sometimes verbs neuter will have an accusative of the thing; as, *gozár saúde*, to enjoy health; *péço êste favôr*, I ask this favour; *êlle tóca muito bem fláuta*, he plays very well on the flute; *curár húma doênça*, to cure a sickness.

Verbs passive, and the greatest part of the reciprocals require the ablative, with *de, do, da, dos, das, por*, or *pêllo, pêlla, pêllos, pêllas*; as, *fuí chamádo por el rêy*, I was called by the king; *retiréi-me da cidáde*, I retired from the city; *êlle fôi amádo do pôvo*, he was loved by the people. But you must except *acostár se*, which requires a dative preceded by *a*; *encostár-se*, which sometimes will have a da-

tive, and sometimes an ablative preceded by *em*, *no*, *na*, *nos*, or *nas*; *metêr-se*, which requires an ablative; *sentár-se*, *introduzír-se*, &c. which must have the ablative with the preposition *em*, *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*.

The verbs joined with a noun which they govern, must have the infinitive with *de*; as *ténho vontáde de rír*, I am near laughing.

The price of any thing bought or sold, or bartered, will have the accusative with *por*.

The verb *pôr se*, when it signifies *to begin*, must have the infinitive, with the particle *a*; as, *pôr-se a chorár*, to begin to cry.

Verbs of plenty, filling, emptying, loading, unloading, will have the ablative; as, *ésta térra abúnda de trígo*; this country abounds with corn; *élle está carregádo de misérias*, he is loaded with calamities.

Verbs denoting custom, help, beginning, exhortation, invitation, require the infinitive with the particle *a*; as, *ajudár a semeár*, to help sowing; *convidôu me a ceár*, he invited me to supper.

Verbs that signify distance, receiving, or taking away, will have the ablative; as, *a Madéira dísta de Marrócos 320 mílhas*, Madeira lies 320 miles from Morocco.

Note, that the verbs signifying receiving, or taking away, generally require the ablative of the person; but they sometimes require an accusative: particularly the verb *recebêr*, when it signifies *to welcome*, or *to entertain*: as, *élle recébe tôdos com muíto agrádo*, he gives his company a hearty reception, he makes them very welcome.

Verbs denoting obligation, govern the following infinitive with the preposition *a*; as, *éu o obrigaréi a fazêr ísto*, I will oblige him to do it.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. will have the ablative with *com*; as, *pelejôu máis de húma hôra com sêu irmáõ*, he quarrelled more than one hour with his brother.

After the verb substantive *sér*, to be, *para* is made use of as well as *a:* the first is employed to denote the use or destination of any thing; as, *ésta pênna he para escrevêr*, this pen is to write with. But the particle *a* is used to denote only the action; as, *elle fôi o primeíro a fugír*, he was the first to run away.

The verbs of motion to a place always govern the dative; as, *vôu á comédia*, I go to the play. Though the verb *voltár*, to return, may also have an accusative, with the preposition *para*. But the verbs of motion from a place govern the ablative with *de, do, da, dos, das;* as, *vénho do cámpo*, I come from the country. If the motion is through a place, then the verbs govern the accusative, with *por;* as, *passaréi por Lôndres*, I will come by the way of London.

Of the Use and Construction of the Tenses.

Though we have spoken at large upon the tenses in the First Part, you must, however, take notice.

1. That they make use of the infinitive and the auxiliary verb *havêr*, together with the pronouns *lo, la, los, las*, instead of the future indicative; as, *ouvir-lo-hei*, I will hear him; and then the *r* of the infinitive is changed into *lo, la, los, las;* and sometimes they make use of the infinitive mood and the auxiliary verb *havêr*, with the pronouns conjunctive *me, te, se*, &c. instead of the same future; as, *dar-lhe-hei*, I will give him; *agastar-se-há*, he will be angry.

2. That when we find the particle *if*, which in Portuguese is expressed by *se*, before the imperfect indicative, we must generally use the imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese; example, *se éu tivésse*, if I had; *se éu pudésse*, if I could. But sometimes they use the imperfect indicative; as, *disse-lhe que se quería*, &c.; he told him that if he was willing, *&c.*

3. That the first imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese is also used in a sense that denotes the present, especially in sentences of wishing; as, *quizéra que Domíngo fizésse bôm têmpo*, I wish it would be fine weather on Sunday. But if the same tense is preceded by *aínda que*, although, then it must be rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive, or by the imperfect indicative; as, *éu naõ a quizéra, aínda que tivésse milhôens de sêu*, though she was worth several millions, I would not have her; *aínda que êlle consentísse nísso, naõ se podía fazér*, although he would consent to it, that could not be done. Lastly, when the first imperfect subjunctive is preceded by *se*, it is sometimes rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive; as, *se êlle viésse*, if he should come.

The English are apt to put the first imperfect of the subjunctive where the Portuguese make use of the second; as, I had been in the wrong, *naõ tería tído razaõ;* and though they may say *naõ tivéra tído razaõ*, they may not say *naõ tivésse tído razaõ*, to express the English of, *I should have been in the wrong*, or *I had been in the wrong*.

Note, that to express in Portuguese, *though that should be*, we must say, *quándo ísso fôsse*, and not *sería*.

The Portuguese use the future tense subjunctive after the conjunction *if*, when they speak of a future action, but the English, the present indicative: example, to-morrow, if I have time, *amanhãa se tivér têmpo*, and not *se ténho;* if he comes, we shall see him, *nós o verêmos, se êlle viér*.

A conjunction between two verbs obliges the last to be of the same number, person, and tense as the first: example, the king wills and commands, *el réi quer e ordêna;* I see and I know, *éu véjo e conhéço*.

Sometimes the present is made use of, instead of the preter definite in narrations, as, *no mésmo têmpo que hía andándo, o encôntra, o déspe, e o áta a húma*

árvore, as he was going, he meets him, strips him, and ties him to a tree.

When the Portuguese use the infinitive with a third person in the plural, they add *em* to it, and it is generally preceded by *por*, for, and *para*, in order to, that, or to the end that; as *élles fôraõ enforcádos por furtárem*, they were hanged for robbing; *para sêrem enformádos*, that, to the end that they may be informed; *para podêrem dizêr*, that they may be able to say.

Observe, that when the Portuguese put *por*, before the first future subjunctive, they speak of a time past; as, *por fallárdes*, because you have spoken. But when they put *para* before it, then they speak of a time to come; as *para fallármos*, that, *or* to the end that we may speak, in order to speak.

Of Moods.

All the tenses of the indicative mood may be employed without any conjunction before them; but they admit also of some. Besides the conjunction *que*, those that may be made use of are *se*, *cómo*, and *quândo*; with some distinction in respect to *se* because this conjunction is seldom used before the future tense, and then it is governed by a verb signifying ignorance, doubt, or interrogation; as, *naõ sêi se haõ de vír*, I do not know if they shall come! *estôu em dúvida se os inimígos passaráõ o río*, I doubt if the enemies will pass the river; *naõ pergúnto se partirá*, I do not ask if he will set out.

The optative or subjunctive in Portuguese has always some sign annexed; as, *oxalá, prouvéra a Deos, ò se!* would to God, I pray God, God grant; &c.; *que, para, que*, &c. that, &c.

The particle *que* is not expressed in the present of this mood; but it is understood in sentences of wishing or praying; as, *Déos o fáça bom*, let God amend him.

When *que* is between two verbs, the last is not always put in the subjunctive, because, though some say *créyo que vénha*, I believe he comes; I think it is better to say *créyo que vem*; but when there is a negation, the verb following *que* must be put in the subjunctive; as, *naõ crêyo que vénha*, I do not believe he will come, *naõ crêyo que vénha taõ cêdo*, I do not believe he will come so soon.

When the verbs *crér*, to believe, *sabér*, to know, are used interrogatively, and followed by the particle *que*, the next verb is put in the indicative, when the person that asked the question makes no doubt of the thing which is the object in question; as, if knowing that peace is made, I want to know if the people whom I converse with know it too, I will express myself thus, *sabêis vós que está féita a paz?* do you know that peace is made? But if I have it only by a report, and doubt of it, and want to be informed of it, I must ask the question thus, *sabêis vós que a paz estéja féita?* and by no means *sabêis vós que está feita a paz?*

You must observe also, that the present subjunctive of *sabér* is elegantly used when it is attended by a negative, and the particle *que* in this phrase, *naõ que êu saíba*, not that I know of.

All the verbs used impersonally with the particle *que* require the subjunctive; as, *he precíso que élle vénha*, he must come; *convêm que ísto se fáça*, it is convenient that this be done. You must only except such sentences as express any positive assurance, or certainty; as, *he cérto que vem*, it is certain that he comes; *sei que está em cása*, I know he is at home.

From these observations it follows, that all the verbs not expressing a positive assurance, or believing, but only denoting *ignorance*, *doubt*, *fear*, *astonishment*, *admiration*, *wishing*, *praying*, *pretension*, or *desire*, govern the subjunctive mood after *que*; as, *duvído que póssa*, I doubt it is in his power; *têmo que môrra*, I am afraid he will die; *admíro-me*

que consínta nísso, I wonder he agrees to it, &c.; to all which they add *oxalá*, an Arabic word, signifying *God grant*, which is used in Portuguese before all the tenses of the optative or conjunctive, as well as *práza a Déos*, may it please God; or, *prouvéra a Déos*, might it please God.

When *que* is relative, and there is a verb in the imperative or in the indicative, with a negative or interrogation before it, it governs likewise the subjunctive; as *naõ ha côusa que maís me inquiéte*, there is nothing that disturbs me more; *ha cousa no múndo que me póssa dar tânto gôsto?* is there any thing in the world that may give me more pleasure? *allegái-lhe tântas razôens que o póssaõ persuadir*, give him so many reasons that he may be persuaded.

The present subjunctive is sometimes rendered into English by the second preterimperfect subjunctive, when it is followed by a verb in the future tense; as, *aínda que êu trabálhe, núnca héi de cançár*, though I should work, I never would be tired.

The Portuguese use specially the same present subjunctive for the future; as in these sentences, and others like:

Naõ duvído que vénha, I do not doubt but he will come.

Duvído que o fáça, I doubt that, *or* whether he will do it.

Therefore avoid carefully those faults which foreigners are so apt to make, in considering rather the tense which they want to turn into Portuguese, than the mood which the genius of the language requires.

The present indicative is also used for the future, as well as in English: example, *jantáis hôje em cása?* do you dine at home to-day?

Of the Particles governing the Optative or Subjunctive.

The conjunction *que*, that, generally requires the subjunctive after it; but *ántes que, primeíro que*, before that, always requires it.

Take notice, that *que* makes all the words to which it is joined become conjunctives, as, *pará que*, to the end that; *bem que, aínda que*, &c. *Pósto que*, although; *até que*, till; *quándo, cômo quérqué*, which commonly govern the substantive. But *com que assim* governs the indicative; as, *com que*, or *com que assím virá amanháã*, so he will come to-morrow.

In Portuguese you must take care how you express *though*, or *although*; if it is by *aínda que*, you may put either the subjunctive or indicative after it: example; *aínda que séja hómem honrádo*, though he is an honest man; *aínda que élle faz aquíllo*, though he does that. But if you render *although* or *though* by *naõ obstánte*, then you must use the infinitive; example, though he is an honest man; *naõ obstánte ser êlle hómem honrádo*; though he does this, *naõ obstante fazér élle ísto.*

The impersonal verbs generally govern the subjunctive with *que*; but with this distinction, when the impersonal is in the present tense or future, of the indicative mood, then it requires the present subjunctive mood; but when the impersonal, or any other verb taken impersonally, is in any of the preterites indicative, then it governs the imperfect, perfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, according to the meaning of speech; as, *impórta muíto que el-réy véja tudo*, it is of great moment that the king may see all; *foí conveniénte que o príncipe fôsse com élle*, it was convenient that the prince should go with him.

The present subjunctive is likewise construed, when the particle *por* is separated from *que*, by an adjective; as, *por grânde, por admirável, por dôuto que séja*, though he be great, admirable, learned.

An imperative often requires the future of the subjunctive; as *succéda o que succedêr*, or *séja o que fôr*, happen what shall happen, at all events.

The imperfect subjunctive is repeated in this phrase, and others like, *succedêsse, o que succedêsse*, let happen what would.

The future of the subjunctive mood follow generally these, *lógo que, quándo, se, cômo*, &c.; as, *lógo que chegár irêmos a passeár*, as soon as he comes, we will go and take a walk; *quándo viér, estarêmos prômptos*, when he comes we will be ready.

Observe, that *quándo* and *lógo que* may also be construed with the indicative mood; as, *quándo el rêy vé túdo, naõ o engânaõ*, when the king sees every thing, he is not deceived; *lógo que chegôu, falléi com êlle*, as soon as he came, I spoke with him.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

In Portuguese there is not a general sign before the infinitive, as in English the particle *to;* but there are several particles used before the infinitive, denoting the same as *to* does in English, and they are governed by the preceding verbs or nouns. These particles are the following: *a, para, de, com, em, por, até, despôis de;* and the article *o*, when the infinitive serves as a nominative to another verb; as, *o dizêr e o fazêr saõ dúas côusas*, saying and doing are two different things.

A coming between two verbs, notes the second as the object of the first; as, *a tardânça das nóssas esperânças nos ensína a mortificár os nóssos dezéjos*, the delay of our hopes teaches us to mortify our desires; *êlle comêça a discorrêr*, he begins to reason.

Para notes the intention or usefulness; as, *a adversidáde sérve para experimentár a paciência*, adversity serves to try one's patience. *Para* after an adjective denotes its object; as, *está prômpto para obedecêr*, he is ready to obey.

De is put between two verbs, if the first governs the genitive or ablative; and when the substantive or adjective governs either of these two cases, *de* must go before the following verbs, or infinitive; as, *vénho de vêr a mêu páy*, I have just seen my father; *he témpo de hír-se*, it is time to go away; *el-rêy foi servído de mandár*, the king has been pleased to order.

The infinitive is on several occasions governed by prepositions or conjunctions; as, *sem dizér palávra* without speaking a word; where you may observe it is expressed in English by the participle present; as *núnca se cânça de jugár*, he is never weary of playing; *divérte-se em caçár*, he delights in hunting; *élle está doênte por trabalhár demasiádamênte*, by working too much he is sick; *pérde o sêu témpo em passeár*, he loses his time in walking; *héi-de ir-me sem me despedír?* shall I go away without taking my leave?

The infinitive is also used passively; as, *naõ há que dizér, que vér*, &c.; there is nothing to be said, seen, &c.

The gerund of any verb active may be conjugated with the verb *estár*, to be, after the same manner as in English; as, *estóu escrevêndo*, I am writing; *élle estáva dormíndo*, he was asleep, &c.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Syntax of Participles and Gerunds.

THE participle in the Portuguese language generally ends in *do*, or *to*; as, *amádo, vísto, díto*, &c.

The active participles that follow the verb *ter*, to have, must end in *o*; as,

Tênho vísto el rêy, I have seen the king.

Ténho vísto a raínha, I have seen the queen.

Eu tínha amádo os lívros, I had loved books.

Eu tínha levádo as cártas, I had carried the letters.

We meet with authors who sometimes make the participles agree with the thing of which they are speaking; as, in *Camoens*, Canto 1, Stanza xxix.

E porque cômo vístes, tem passádos,
Na viágem taõ ásperos perígos,
Tántos clímas, e céos experimentádos, *&c.*

And Canto 2, Stan. lxxvi.

Saõ offerecimêntos verdadéiros,
E palávras sincéras, naõ dobrádas,
As que o rêy mánda a os nóbres cavaleíros,
Que tánto mar e térras tem passádas.

If it be a verb neuter, the participle ought always to terminate in *o:* example,

El rêy tem jantádo, the king has dined; *a raínha tem ceádo*, the queen has supped; *os vóssos amígos tem rído*, your friends have laughed; *mínhas irmããs tem dormído*, my sisters have slept.

When the active participle happens to precede an infinitive, it must be terminated in *o;* as *o juiz lhe tínha féito cortár a cabêça*, the judge has caused his head to be cut off.

The passive participles which are joined with the tenses of the verb *ser*, to be, agree with the substantive that precedes the verb *ser; o capitáõ fôi louvádo*, the captain was praised; *a virtúde he estimáda*, virtue is esteemed; *os preguiçósos saõ censurádos*, the lazy are blamed; *as vóssas jóyas fóraõ vendídas*, your jewels were sold.

The Portuguese generally suppress the gerunds *having* and *being* before the participles; as, *díto isto*, having said so; *acabádo o sermaõ*, the sermon being ended. This manner of speaking is called by grammarians ablatives absolute.

The participle of the present tense in Portuguese has singular and plural, but one termination serves for both genders; as *hum hómem teménte a Déos, a*

man fearing God; *húma molhér temênte a Déos*, a woman fearing God; *hómens temêntes a Déos*, people fearing God.

There are in Portuguese a great many participles which are used substantively; as, *ignoránte, amánte, ouvínte, estudánte*, &c.; an ignorant, a lover, an auditor or hearer, a scholar, *&c.*

It is better to place the nominative after the gerund than before; as *estándo el rêy na comédia*, the king being at the play.

CHAP. VII.

Of Prepositions.

A PREPOSITION is a part of speech, which is put before nouns, and sometimes before verbs, to explain some particular circumstance.

Prepositions may be divided into separable and inseparable. An inseparable preposition is never found but in compound words, and signifies nothing of itself. A separable preposition is generally separated from other words, and signifies something of itself.

The inseparable prepositions are,

Ab and *abs*; as *abrogár*, to abrogate; *abstêr-se*, to abstain.

Arce, or *archi*; as, *arcebíspo*, an archbishop; *archidúque*, an archduke.

Ad; as, *adventício*, adventitious.

Am; as, *ambíguo*, ambiguous; *ampáro*, protection, shelter.

Circum; as, *circumstáncia*, circumstance.

Co; as, *cohabitár*, to live together, to cohabit.

Des, serves to express the contrary of the word it is joined to; as, *desacêrto*, mistake; *desfazér*, to

undo; *desenganár*, to undeceive; are the contrary of *acérto, fazér*, and *enganár*.

Dis; as, *dispór*, to dispose; *distinguír*, to distinguish; *distribuír*, to distribute.

Ex; as, *extrahír*, to extract.

In, has commonly a negative or privative sense, denoting the contrary of the meaning of the word it precedes; as, *incapáz*, unable; *infelíz*, unhappy; *inacçaõ*, inaction, *&c.*; but sometimes it is affirmative, as in Latin.

Observe, that *in* before *r* is changed into *ir*; as, *irregulár*, irregular; *irracionál*, irrational: before *l*, into *il*; as *illegítimo*, illegitimate; before *m*, *in* is changed into *im*; as, *immateriál*, immaterial.

Ob; as, *obviár*, to obviate.

Pos; as, *pospór*, to postpose, *or* to postpone.

Pre; as, *precedér*, to go before; *predecessór*, an ancestor.

Pro; as, *propór*, to propose; *prometér*, to promise.

Re, is a borrowed particle from the Latins, which generally denotes iteration, or backward action; as, *reedificár*, to rebuild; *repercutír*, to repercute, *or* strike back.

So; as, *socorrér*, to help, to succour.

Sor; as, *sorrír*, to smile.

Sos; as, *sostér*, to support.

Sóto; as, *sotopór*, to put *or* lay under.

Sub; or *sob*; as, *subaltérno*, subaltern; *subscrevér*, to subscribe; *sobpêna, sobcolór, &c.*

The Arabic article *al*, which is common to all genders and both numbers, is found in the beginning of almost all the words that remain in the Portuguese language from the Arabic, and it is the surest way to distinguish them. But the Portuguese articles are added to the Arabic nouns, without taking off their article, *al*, as *a almofáda*, the cushion; *o Alcoraõ*, the Coran, *&c.*

The Greek preposition *ánti* enters into the composition of a great many Portuguese words, which cannot be set down here. It is enough to observe, that it signifies generally opposite; as in *Antípodas*, Antipodes; *antipápa*, antipope; and sometimes it signifies before; as in *antilóquio*, a preface, a speaking first; but in this last sense it is derived from the Latin preposition *ante*.

Of separable Prepositions.

It is absolutely impossible ever to attain to the knowledge of any language whatever, without thoroughly understanding the divers relations denoted by the prepositions, and the several cases of nouns which they govern; both which relations and cases being arbitrary, vary and differ much in all languages. This only instance will evince it: the English say, *to think of a thing*; the French, *to think to a thing*; the Germans and Dutch, *to think on*, or *upon a thing*; the Spaniards and Portuguese, *to think in a thing*, &c. Now it will avail an Englishman but little to know that *of* is expressed in Portuguese by *de*, if he does not know which relations *em* and *de* denote in that language; since the Portuguese say, to think *in* a thing, and not *of* a thing; therefore we will treat here of each of them, and of their construction separately.

1st. *A*, or rather *ao*, *as*, *aos*, (at, in, on, *&c.*) denote the place whither one is going; as,

Eu vôu a Lôndres, I gó to London.

Voltár a Portugál, to return, *or* go back to Portugal.

A, in this sense, is a preposition, but in the next observations, it is a particle.

2dly. *A* denotes time; as, *chegár a têmpo*, to arrive in time; *a tôdo o têmpo*, at all times.

3dly. *A* denotes the way of being, or of doing of people; as also their posture, gesture, or action; as

Estár á súa vontáde, to be at one's ease.

A diréita, on the right hand; *á esquérda*, on the left hand.

Vivér á súa vontáde, to live to one's mind, as one likes.

Andár a pé ou a cavállo, to go on foot, *or* on horseback.

Montár a cavállo, to ride on horseback.

Corrêr á rêdea sôlta, to ride full speed.

Trajár á Francêsa, to dress after the French way.

Vivér á Ingléza, to live after the English fashion.

Andár a grândes pássos, to walk at a great rate.

Andár a pássos lêntos, to walk very slowly.

4thly. *A* denotes the price of things; as, *a óito xelins*, at eight shillings. It denotes also the weight: but as the nouns signifying weight are generally used in the plural number, hence it is that they add *s* to *a*, when it is placed before nouns of the feminine gender, and *os* when it precedes nouns of the masculine gender: so they say, *ás ônças*, by the ounce; *aos arráteis*, by the pound, *&c.* *A* denotes also the measure; as, *medír a pálmos*, to span or measure by the hand extended.

When *a* is preceded by *daquí*, and followed by a noun of time, it denotes the space of time after which something is to be done: as, *el rey partirá daquí a tres días*, the king will set out three days hence.

5thly. *A* denotes the tools used in working, as likewise the games one plays at; as, *abrír ao buríl*, to grave; wherein you see they add *o* to *a*; *trabalhár á candéa*, to do any thing by candle-light; *á agúlha*, with the needle.

Andár á véla, to sail, or to be under sail.

Jogár a péla, to play at tennis.

Jogár as cártas, to play at cards; wherein you see they add *s* to *a* when the noun is of the feminine gender, and placed in the plural number.

Jogár aos céntos, to play at piquet; wherein you see they add *os* to *a* when it precedes nouns signifying games, when they are of the masculine gender and put in the plural number.

6thly. *A* signifies sometimes *as*. Examp. *Está ísto a séu gôsto?* Is this as you like it? And sometimes it signifies after; as, *a séu módo*, after his *or* her way. It signifies also *in;* as, *ao princípio*, in the beginning; but then they add *o* to it.

7thly. *A* is also put before the infinitives, preceded by another verb; as, *ensinár a cantár*, to teach to sing. It is also placed between two equal numbers, to denote order; as, *dóus a dóus*, two by two; *quátro a quátro*, four by four: and sometimes it is preceded by a participle or adjective, and followed by an infinitive mood.

8thly. *A* is a particle of composition, serving to many nouns, verbs, and adverbs, of which it often increases the meaning; as, *adinheirádo*, very rich, that has a great deal of money; but it generally expresses in verbs the action of the nouns they are composed of; as, *ajoelhár*, to kneel down, which is formed from *a* and *joélho*, knee; *abrandár*, to appease; *alargár*, to enlarge; from *brândo*, soft; *lárgo*, wide, &c.

9thly. *A*, when it is preceded by the verb *ser*, and fo owed by the pronouns personal, signifies *in the stead of;* as, *se éu fôsse a vós, faría aquílo*, if I was you (in your place) I would do that.

10thly. When *a* is placed before *cása*, and the sense implies *going to*, it is Englished by *to*, but the word *cása* is left out; as, *élle fôi a cása do governadôr*, he went to the governor's. You must observe, that *a* in this sense is a proposition.

11. *A'o pé* signifies *near;* as, *pônde hum ao pé do ôutro*, place, put, or set them near one another, Sometimes *mêsmo* comes before *ao pé*, to express still more the nearness of a thing, and *mésmo ao pé*

is Englished by *hard by, just by*, &c.; as, *a súa cása está mêsmo ao pé da mínha*, his house is just by mine.

12th. When the noun *respeíto* is preceded by *a*, it is used in the same tense as *em comparaçaõ*, but requires one of these particles, *do, da, dos, das*, after it, and signifies *in comparison of, in regard to, in respect of*; as, *ísto he náda a respeíto do que pósso dizêr*, this is nothing to other things that I can say.

13th. When *a* comes before a verb neuter, it marks a dative; and after a verb active, an accusative case.

A before the verb *propósito* is used in familiar discourses; as, *a propósito, esquecíme de dizêr-vos o ôutro día*; now I think on't, I forgot to tell you t'other day.

14th. *Ao revéz*, or *as avéssas*, are also used as prepositions, attended by, *de, do, da*, &c.; and it signifies *quite the reverse*, or, *contrary*; as, *élle faz túdo ao revéz*, or *as avéssas do que ouvéra de ser, ou do que lhe dízem*, he does every thing quite the reverse of right, or contrary to what he is bid.

15th. *A* before *tróco* signifies *provided that.* It is also used before the word *tíro*, as, *a tíro de péça*, within cannon shot.

16th. *Cára a cára, côrpo a côrpo*, signify face to face, body to body. *Tomár húma côusa a bôa ou a má párte*, signifies to take a thing well or ill.

Such are the chief relations denoted by the particle *a.* The others must be learned in construing and reading good Portuguese books.

1st. *De*, or rather *do, da, dos, das*, (of, from, *&c.*) denote, first, the place one comes from; as, *sahír de Lôndres*, to go out of London; *vír de Frânça, das I'ndias, &c.*; to come from France, from the Indies, &c.

2d. *De* between two nouns denotes the quality of the person expressed by the first noun; as, *hum hómem de hônra*, a man of honour: or the matter which the thing of the first noun is made of; as,

Húma estátua de mármore, a statue of marble.

Húma pónte de madeíra ou de pédra, a wood or stone bridge.

Note, that two nouns so joined with *de* are commonly Englished by two nouns likewise, but without a preposition, or rather by a compound word, whose first noun (whether substantive or adjective) expresses the matter and quality, manner, form, and use of the other; as a stone-bridge, *húma pônte de pédra*; a dancing-master, *hum méstre de dânça.*

3d. *De, do, da, dos, das*, are used in Portuguese after the participles of the preterite, with *ser*; as, *ser amádo, ou bem visto do póvo, dos sábios, &c.*; to be beloved by the people, by the learned, &c.

Note, that *do* serves for the masculine, *da* for the feminine, and *de* for both.

4th. *De* sometimes signifies *by*; as, *de nôite*, by night; *de día*, by day.

5th. *De* before *em*, and many nouns of time denotes the regular interval of the time after which something begins again; as, *éu vóu vêlo de dôus em dôus, días*, I go to see him every other day; and before nouns of place and adverbs repeated with *em* or *para* between, *de* denotes the passing from one place or condition to another; as, *corrér de rúa em rúa*, to run from street to street; *de mal para peór*, worse and worse.

6th. *De* after some verbs, signifies *after* or *in*; as, *élle portóu-se d'ésta sórte*, he behaved in or after this manner.

7th. *De* is used before an infinitive, and is then governed by some preceding noun or verb; as, *capáz de ensinár*, capable to teach; *dígno de ser amádo*, worthy to be loved, &c.; *procurár de fazêr*, to endeavour to do; *authoridáde de pregár*, the power or authority of preaching, *&c.*

8th. *De* is sometimes Englished by *on*; as, *pôr-se de joélhos*, to kneel down *on* one's knees.

9. *De* between two nouns denotes the use which a thing is designed for; as, *azêite de candêa*, lamp-oil; *árma de fôgo*, a fire arm, *moínho de vênto*, a windmill.

Note, that this relation is expressed in English by two nouns, making a compound word: the first of which signifies the manner, form, and use, denoted by the Portuguese preposition; as, *cadeira de bráços*, an arm-chair, or elbow-chair; *véla de cêra*, a wax-candle, &c.

10. *De* denotes sometimes the quality of things; as *mêyas de tres fíos*, stockings with three threads. Sometimes it denotes also the price; as, *pánno de dezôito xelíns*, eighteen shilling cloth.

11. *De* is sometimes Englished by *upon*; as, *vivêr* ou *sustentár se de pêixe*, to live upon fish. Sometimes it is Englished by *with*; as, *morrêr de frío*, to starve with cold.

12. *De* sometimes signifies *for* or *out of*; as, *saltár de alegría*, to leap for joy; *de modésto*, out of modesty.

13. *De* signifies sometimes *at*; as, *zombár de alguêm*, laugh at one.

14. *De* is sometimes left out in English; as, *gozár de húma côusa*, to enjoy a thing.

15 *De* followed by two nouns of number and the preposition *até* between them, is Englished by *between*; as, *hum hómem de quarênta até cincoênta ánnos*, a man between forty and fifty.

16. *De*, preceded by the preposition *diánte*, is left out in English; as, *diánte de mim*, before me; *diánte de Déos*, before God.

17. *De* when it is placed before *casa*, and the sense implies *coming from*, is Englished by *from*; but the word *cása* sometimes is left out in English, and sometimes not; as, *vênho de cása* (meaning my house) I come from home, from my house: but when they say, *vênho da cása da Senhôra C*, we must

render it in English thus, *I am returning from Mrs. C.'s*

Finally, *de* is used before several words; as, *de brúços*, lying all along on the ground; *de madrugáda*, soon in the morning; *de véras*, in earnest, seriously; *de veráõ*, in summer; *hómem de palávra*, a man as good as his word; *de cóstas*, backwards, *or* on one's back; *andár de pé*, to be sickly without being bed-rid: and many others which must be learnt by use.

A'ntes.

III. *Antes*, before, shews a relation of time, of which it denotes priority; and is always opposite to *depôis*, after; as, *ântes da criaçãõ do múndo*, before the creation of the world.

Primêiro is also a preposition; as, *élle chegôu primêiro que êu*, he arrived before me.

Diânte.

IV. *Diânte*, before, shews a relation of place, and it is always opposite to *detráz*, behind. It signifies also sometimes *em*, or *na presênça;* as, *ha árvores diânte de súa cása*, there are trees before his house; *pônde aquíllo diânte do fògo*, set *or* put that before the fire; *prégár diânte del-rêi*, to preach before the king.

Diânte is also sometimes an adverb, and may be used instead of *adiânte*; as, *ir diânte* or *adiânte*, to go before: but in the following phrase you must say, *nãõ vádes tânto adiânte*, and not *diânte*, don't go so far; *por diânte* is to be Englished by *on* in the following phrase, *íde por diânte*, go on.

Depôis.

V. *Depôis*, after, denotes posteriority of time, and it is used in opposition to *ântes*; as, *depôis do dilúvio*, after the deluge: *depôis do mêio día*, after noon.

Depôis also is used with an infinitive; as, *féito aquíllo*, or *tendo féito aquíllo*, or *depôis de fazér aquíllo*,

after having done that; and it is also made a conjunction with *que*, governing the indicative; as, *depôis que têve feito aquíllo*, after he had done that.

Detráz.

VI. *Detráz*, behind, denotes posteriority both of place and order, and it is said in opposition to *diánte;* as, *a súa cása está detráz da vóssa*, his house is behind yours; *élle vínha detráz de mim;* he walked after me.

Em.

VII. *Em*, or *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*, (in, into, within, &c.) denote a relation both of time and place. The many various significations in which these prepositions are used, must be accurately observed, and much regard had to them in the practice.

No and *na* are sometimes rendered into English by *a;* as, *dúas vêzes no dia*, *na semâna*, &c. twice a day, a week, &c.

No, *na*, &c. are always used before nouns denoting the place wherein something is kept; as, *está no gabinête*, it is in the closet; *na papeléira*, in the bureau; *nas gavétas*, in the drawers; *na rúa*, in the street, &c. but sometimes they are Englished by *upon;* as, *cahír no cháõ*, to fall upon the ground.

Em, *no*, *na*, &c. signifies commonly *in;* as, *em Lôndres*, in London; *está na gráça del rêy*, he is in favour with the king; but in some cases it has a very particular meaning; as, *estár em côrpo*, which signifies literally *to be in body;* but the true sense of it is *to be without a cloak*; so that the body is more exposed to view without an upper garment. *Estár em pérnas*, literally, *to be in legs*, signifies *to be bare-legged*; that is, the legs exposed without stockings. *Estár em camísa* is said of one that has only the shirt on his back.

When this preposition *em* is before an infinitive in Portuguese, then it is an English gerund; as, *consíste em fallár bem*, it consists in speaking well;

but when it is found before a gerund, it signifies *as soon as*; as, *em acabándo iréi*, as soon as I have done, I will go.

Nos nóssos têmpos is Englished by *now a-days.*

Em is used in sentences that imply a general sense; as, *E'lle está em miserável estádo*, he is in a wretched condition; and not *no miserável:* but if the sentences imply a particular sense, you must make use of *no*, *nas*, &c. as, *no miserável estádo em que êlle está*, in the wretched condition wherein he is; and not *em miserável.* You must observe in this last example and the like, that you ought to make use of *em* before *que*, and not of *no*, *na*, &c. which are to be placed only before *qual*; therefore you must not say, *no miserável estádo no que êlle está*; but you may say, *no miserável estádo no qual êlle está.*

Note, that *em* construed with pronouns without an article, makes a sort of adverb, rendered into English by a preposition and a noun; thus in this sentence, *nós irêmos em côche*, we shall go in a coach, *em côche* is an adverb of manner, which shews how we shall go: but *no coche* denotes something besides; as if a company were considering how they shall ride to a place, somebody would say, *vós irêis na cadeirínha, e nós no côche*, you shall go in the chair, and we in the coach; *no côche* would be said in opposition to *na cadeirínha*, and both respectively to some specified chair and coach; or else they should say, *vós irêis em cadeirínha, e nós em côche.* But in this other sentence, *eu deixéi o meu chapéo no côche*, I left my hat in the coach, it would be improper to say *em côche*, because some particular coach is meant, to wit, that which has drove me here or there, or which has been spoken of.

We say *de veraõ no veraõ* or *em o veráõ*; *de invérno, no invérno*, &c. in summer, in winter, &c.

Em is also rendered into English by *at*; as, *em tôdo o têmpo*, at all times.

Em is used, and never *no*, *na*, &c. before proper names of cities and authors; as, *élle está em Lôndres*, he is in London; *nós lêmos em Cícero*, we read in Cicero. But they say *no Pôrto*, in Oporto.

Em, and *no*, *na*, &c. are construed with the names of kingdoms; as, *em* or *na*, *Inglatérra*, in England: but *no*, *na*, is most commonly construed with names of provinces; as, *no Alentéjo, na Beira*, &c. in Alentejo, in Beira, &c.

Em is sometimes rendered into English by *into*: as *Narcíso fôi transformádo em flôr*, Narcissus was metamorphosed into a flower: and sometimes by *to*; as *de rua em rua*, from street to street.

No, *na*, are sometimes rendered into English by *against*; as, *dar co' a cabêça na parêde*, to dash one's head against the wall.

No, *na*, &c. are also rendered into English by *in*, and sometimes by *into*; as, *ter hum meníno nos bráços*, to hold a child in one's arms; *entregár algúma cóusa nas maõs de alguêm*, to deliver a thing into somebody's hands.

Em is used before the word *travéz*, as in this phrase, *por-se de mar em travéz com alguêm*, to fall out together.

Em before a noun of time, denotes the space of time that slides away in doing something; as, *el-rêy foi a Hanóver, em tres días*, the king went to Hanover in three days; that is, he was no longer than three days in going.

Em is sometimes used after the verb *hír*, to go; as, *vái em quátro mêses que êu aquí cheguêi*, it is now going on four months since I came hither.

Em before *quânto*, and sometimes without it, is rendered into English by *while* or *whilst*; as, *em quânto vós fazêis aquíllo, êu farêi ísto*, while you do that, I shall do this: but if they are followed by a noun of time with an interrogation, then they must be rendered into English by *in how much*, or *many*; as, *em quánto têmpo?* in how much time? You must

observe, that *em quánto a mim, a ti, a êlle*, &c. are rendered into English by *for what concerns me, thee, him*, &c.

You must observe that *no* serves for the masculine, *na* for the feminine, and *em* for both.

Em signifies *as*; as, *em sinál da sua amizáde*, as a token of his friendship; *em prémio*, as a reward.

The prepositions *em*, *no*, *na*, &c. and *dêntro*, have very often the same signification, therefore they may sometimes be used one instead of the other; as *está na gavêta*, or *dêntro da gavêta*, it is in the drawer; *está na cidáde*, or *déntro da cidáde*, he is in town.

Em before the words *favór*, *utilidáde*, *consideraçám*, *razáõ*, and the like, signifies *in behalf of*, *for the sake of*, *on account of*, &c. as, *em razáõ das béllas acçóens que êlle tem feito*, in consideration of the great things he has performed.

Observe, that they very often make an elision of the last vowels, *o*, *a*, of the preposition *no*, *na*, when there is a vowel in the beginning of the next word; *n' ágoa*, instead of *na ágoa*; they also cut off the *e* of the preposition *em*, and change the *m* into *n*, as you may see in *Camoens*, Canto 2. Stanza xxxii. *n' algúm pôrto*, instead of *em algum porto*, wherein you must observe that *n'* is to be Englished by *to*, or *into*.

Com.

VII. This preposition signifies *with*, and it denotes conjunction, union, mixing, assembling, keeping company; as, *casár húma donzélla com hum hómem honrádo*, to marry a maid with an honest man; *hir com álguêm*, to go with one; *com a ajúda de Dêos*, by God's help, &c.

Observe that most of the adverbs formed of the adjectives are turned in Portuguese by the preposition *com* and the substantive; as, *atrevidamênte*, boldly, *com atrevimênto*, with boldness; *elegante-*

ménte, elegantly; *com elegância*, with elegance; *cortezménte*, politely, *com cortezía*, with politeness, &c.

You must observe, that the last consonant *m* is very often cut off, even before the noun of number *hum*, one; and so they say, *cum*, instead of *com hum*, as you may see in *Camoens*, Cant. 2. Stanza xxxvii.

Note, that *with me*, *with thee*, *with himself*, &c. are rendered into Portuguese by *commígo*, *comtígo*, or *comvôsco*, *comsígo*, *comnôsco*, *comvôsco*, *comsígo*.

When *com* is preceded by *para*, it signifies *towards*, and sometimes *over*, in English; as, *sejâmos piedósos para com os póbres*, let us be merciful towards the poor. *Ter grânde podêr para com alguêm*, to have a great influence over somebody's mind.

Com before the word *capa* is used metaphorically, and then it signifies *under colour*, or *pretext*.

Para.

VIII. *Para* is rendered into English by *for*; but it signifies also *to*, when it is found before the infinitive, and denotes the intention, or purpose in doing something; as, *éste lívro he para méu irmaõ*, this book is for my brother; *ésta pénna he para escrevér*, this pen is to write; *Déos nos féz para amálo*, God made us for to love him; *o comêr he necessário para conservár a vída*, eating is necessary for preserving life.

Para que is rendered into English by *for what*; as, *para que he ísto?* for what is this? and sometimes by *that*, or *in order that*; as, *para que vénha vêrme*, that he may come and see me. But *porque* signifies *why*, *for what*, *upon what account*, as, *porquê náõ víndes?* why don't you come? but when it is not followed by an interrogation, it signifies *because*.

Para serves likewise before the verbs, to denote what one is able to do in consequence of his present disposition; as, *élle hé bastantemênte fórte para andár a cavállo*, he is strong enough to ride; *elle tem bas-*

tânte cabedál para sustentár-se, he has means enough to maintain himself; *a occasiáõ he muito favorável para nos naõ servír-mos délla*, the occasion is too favourable to let it slip.

Para expresses also the capacity or incapacity of doing any thing; as, *élle hé hómem para isto*, he is the proper man wanted for this; *hé hómem para pouco*, he is good for little; *he hómem para náda*, he is good for nothing.

This preposition is also used to denote the end or motive of doing any thing; as, *trabálho para o bem público*, I work for the public good; *hum hospitál para os póbres*, an hospital for the poor.

Para is a preposition of time; as *ísto me básta para tôdo o ânno*; this is sufficient to me for all the year; *estaõ unídos para sémpre*, they are united for ever; *para dôus mêses éra muito pôuco*, for two months it was too little.

Para is sometimes preceded by the adverb *lá*, and followed by a noun of time, and then it is Englished by *against* or *towards*; as, *lá para o fim da semána*, against the end of the week, *or* towards the end of the week.

Para is sometimes Englished by *considering*, or *with respect to*; as, *éste menino está muito adiantádo para a idáde que tem*, or *para o pôuco têmpo que aprénde*, this child is very forward for his age, *or* considering the little time he has learned; *para Ingléz fálla demasiadaménte*, he talks too much considering that he is an Englishman.

Para signifies sometimes *just* or *ready to*; as, *élle está para partír*, he is just going away, he is ready to go.

Para is also used before the word *gráças*; as, *élle naõ he para gráças*, he takes no jest; *élle naõ está para gráças*, he is out of humour, *or* he is in an ill humour.

Para ónde? signifies *whither? to what place?*

Para que? or *para que fim?* signifies *to what end* or *purpose?* *Para címa* signifies upward.

Para húma e óutra párte, signifies *to both sides, places,* or *parts.*

Para is also Englished by *towards,* and is said of places; as, *para o oriénte,* towards, *or* to the east.

Para ónde quer que, signifies *whether,* or *to what place thou wilt, any whither.*

Para óutra párte, signifies *towards another place.*

Para comígo, towards me.

Para o diánte, signifies *for the time to come.*

De mim, para mim, signifies *for what concerns me.*

Para is used by *Camoens.* Cant. 2. Stanza xxiv. before the preposition *detráz,* and signifies *backwards.*

Para between two nouns of number is Englished by *or,* and sometimes by *and;* as, *hum hómem de quarênta para cincoênta ánnos,* a man between forty and fifty; *dísta quátro para cínco légoas,* it is about four or five leagues distant.

Por.

IX. *Por, pêllo, pêlla, pêllos,* or *pêllas,* signifies *for;* as *por amôr de vós,* for your sake; *por sêis semánas,* for six weeks; *palávra por palávra,* word for word.

Polo and *pola* instead of *pello* and *pella,* are out of use.

Por sometimes denotes that the thing is not yet done; as, *ésta óbra está por acabár,* this work is not yet finished.

Por, by, for, over, or through; as, *alcancêi-o por empénho,* I obtained it by protection; *eu vôu por dinheíro,* I am going for money; *passêio pêllos cámpos,* I walk through the fields; *por tódo o reíno,* all over the kingdom.

When *por* is before an infinitive, and followed by a negative, in the latter part of the sentence, it is Englished by *although* or *though;* as, *por ser devóta,* or *por devóta que seja, naõ deíxa de ser molhér,* though

she is a religious woman, yet she is a woman; *por ser póbre*, or *por póbre que séja, naõ deixa de ser sobêrba*, though she has no fortune, she is nevertheless, *or* for all that, proud. Wherein you see, that the negative with the verb *deixár*, are rendered into English by the verb *to be*, and the particles *nevertheless, yet*, &c. You must observe that they sometimes put the words *nem por ísso* before the verb *deixár*, but the sense is the same, and you may as well say, *por sér póbre, nem por ísso deíxa*, &c.

Por followed by an adjective and the particle *que* with a verb in the subjunctive mood, is rendered into English by *never so;* as, *por grânde que élle séja*, let him be never so great; *por póuco que séja*, never so little.

Por, before *menos*, signifies *far less than*, or *under;* as *vm*[ce] *naõ o terá por mênos de vínte líbras*, you shall not have it under twenty pounds.

Por before *quânto*, with an interrogation, signifies *for how much, at what rate?* But if there is no interrogation, as in the following and the like sentences, then it is to be Englished by *for never so much;* as, *naõ o faría por quánto me déssem*, I would not do it for never so much.

Por before *círna* signifies *upwards*, and before *báxo* is Englished by *downwards;* as, *o remédio óbra por címa e por báxo*, the medicine operates, *or* works, upwards and downwards.

Por before *póuco, muíto, bem*, &c. and followed by *que*, makes a sort of conjunction governing the subjunctive, and is Englished by *if*, followed by *ever* or *never so little, much, well*, &c. as, *por póuco que errêis*, if you do amiss never so little; *por bêm que éu fáça*, if I do never so well, &c.

Por before *mim* signifies sometimes *as for*, or *for all;* as, *por mim estôu prómpto*, as for me, *or*, for my part I am ready; *por mim podêis dormír se quizérdes*, you may sleep for all me.

Por, pêllo, pélla, &c. denote the efficient cause of a thing, as also the motive and means, or ways of doing; in all which significations they are Englished by *by, through, out of, at,* &c. as,

A Asia fói conquistada por Alexándre, Asia was conquered by Alexander.

Vós falláis nísso só por envéja, it is out of envy only you speak of it.

E'lle entróu pêlla pórta, mas sahío pêlla janélla, he got in at the door, but he got out at the window, &c.

Por denotes place, after the verbs *ir* and *passár;* as, *por ônde iréis vós?* which way shall you go?

Eu passaréi por Frânça, I'll go through France; *por ônde passóu elle?* which way did he go?

Por construed with nouns without an article, denotes most times *distribution of people, time,* and *place;* and it is Englished by *a,* or *every,* before the noun; as,

E'lle déu tânto por cabéça, he gave so much a head.

Tânto por soldádo, por ânno, por mês, por semâna, &c. so much a soldier, a year, a month, a week; *a razáõ de vínte por cênto,* at the rate of twenty per cent.

E'lle péde tânto por légoa, he asks so much a league, *or* every league.

Por, between two nouns without an article, or between two infinitives without a preposition, denotes the choice which one makes between two things, alike in their nature, but different in their circumstances; as,

Cása por cása ântes quéro ésta que aquélla, since I must have one of these two houses, I like this better than that; *morrér por morrér, melhór, he morrér combatêndo que fugíndo,* when a man must die, it is better to die in fighting than in running away.

Pello mêyo is rendered into English by *through;* as, *pello mêyo dos câmpos,* through the fields.

Por mêyo is rendered into English by *by;* as, *elle alcançóu o sêu intênto por mêyo de astúçias,* he has compassed his ends by devices.

Por túrno signifies *in one's turn.*

Por before the infinitives is used instead of *para* by the best Portuguese writers; and *porquê* instead of *para que;* as you may see particularly in *Camoens,* Canto 2. Stanza vii. and viii. and in the following example, *por naõ,* or *para naõ repetír o que já têmos díto,* not to repeat what we have already said.

Por is sometimes Englished by *for, upon the account of, for sake,* &c. as, *êlle fará ísto por amôr de vós,* he will do this upon your account, *or* for your sake; *deixáraõ-o por mórto,* he was left for dead; *eu tênho-o por mêu amígo,* I take him to be my friend; *tôdos os hómens de bem saõ,* or *estaõ por êlle,* all honest people are for him, *or* are on his side; *por quem me tomáis vós?* who do you take me for?

We have already observed, that *porquê* without an interrogation signifies *because;* but it has the same signification in the following sentence, and the like; *porquê êlle hé mentirôso ségue-se que tambêm êu o seja;* because he is a liar, does it follow therefore that I am one?

Por ísto, or *por ésta razaõ,* signifies *therefore.*

O porque signifies the reason, the cause, or the subject; as, *sábe-se o porque?* is it known upon what account?

Por módo de dizêr signifies *as one may say, if I,* or *we, may say,* &c.

Por diânte signifies *before;* and *por detráz* signifies *behind.*

Por ventúra signifies *perhaps.*

Pêllo passádo signifies *formerly, in time past, heretofore.*

Por nenhúm cáso, by no means.

Por mar e por térra, by sea and land.

Hum por hum signifies *one by one.*

Por is sometimes Englished by *in;* as, *êlles saõ vínte, por tôdos,* they are twenty in all.

When the verb *passár* is followed by *por,* then the word *álto,* signifies *to forget;* as, *passôu-lhe aquíllo por*

alto, he forgot that; but speaking of goods it signifies to *smuggle.*

Por joined with the verb *ir* signifies *to fetch*, and *seek after*; as, *vái por vínho*, go fetch some wine; *vái pêllo médico*, go see for the physician.

Por is commonly used before the substantives; as, *pór exêmplo*, for example; *por commodidáde*, for conveniency; *por costúme*, for custom sake; and many others, that may be learned by use.

You must observe, that *pêllo* serves for the masculine, *pella* for the feminine, and *por* for both.

Contra.

X. *Contra*, (against, contrary to,) denotes opposition; as, *que díz vmce cóntra ísto?* what do you say against this? It signifies also *over against*, *opposite to*.

Pró e côntra signifies in English *pro* and *con.*

Desde.

XI. *Désde*, denotes both time and place, and enumeration of things, and is commonly followed in the sentence by the preposition *até (to)*; then *dêsde* denotes the term *from whence*, and *até* that of *hitherto*; as,

Dêsde o princípio até o fim, from the beginning to the end.

E'lle fói a pé dêsde Windsor atè Lôndres, he walked from Windsor to London.

Eú ténho vísto tôdos dêsde o primeíro até o último, I have seen them all from the first to the last; *fôraõ tôdos mórtos dêsde o primeiro até o último*, they were all slain to a man.

Dêsde a criaçáõ do múndo, from *or* since the creation.

Dêsde o bérço, ou infância, from the cradle, from a child.

Désde já, even now; as, *désde já prevéjo*, I even now foresee.

Désde agóra, from this time forward.

Désde entáõ, from that time ever since.

Dêsde que, as soon as, when.

Dêsde quándo? how long since, *or* ago?

Rio navegável dêsde o sêu nascimênto; a river navigable at its very rise.

Até.

XII. *Até* signifies *till, even, to*, &c. as you may see in the following examples.

Até ônde? how far?

Até Rôma, as far as Rome.

Até quándo? till when, *or* how long?

Até que êu víva, as long as I live.

He hum hómem de tánta bondáde, que até os sêus inimígos saõ obrigádos a estimálo, he is so good a man that even his enemies have a value for him.

Até os maís vis hómens tomávaõ a liberdáde de, &c. the very worst of men took such a liberty as to, *&c.*

Até que, until, till.

Até as orêlhas, up to the ears.

Elle vendéo até a camísa, he has sold the very shirt off his back.

Até agóra, or *até aquí*, till now, *or* hitherto.

Até aquí, (speaking of a place) to this place, hither, so far.

Até lá, to that place, so far.

Até que ísto se fáça, till it be done.

Até entaõ, till then, till that time.

Até is also used before an infinitive; as, *gritár até enrouquecêr*, to bawl one's self hoarse.

Rir até arrebentár pellas ilhárgas, to split one's sides with laughing.

Dár de comêr a alguêm até arrebentár, to fill, *or* cram one with victuals till he bursts.

Até á priméira, till our next meeting, till we meet again.

Por címa.

XIII. *Por címa* (above, over), denotes superiority of place; as,

Morár por címa da alguém, to live or lodge above somebody.

A bálla lhe passôu por cima da cabêça, the ball went over his head.

Por címa de túdo, upon the whole.

Para címa.

XV. *Para cima* (above) denotes superiority of age, and is sometimes put at the end of the sentence; as,

E'lles alistáraõ tôdos que tínhaõ de déz ânnos para címa, they enlisted every body above ten.

A címa.

XV. *A címa*, (above) denotes rank, and some moral subjects; as,

A címa dêlle, above him, *or* superior to him.

Estár a címa de túdo, to be above the world.

Húma molhér que está a címa de túdo, naõ se lhe dá do que o múndo diz délla, a woman who is above the public censure, don't care what people say of her.

Em címa.

XVI. *Em címa* (upon); as *em címa da mêsa*, upon the table.

Em címa de túdo ísto, or only *em címa*, signifies *and besides all that, over and above all that.*

De címa.

XVII. *De címa*, when it is an adverb, signifies *from above*; but when a preposition, it is Englished by *from*, *off*, or *from off*; as,

Tirái aquillo de címa da mêsa, take that from off the table.

Elle núnca tirôu os séus ólhos de címa délla, he never turned his eyes from her.

Cahír de címa das árvores, to fall off the trees.

Debáxo.

XVIII. The preposition *debáxo, (under, below,* or *from under)* denotes the time and place; I say the time of a denomination of a reign, or government; as, *debáxo do império de Augústo,* under the empire of Augustus.

Debáxo, as a preposition of place, marks out inferiority of position; as,

Tudo o que há debáxo dos céos, all there is under heaven.

Têr húma almofáda debáxo dos joélhos, to have a cushion under the knees.

Estár debáxo da cháve, to be under lock and key.

Debáxo is sometimes rendered into English by *upon;* as, *affirmár húma côusa debáxo de juramênto,* to swear a thing, to declare upon oath.

Abáxo.

XIX. This preposition is rendered into English by *under, inferior,* or *next;* as, *assentôu-se abáxo dêlles,* he sat inferior, *or* under them; as, *assentôu-se abáxo de mim;* he sat next, inferior to me, *or* he was next man to me: *abáxo del-réi êlle hé o priméiro,* he is the next man to the king.

This preposition is sometimes put at the end of the next phrases, *de télhas abáxo,* here below, in this lower world, *de cabêça abáxo,* headlong.

Fóra.

XX. *Fóra, (out, without, except, but,)* denotes exclusion, and exception. It requires generally a genitive before a noun of time, or place; but it governs also the nominative; as,

Fóra do rêyno, out of the kingdom.

Fóra da cidâde, out of town.

Fóra de têmpo, out of season.

Procurái-o fóra de cása, look for him without doors.

E'lles sahíraõ tôdos, fóra dôus ou três, they all went out except, *or* but two or three.

E'lle lhe permite túdo, fóra o ir ás assembléas, he indulges her in every thing, but in going to assemblies.

E'lle tem tódos os podêres, fóra o de concluír, he has full powers, except of concluding.

Fóra is sometimes preceded by *taõ*, and then it is to be rendered into English by *so far*; as, *êlle está taõ fóra de socorrêr os sêus alliâdos, que se declára côntra élles*, he is so far from assisting his allies, that he declares himself against them.

Fóra is sometimes rendered into English by *besides*; as, *fóra daquêlles que*, &c. besides those that, *&c.* and sometimes by *beyond*; as, *fóra de medída*, beyond measure.

Fóra de hóras signifies *beyond the hour*, or *very late*.

Pôr alguêm fóra da pórta, or *mandár alguêm pêlla pórta fóra*, to turn one out of doors.

De frônte, or *frônte*.

This preposition governs the genitive, and signifies *over against*. It is followed by *de, do, da*, &c. as,

De frônte da sua cása está hum outeíro, over against his house is a hill.

Eu estáva de frônte dêlle, I was over against him.

Sem.

Sem signifies *without*; as,

Sem dinhêiro, without money.

Sem dúvida, without end.

Sem dar a entendêr, or *sem fazêr conhecêr*, without giving to understand.

Sem máis, nem mênos, without any reason *or* provocation.

Estár sem ámo, to be out of place.

Sem que algúm ácto precedênte póssa derrogár o presênte, any former act to the contrary of the present notwithstanding.

Sem governs also the infinitive, which is rendered into English with the participle; as, *fallár sem sabêr,* to speak without knowing.

It is also a conjunction with *que,* governing the subjunctive; as,

Enfáda-se sem que lhe dígaõ náda, he is angry without any body saying any thing to him.

Naõ éra êu já bastantamênte infelíz, semquê procurásseis de acrescentár a mínha infelicidáde? was I not miserable enough before, but you must still labour to make me more so?

Lêmbro-me sem que me digáis, I remember without your telling.

E'lle virá sem que mándem por êlle, he will come without sending for.

Confórme, or *segúndo.*

XXIII. *Confórme* or *segúndo* (according to, conformable to), govern the nominative, and never the dative as in English: as,

E'lle foi tratádo confórme o sêu merecimênto, he was treated according to his deserts.

Confórme o mêu parecêr, in my judgment, in my opinion.

In common conversation *confórme* is used adverbially, and Englished as follows:

I'sso he confórme, or only *confórme,* it is as it happens; may be yes; may be not; that is according.

Confórme a occasiaõ o pedír, according as there shall be need.

Sôbre.

XXIV. *Sôbre* signifies *upon;* as, *sôbre a mésa,* upon the table; *sôbre o río,* upon the river.

Sôbre túdo, or *sôbre tôdas as côusas*, over all, above all, above all things, above any thing, especially; as, *sôbre túdo têndc cuidádo na saúde*, but howsoever the matter be, mind your health.

Pôr alguém sôbre si, or *dár lhe o primêiro lugár*, to place one above himself.

Ir sôbre húma cidáde, to march against a town.

Ir sôbre alguêm, to fall, *or* to rush upon one.

Ir sôbre segúro, to go upon sure grounds.

Sôbre a nóite, about *or* towards the evening.

Sôbre o vérde, somewhat green.

Sôbre a mínha palávra, upon my word.

Sôbre palávra, upon parole.

Mandár cárta sôbre cárta, to send letter upon letter.

E'lle recebéo a cárta sôbre o jantár, he had just dined when he received the letter.

E'lle dórme sôbre o jantár, he sleeps presently after dinner.

Sôbre ísto, or *sôbre éstas côusas*, is sometimes Englished by *more than that*, or *besides that*; as,

E'lle roubôu-o, e sôbre ísto matôu-o, he robbed him, and more than that, he killed him.

Sôbre que, is rendered into English by *though* or *although*; as,

E'ste negócio sôbre que he difficultôso, naõ hé impossível, altho' this is a hard affair, yet it is not impossible.

Sôbre is Englished sometimes by *besides*; as,

Sôbre as misérias da guérra, elle têve a disgráça, &c. besides the miseries of the war, he had the misfortune of, *&c.*

Estár sôbre si, or *andár sôbre si*, signifies to stand upon one's guard.

E'u vos escreverêi sôbre ésta matéria, I will write to you about this matter.

A'cêrca.

XXV. *A'cêrca* signifies *about*; as, *ácêrca dísto lhe dísse*, about this I told him; *ácêrca de lá ir lhe respondí*, about going there I answered him.

Pérto, júnto, ao pé, pegádo.

XXVI. *Pérto*, (near by, about) denotes proximity of place and time, and governs the genitive case; as *aquillo está múito pérto do lúme*, that is very near the fire; *pérto das óito hóras*, about eight o'clock.

Pérto do río, near the river.

Estâmos pérto do Natal, we are near Christmas.

Ao pé requires also the genitive case; as,

Assentáivos ao pé de mim, sit down by me, *or* near me; *ao pé do río*, near the river, &c.

Note, that *júnto* (near *or* by) and *pegádo*, (hard by) require the dative case; as,

Júnto a cidáde, near the town.

Pegádo ao palácio, hard by the palace.

Lônge.

Lônge, far, a great way off, governs the genitive, and the particle *de*, or *do*, *da*, &c. as,

Lônge de cása, far from home.

Lônge daquí, far from hence.

De lóngo, or *ao lóngo.*

This preposition requires the genitive case; as,

Ao lóngo da práya, along the shore.

Ao lóngo da cósta, do prádo, &c. along the coast, the meadow, &c.

Of further Particles.

Aínda, aínda que, pôstoquê or *quándo bem, aínda assím* or *com túdo.*

Aínda signifies *yet;* as, *élle aínda naõ véyo*, he is not come yet. It signifies also *even;* as, *sería vergónha aínda o fallár nísso*, it were a shame even to speak of it; *nem aínda por cem líbras*, no not for a hundred pounds.

Aínda que signifies, *though*, or *although;* as, *aínda que vós sóis máis vélho do que élle*, though you be older than he; *aínda que assím fôsse*, though it were so.

Ainda qué, is very often followed by *com túdo*, yet for all that; as, *aínda que êlle naõ tivésse necessidáde dísso, com túdo*, &c. though he had no need of it, yet, &c.

Aínda assím, or *com túdo*, is sometimes Englished by *nevertheless*, or *for all that*; as, *aínda assím sêmpre êlle foi louvável*, he was praise-worthy for all that.

Ja dêsde, já que and *já por que.*

Ja dêsde is rendered into English by *even from*; as, *ja dêsde o princípio*, even from the beginning.

Já que, signifies *since*; as,

Ja que ísso assím he, since it is so.

The particle *que* sometimes is not placed immediately after *ja*; as, *ja há dóus ánnos que morréo*, he died two years since or ago.

Já ha muíto têmpo que sahístes de cása, it is a long time since you went from home.

Já por que, is repeated in the same sentence, and then the first is rendered into English by *first, because*; and the second by *secondly, because*; as, *ja por que éra cégo, ja por que éra côxo*, first because he was blind, and secondly because he was lame.

Depois que.

Depôis que is rendered into English by *after*; as, *Depôis que éu tinha entrádo*, after I was gone in.

Com que.

Com que is only a note either of introduction, or connexion; as,

Com que havía hum hómem enférmo, &c. now a certain man was sick; sometimes they add to it the particle *assím*, and then it is to be rendered into English by *and so*.

Ou.

Ou signifies *or*, or *either*; as, *ou bôm, ou máo*, either good or bad; *máis ou mênos*, more or less; *ou élle quéira ou naõ*, whether he will, or no.

Quer.

Quer, when a particle, must be repeated, and the first is rendered into English by *either* or *whether*, and the second by *or*; as, *quer êlle quêira quer naõ*, whether he will or no; *quer vós o tenhâis feíto, quer naõ*, whether you have done that, or no.

Se quer or *ao mênos.*

Se quer or *ao mênos*, &c. signifies *at least*, *however*; as, *se vós naõ querêis sêr por êlle naõ sejáis se quer côntra êlle*, if you don't chuse to be for him, at least don't oppose him; *dái-lhe se quer com que sustentár-se*, give him at least a subsistence; *o nósso primêiro fim hé de livrárnos de tôdos os máles, ao mênos dos mayóres*, our chief end is to be freed from all, however the greatest evils.

Nem se quer hum, is rendered into English by *never a one, so much*, or *in the following manner*; as, *fôraõ tôdos mórtos, e nem se quer hum escapôu*, they were all slain to a man.

Quândo muíto.

Quândo muíto, (at most, at farthest, at long run), is generally used before the nouns of time and price; as, *elle estará aquí dêntro em hum mêz quândo muíto*, he will be here in a month at farthest; *dez líbras quândo muíto*, ten pounds at most.

Tânto.

Tânto, so much, is sometimes followed by *cômo*, and then it is rendered into English by *as well as*, *as much as*, &c.

A'mo-te tânto cômo a mim mésmo, I love thee as well as myself.

E'lle téme tânto cômo qualquér de vós, que lhe resulte algúm dáno, he is afraid of a harm as much as any of you.

Cuidèi que a estimásse tánto cômo a si mêsmo, I thought he made as high account of her, as of himself.

E'lles vem tánto de día cômo de nôite, they can see as well by day as by night.

E'u tive tánto cômo vós, I had as much as you.

O'utro tânto is rendered into English by *the double, twice as much*, or *as much ;* as,

E'u alcancêi ôutro tânto máis por ísso, I had as much more for it ; *êu pósso fazêr ôutro tânto*, I can do as much.

Tânto followed by *assím*, is a particle merely expletive ; as,

Tánto assím que lhe pósso êu fazêr? how can I help it ; *váite, tânto assím naõ ha náda para ti*, go away, here is nothing for you.

Tânto assím followed by *que* without an interrogation, is sometimes rendered by *so that, in so much that ;* as, *tânto assím que êlle naõ quer ouvír máis fallar nisso*, so that he will hear no more of it.

Tánto máis is followed by *que*, and Englished by *and the more so as ;* as,

E'u estôu prômpto para ir com vm^ce hum día dêstes á comédia, se vm^ce quizér, tânto máis que se déve representár húma nóva peça. I am ready to go with you some day or other to the play, if you'll give me leave; and the more so, as a new piece is to be acted.

Tánto que, or *logo que*, is rendered into English by *as soon as ;* as, *tânto que êu o ví*, as soon as I saw him.

Tânto melhór is rendered into English by *so much the better.*

Tânto is sometimes preceded by *com*, and followed by *que*, and is Englished by *so, provided that ;* as *com tânto que o façáis*, provided that you do it ; *com tânto que me naõ fáça mal*, so he do me no hurt.

Tânto quânto is Englished by *as much as ;* as,

Tânto quânto pósso, as much as I can.

Taõ.

Taõ, so, is generally followed by *cômo ;* as,

Este naõ he taõ bom cômo o ôutro, this is not so good as the other; *êu sêi ísso taõ bem cômo vós*, I know it as well as you.

Taõ is sometimes followed by *que*, and Englished by *so, such, to that degree*; as,

E'lle he taõ prudênte que naõ tem iguál, he is so wise that he has not his match; *naõ sóu taõ lôuco que o crêya*, I am not so simple, *or* I am not such a fool as to believe it; *fáz taõ grânde vênto que*, &c. the wind is so high that, &c. *or* the wind blows to that degree, &c.

Cômo.

Cômo, is Englished by *as, like, how*, &c. as you may see in the following expressions.

Cômo? how?

Dizéime cômo lhe hêi de fallár? tell me how I may speak to him.

Cômo assím? how so?

Cômo! what!

Cômo quer que, whereas.

Cômo quer que séja, howsoever, in what manner, or fashion soever.

Séja cômo fôr, be it as it will.

Cômo ísto assím he, since it is so.

Cômo, as it were, *or* almost.

Cômo se, as if, *or* even as if; as, *cômo se êlles tivéssem já vencído*, as if they had already overcome.

Cômo tambêm, as well as.

Ríco cômo êlle he, as rich as he is.

Cômo sôis mêu amígo, quero, &c. as (*or* because) you are my friend, I'll, &c.

Dizéime o cômo, tell me how.

Eu sêi cômo fazér para que êlle vênha, I know the way I shall take to make him come.

Cômo êlle lá naõ estéja, êu irêi, provided he is not there, I will come.

Assim.

Assim, so, thus, is rendered into English as you may see in the following expressions,

Pôis he assím de véras? de véras que assím he, is it even so? it is even so.

Assím séja, or *séja assím*, so be it, or be it so.

Assím hé, it is so.

Para assím dizér, as it were.

Assím sóu êu lóuco, que, &c. I am not so foolish as to, &c.

Assím Déos me sálve, as I hope to be saved.

Tánto assím, so that.

Assím he que vós, &c. is this your way, &c.

Assím cômo assím, after all, nevertheless, *or* for all that; as, *em vaõ dilatáis a vóssa jornáda, assím cômo assím he precíso que vádes*, it is in vain for you to put off your journey, you must go thither nevertheless, *or* for all that, you must go after all.

Assím cômo, as well as, *or* as soon as.

Básta assím por agóra, thus much for this time.

Assím na páz, cômo na guérra, both in time of peace and war.

Assím, assím, so so, indifferent.

Assím queira élle cômo póde, he can if he will.

Assím is sometimes preceded by *e*; *as, e assím que quer ísto dizér?* how now? what do you mean by this? And sometimes *assím* is followed by *cômo*; as, *assím cômo o sól eclípsa os outros planétas, da mêsma sórte*, &c. as the sun eclipses the other planets, so, &c.

Se.

Se, if; as *se élle viér*, if he comes; *se me amásses*, should you love me; *se élle fôsse hómem de hônra*, were he but an honest man: *se soubéssem quem êu sôu, tôdos diriaõ*, &c. were it told who I am, every one would say, &c. *se he verdáde que*, &c. if so be that, *&c.*

The reciprocal verbs, as well as those that are used impersonally, may have two *se se* joined together; as, *se se fôr*, if he goes away; *se se fálla nísso*, if they speak to it.

Se is sometimes rendered into English by *whether*; and when it is repeated, the second is Englished by *or*; as,

Quiséra sabêr se a cúlpa he nóssa, se vóssa, I would know whether it is your fault, or ours.

Aliás.

Aliás, is sometimes rendered into English by *else*; as, *entrái, porque aliás fecharêi a pórta*, come in, or else I'll shut the door; *porquê aliás seríaõ os vóssos fílhos immúndos*, else were your children unclean. And sometimes it is rendered into English by *otherwise, in other things*, or *respects*.

Embóra.

Embóra is sometimes rendered into English by *prosperously, auspiciously*; but sometimes it is a particle merely expletive, and answers to the Italian *pure*; as, *dizêi muíto embóra o que quizérdes*, say what you please: the Italian says, *díte pur quel che vi piáce.*

Múito embóra sêja assím, well, let it be so.

Embóra is sometimes Englished by *away*; as, *váitê embóra*, go away.

Senáõ.

Senáõ signifies *if not, did not, were it not that, but that*; as,

Senáõ tivésse mêdo de mêu pay, but that I fear my father.

Se êlle naõ tivésse vergônha de confessár, but that he was ashamed to confess.

Note, that the following expressions, in which they make use of this particle, may be Englished by *but, for*, and some other variations.

Se naõ fôsse por êlle, but for him, *or* had it not been for him, *or* had he not been.

Senáõ fôsse por vós, had you not been, *or* had it not been for you, without you, without your help, hindrance, *&c.*

Senáõ fôsse por mim, elle morrería de fóme, were it not for me, he would starve.

Senáõ is sometimes Englished by *but:* as, *nem êlles tem ôutro intênto, senáõ*, &c. nor do they aim at any thing else but, *&c.*

Ninguêm disse assím senáõ Cícero, nobody said so but Cicero.

Senáõ may be also expressed in Portuguese by *máis que* in the following sentence, and the like.

Elle náõ faz senáõ jogár, or *êlle naõ faz máis que jogár*, he does nothing but play.

Naõ, naõ porquê.

Naõ, not, or *no*, when followed by *porquê*, is Englished by *not that, not but that*; as, *naõ porquê lhe faltásse engénho*, not but that he had wit; *naõ porquê naõ fôsse jústo, mas porquê*, &c. not but that it was right, but because, &c. *naõ porquê a côusa séja impossível, mas porquê*, &c. not that the thing is possible, but because, *&c.*

Tambêm, or *ôutrosi.*

Tambêm, or *ôutrosi*, signifies *also, too, likewise*; as, *vós assím o querêis e êu tambêm*, you'll have it so, and I too.

Para que, porquê.

See the prepositions *para* and *por*.

Pôis.

This particle is very much used by the Portuguese, and it is rendered into English several ways, as you may see in the following examples:

Pôis íde, e vínde lógo, go then and come back presently.

Pôis naõ sôu êu capáz de fazêllo? what, am I not capable to do it?

Pôis, or *pôis entaõ que quér dizér ísto?* Well, and what of all this.

Pôis, or *pôis entáõ que hêi de fazér?* What shall I do then?

Pôis eu dígo que élle está déntro, why, he is here within, I say.

Pôis porquê me vigiáis! Why then do you watch me?

E'lle tem cabêça; pôis também hum alfinête a tem, he has got a head, and so has a pin.

Pôis before *naõ,* and preceded by an interrogation, denotes a strong assertion, and is Englished by *without doubt, yes, surely, to be sure,* &c. as, *virá élle? pôis naõ!* will he come? yes to be sure.

A'ntes, or *máis depréssa.*

These particles are sometimes rendered into English by *rather* or *sooner*; as, *ántes* or *máis depréssa quizéra morrér,* I would rather die; *ántes quizéra vivér só que na vóssa companhía,* I would sooner live alone than be in your company. Sometimes *ántes* is Englished by *before*; as, *I'de-vos ántes que élle vênha,* go away before he comes; *ántes que êu mórra,* before I die.

Mas ántes, pelo contrário, mas pelo contrário.

These particles are rendered into English by *on the contrary, on the other hand, nay*; as, *mas ántes, mas pelo contrário,* or *pelo contrário isto he múito differénte,* nay it is quite another thing, *mas ántes, pelo contrário,* &c. *elle he avarênto,* nay, or on the contrary, he is a covetous man.

Para melhór dizêr.

This phrase is rendered into English by *nay*; as, *élle tem ja bastânte, ou para melhór dizér, máis do necessário,* he has already enough, nay too much; *A ísto he que nós chamámos dirêito das gêntes, ou para melhór dizér, da razáõ,* this is what we call the law of

nations, which may be called more properly the law of reason.

Que.

We have already observed that *que* is a particle which most conjunctions are composed of; as, *aïnda que*, although; *de sórte que*, so that, *&c.*

The particle *que* sometimes is the sign of the third persons of the imperative, as *let* in *English;* as, *que fálle*, let him speak; *que ríaõ*, let them laugh.

Que is used between two verbs, to determine and specify the sense of the first, as *éu vos assegúro que assím he*, I assure you that it is so; *duvído que assím séja*, I doubt whether it is so or no.

Que is used also after *hóra* in the beginning of a sentence, and followed by a verb in the subjunctive, to denote by exclamation one's surprize, aversion, and reluctance of something; in which case there is a verb grammatically understood before *que*; as, *hóra que se esquecésse êlle de si mêsmo!* I wonder, or is it possible for him to have forgot himself!

The exclamation, or admiration, is sometimes expressed without any verb; as, *que gósto; e ao mésmo têmpo, que pêna!* how much pleasure and trouble at once!

Que is sometimes repeated; as,

Que béllos lívros que têndes; what fine books you have got! *que bélla que he a virtúde!* how beautiful is virtue!

Que is sometimes followed by *de;* as, *que de lóucos ha no múndo!* how many fools there are in the world!

Que is used after nouns denoting time, and is sometimes Englished by *when* or *since*, &c. and sometimes left out; as

O día que elle partío, the day when he set out.

Quánto têmpo há que estáis em Lóndres? how long have you lived in London? How long is it since you lived in London?

Ha dez ánnos que faz a mésma cóusa, he has done the same thing these ten years.

Há dez ânnos que morrêo, he died ten years ago.

Que is sometimes rendered into English by *because*, as you may see in Camoens, canto 2. stanza xvi. *que levemênte hum ânimo*, and sometimes by *that, to the end that, in order to;* as you may see ibid. stanza xvii. *que cômo víssem, que no río*, &c.

Que before *se* in the beginning of a sentence, is a redundancy not expressed in English; as *que se vós dizêis que*, if you say that, &c.

Que is used after the conjunction *a pênas* (scarce *or* hardly) and is Englished by *but;* as, *apênas acabôu de fallár que lógo morrêo;* he had hardly done speaking but he expired.

Que sometimes is preceded by *desórte, de manêira, de gêito*, and then it is Englished by *so that, in such a manner, insomuch that;* as *êu o farêi de sórte que fiquêis contênte*, I will do it so that, *or* in that manner that, you shall be contented.

De véras.

De véras signifies *in earnest;* but sometimes it is Englished by *no sure; de véras! naõ o pósso crêr*, no sure!

Hóra.

Hóra, or *óra*, is an interjection that serves to encourage, as we have seen above; but when it is repeated, it is Englished by *sometimes, one while, another while;* as, *ora está bem, óra está mal*, sometimes he is well, sometimes ill, *êlle óra está de hum parecêr, e ora de ôutro*, he is now of one opinion, and next moment of another. *Por óra*, signifies *now, for the present.*

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Portuguese Orthography; and first of Capitals and Stops.

I. THE proper names, as well as the surnames, always begin with a capital.

II. The names of nations, kingdoms, and provinces, also begin with a capital; as, *Francéz*, French; *Ingléz*, English, &c.

III. All names of dignities, and degrees, and honours, require a capital; as *Rêy*, *Bíspo*, &c. King, Bishop, &c.

IV. At the beginning of a period, as well as of a verse, the first letter is always a capital.

V. The names of arts and sciences, as well as those of kindred, begin with a capital.

Of Stops.

The use of stops, or points, is to distinguish words and sentences.

The Portuguese have six stops, or pauses, viz.

1. The *pônto finál*, the same as our period or full stop (.), and is used at the end of a period, to shew that the sentence is completely finished.

2. The *dôus pôntos*, which is our colon (:), and is the pause made between two members of a period; that is, when the sense is complete, but the sentence not ended.

3. The *pônto e vírgula*, our semicolon (;), and denotes that short pauses which is made in the subdivision of the members or parts of a sentence.

4. The *pônto de interrogaçám*, the point of interrogation thus (?).

5. *Pónto de admiraçám*, the point of admiration thus (!).

6. The *vírgulá*, the same with our comma (,) and is the shortest pause or resting, in speech, being used chiefly to distinguish nouns, verbs, and adverbs, as also the parts of a shorter sentence.

The conjunction *e*, the relative *qual*, and the disjunctions *ou* and *nem*, require a comma before them.

The Portuguese make use also of a parenthesis, thus ( ); but they do not make use of the diæresis, called by their printers *créma* (¨); they make use also of the *ángulo*, thus ʌ, called by the printers *caret*.

The apostrophe, or, as they call it, *viracênto*, likewise takes place in this as in other languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easy pronunciation of words, by cutting off an antecedent vowel; as, *d' ármas*, *d' élvas*, and not *dármas*, *délvas*, &c. But this is somewhat excusable in cases wherein, by use, they seem to be one word; as *néstanéste*, *désta*, *déste*, *nalgúm*, *daquélle*, *nélle*, *nélla*, *daquí*, *dalí*, *atequí*, *atególa*; and not *em élle*, *de élle*, &c.

Of the Accents.

The accent, which is the very soul of articulated words, is a sound of the voice by which we pronounce some syllables shorter, others longer.

I intend to speak here only of the accents the Portuguese ought to make use of, according to *Madureíra*, in his *Portuguese Orthography*.

The Portuguese indeed are acquainted with three accents, but they ought to make use of two only, namely, the acute, which descends from the right to the left (´), and the circumflex, thus (^).

1. The acute serves to prolong the pronunciation, and is put, according to *Madureíra*, on the third person singular of the future tense; as *amará*, *lerá*, &c.

2. On the penultima of the preterpluperfect tense of the indicative mood; as, *amára*, *ensinára*, &c.

3. The acute accent ought to be put also on the penultima of the third persons of the present tense of the verb *renunciár*, *pronunciár*, *duvidár*, &c. thus *renuncía*, *pronuncía*, *duvída*, &c. that they may

be distinguished from the nouns *renúncia*, *pronúncia*, *dúvida*, &c. The same accent is also put on *está*, *nó*, to distinguish them from *ésta*, this, and *no*, in the.

The vowel *o* has two sounds, according to the two accents that may be put on it; one open, when it is marked with the acute accent, and is pronounced like *o* in *store*; the other close, when it is marked with the circumflex accent, and then is pronounced like *u* in *stumble*.

There are many nouns, both substantive and adjective, which are accented in the singular with the circumflex, and in the plural with the acute; and the adjectives that have two terminations, particularly those ending in *oso*, *osa*, must be accented (in the singular) with the circumflex in the masculine, and with the acute in the feminine; as,

Fôgo, fire; plural, *fógos*.
Fôrno, oven; plural, *fórnos*.
ôlho, eye; plural, *ólhos*.
ôvo, egg; plural, *óvos*.
ôsso, bone; plural, *óssos*.
Pôço, well; plural, *póços*.
Pôrco, hog; plural, *pórcos*.
Rôgo, prayer; plural, *rógos*. And so *fôjo*, *tôrno*, *formôso*, *sequiôso*, *suppôsto*, *pôvo*, *tôrto*, *tôrta*, *copiôso*, &c.

The following keep the circumflex accent in both numbers; *bôlo*, *bôlos*; *bôjo*, *bôjos*; *bôto*, *bôtos*; *côco*, *côcos*; *chôro*, *chôros*; *côto*, *côtos*; *fôrro*, *fôrros*; *gôrdo*, *gôrdos*; *gôsto*, *gôstos*; *gôzo*, *gôzos*; *lôbo*, *lôbos*; *môço*, *môços*; *nôjo*, *nôjos*; *pôtro*, *pôtros*; *tôlo*, *tôlos*; *ferrôlho*, *ferrôlhos*; *rapôso*, *rapôsos*; *arrôz*, *arrôzes*; *algôz*, *algôzes*, &c.

On the contrary, the following keep the acute accent in both numbers: *cópo*, *cópos*; *módo*, *módos*; *nósso*, *nóssos*; *vósso*, *vóssos*, &c.

When the accent circumflex is put on the *ê*, then the *e* is pronounced like the French masculine *e*; but when *e* is accented with the acute accent, then

the *e* is to be pronounced like the *e* open in French, and it is exceeding sonorous and long. See the pronunciation of the vowel *e*.

Nouns ending in *az*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, must have the acute accent on the vowel before the *z*; as, *rapáz*, a boy; *nóz*, a walnut; *alcaçúz*, licorice; but you must except *arrôz*, rice; *algôz*, a hang-man.

Nouns ending in *ez* generally have the circumflex accent; as *mêz*, a month; *marquêz*, a marquis; &c. except the surnames; as, *A'lvarez*, *Antúnez*, *López*, *Henríquez*, *Gonçálvez*, *Rodríguez*, *Pérez*, *Núnez*, *Téllez*, &c.

Some Observations upon the Portuguese Orthography.

Both the Portuguese orthographers and best authors vary so much in their rules and ways of writing, that it is a hard matter, and quite out of any grammarian's way, to clear up this part of the Portuguese grammar: since it requires no less authority than that of the Royal Portuguese Academy. However, not to omit such a material part of the Grammar, I shall present the learners with the following observations.

I. When the Latin words from which the Portuguese are derived, begin with a *b*, the Portuguese likewise must begin with it; therefore you must write and pronounce the *b*, in the following words, *bom*, *bondáde*, *bem*, *bénto*, &c. because they are derived from *bonus*, *bonitas*, &c, But you must except *baínha*, *bexíga*, *báirro*, which begin with a *b*, though they are derived from *vagina*, *vesica*, *vicus*.

II. Likewise if the Latin words begin with a *v*, the Portuguese words derived from them must also begin with it; as *vída*, *vivêr*, *varrêr*, *vêr*, *vínho*, &c. from *vita*, *vivere*, *verrere*, *videre*, *vinum*, &c.

Though *b* ought to be pronounced only by closing the lips, and *v* by touching the superior teeth with the inferior lips; yet, by a certain affinity between

these two letters, in speaking there is a great confusion in the pronunciation of them in the province of *Entre Dóuro e Minho*: and this confusion has not been peculiar to the Portuguese language, because *Nebrixa* says, in his *Castilian Orthography*, that in his time some Spaniards could hardly make any distinction between these two letters.

III. The *p* found in some words originally Latin, is changed in Portuguese into a *b*; as, *cábra*, *cabéllo*, *cabéça*, &c. from *capra*, *capillus*, *caput*, &c.

IV. The Portuguese generally make use of the *y* in the following words: *ay*, *réy*, *fréy*, *léy*, *mãy*, *páy*, *máyo*, *méyo*, and some others.

Bluteau says, that we must make use of the *y* in words having a Greek origin; as, *sy'llaba*, *Chrysopéia*, *pyrámide*, *poly'gono*, *hydrographía*, *hydrópico*, *phy'sica*, *hypérbole*, *hypócrita*, *Apócrypho*, &c.

V. The *ph* are used by the Portuguese in some words taken from the Greek; as, *philosophía*, *philología*, *Philadélphia*, *epitáphio*, &c.

VI. The *r* in Portuguese has two pronunciations, one soft, expressed by a single *r*, as in *arádo*, a plough; and after the consonants, *b*, *c*. *d*, *f*. *g*, *p*, *t*; and another hard, in which two *rr* are used; as in *bárro*, *cárro*, &c. But you must observe,

1. That in the beginning of a word two *rr* must never be used, because then the *r* is always pronounced hard in Portuguese; as in the words *rémo*, *ríco*, *róda*, &c.

2. When the consonants *l*, *n*, *s*, are before the *r*, either in a single word, or a compound one, this letter must never be doubled, because then its sound is always strong; as in *abalroár*, *enriquecêr*, *hônra*, *desregrádo*, *Henríque*, *Israelíta*, &c.

3. The *r* after a *b*, is also pronounced hard in compounds with the prepositions *ab*, *ob*, *sub*, and yet is not doubled; as in *abrogár*, *obrepçaõ*, *subrepçaõ*.

VII. The *s* is never doubled in the beginning of words, nor after the consonants; therefore you

must write *sarár*, *sabêr*, *falsaménte*, *fálso*, *mánso*, &c.

The *s* is pronounced like *z* between two vowels, in words derived from the Latin, as well as in those that end in *ósa*, and *óso*; as *músa*, *cáso*, *ríso*, *amorôso*, *cuidadôso*, *cása*, &c. You must also observe, that *cosér* signifies *to sew*, but *cozêr* signifies *to boil* or *bake*.

VIII. *Th* are generally used in words derived from the Greek; as, *amphitheátro*, *atheísta*, *theólogo*, *lethárgo*, *méthodo*, &c.

Th is also used in the Portuguese preposition *athé*; though some write it thus *até*.

IX. When *pt* is found in Latin words, it must be kept in the Portuguese derived from them; as, *ápto*, *inépto*, *óptimo*, &c. from *aptus*, *ineptus*, *optimus*, &c. You must make the same observation about *ct*.

X. *Ch*, is sounded like *k*, in words derived from the Greek; as, *orchánjo*, *archidúque*, *Chrysóstomo*, *chrysól*, *chrisólogo*, *Christóvaõ*, *monarchía*, &c. These words must be written with *ch*, in order to preserve to the eye the etymology of words.

Note, that *ch* in words that are not derived from the Greek is pronounced like *sh* in the English words *shawl*, *shoot*, &c. but as some confound the *ch* with the *x*, and begin with *x* those words that should begin with *ch*, I thought it necessary to make a collection of them.

Words beginning with

CHA.

Chá
Cháa
Cháca
Chacína
Cháço
Chacóta
Chafaríz
Chága
Chalúpa
Châma
Chamalóte
Chamár
Chamaríz
Chambaõ
Chamejár
Chamiça
Chaminé
Chamuscár
Chânça
Chancéla
Chancelaría
Chancelér
Chançonêta
Chanquêta
Chantágem
Chantrádo
Chântre
Chá
Chápa
Chapádo
Chapeádo
Chapeléta
Chapéo

Chapím
Chapinhár
Chapúz
Charaméla
Charamelêiro
Chárco
Charnéca
Charnêira
Charóla
Chárpa
Chárro
Charrúa
Chásco
Chasôna
Chatím
Cháto
Chavaõ
Chavascál
Cháve
Chaválha
Chavêta
Chavínha.

CHE.

Chêa, *or* Chéya
Chéfe
Chegár
Cheriár, *and its derivatives.*
Cherívia
Chérne.

CHI.

Chiár
Chibárro
Chíbo
Chícharos
Chichárro
Chichélos
Chicória
Chicóte
Chífra
Chifrár
Chífre
Chilindraõ
Chilrár
Chimbéo
Chineár
Chinchêiro
Chinchôrro
Chinéla
Chiquêiro
Chíspa
Chispár
Chíste
Chíta.

CHO.

Chóça
Chóca
Chocalhár
Chocálho
Chocár
Chocarreár
Chocarríce
Chôco *and* Chócos
Chocoláte
Chofrádo
Chófre
Chóldabólda
Chóque
Chorár
Chorrílho
Chôrro
Chovêr
Chôupa
Choupâna
Chôupo, *or* Chôpo
Chourício
Choutár.

CHU.

Chúça
Chupamél
Chupár
Chuchurriár
Chûço
Chúfa
Chumáço
Chumbár
Chúmbo
Churriaõ
Churúme
Chúsma
Chúva
Chúveiro.

CHY.

Chy'pre.

The following words begin with *ce* and not *se*.

Cêa
Ceádo
Ceár.

CEB.

Cebôla
Ceboll
Cebolínho.

CED.

Cedavím
Cedéla
Cedénho
Cedêr
Cedílho
Cêdo
Cédro
Cédula.

CEG.

Céga
Cegár
Cégo
Cegônha
Cegúde
Ceguéira.

CEI.

Ceifa
Ceifaõ
Ceiraõ

Ceirínha
Ceivár.

CEL.

Celàda
Celebraçaõ
Celebrár
Célebre
Celéste
Celestiál
Celestrína
Celêusma
Célga
Célha
Célho
Celibádo
Celibáto
Celícola
Celidónia
Célla
Cellêiro
Celleirêiro
Céltas.

CEM.

Cem
Cemitério.

CEN.

Cenáculo
Cêno.
Cenóbio
Cenobítico
Cenotáphia
Cenôura
Cenráda
Cenrêira
Cênso
Censôr
Censúra
Censurádo
Censurár
Centáuro
Centêna
Centeál
Centésimo
Centêyo
Cênto
Centóculo
Centopéa
Centrál
Cêntro
Cêntuplo
Centúria
Centuriaõ
Céo

CEP.

Cêpa
Cepílho
Cêpo
Céptro.

CER.

Cêra
Ceraferário
Cerbéro
Cêrca
Cercádo
Cercár
Cercadôr
Cercadúra
Cérce
Cerceádo
Cerceár
Cercíllo
Cêrco
Cerdôso
Cérebro
Ceréijas
Cercijál
Ceremónia
Ceremoniál
Cerièiro
Cérne
Cernélha
Ceról
Cerôulas
Cerquêiro
Cerraçaõ
Cerrár
Cerralhêiro
Cerrálho
Cerrárse
Cêrro
Cérta
Cérto
Certãa
Certêza
Certída
Certificár
Cérva
Cervál
Cervêja
Cervílhas
Cervíz
Cerúda
Cerúleo
Cérvo
Cerzír.

CES.

César
Cesaréa
Cêsma
Cesmaría
Cesmêiro
Cessaõ
Cessaçaõ
Cessár
Cêsta
Cestínha
Cestínho
Cestêiro
Cêsto
Cesúra

CEV.

Céva
Cevâda
Cevadál
Cevadêira
Cevadôuro
Cevár

CEZ.

Cezaõ
Cezimbar.

N. B. *Cerrar*, signifies *to shut*, or *shut up*; but *serrár* signifies *to sáw*, to cut timber or other matter with a saw.

The following words must have *ci*, and not *si*, in their beginning.

CIA.

Ciárse
Ciática.

CIB.

Cíba
Cibálho
Cibório.

CIC.

Cicatríz
Cícero
Ciciôso.

CID.

Cidadaõ
Cidadaõs
Cidáde
Cidadôa
Cídra
Cidráda
Cidraõ
Cidrêira.

CIE.

Ciência.

CIF.

Cifár
Cifra
Cifrár.

CIG.

Cigâna
Cigâno
Cigárra
Cigúde
Cigurélha.

CIL.

Ciláda
Cílhas
Cilhár
Cilícia
Cilício
Cilládas.

CIM.

Círna
Cimálha
Címbalo
Cimêyra
Cimênto
Cimitárra
Címo.

CIN.

Cinca
Cincár
Cíncho
Cínco
Cincoênta
Cingidôuro
Cingír
Cíngulo
Cinnamômo
Cínta
Cintillár
Cintúra
Cínza
Cinzênto
Cinzêiro.

CIO.

Cío
Ciôso
Cióşa.

CIP.

Cipó
Cipréste
Cipriâno.

CIR.

Cirânda
Cirandágem
Cirandár
Círco
Circulaçaõ
Circulâr
Círculo
Circúito
Circumcidár
Circumcisáõ
Circumferência
Circumspécto
Circumspécçaõ
Circumstância
Circumstântes
Círio
Cirurgîa
Cirurgiaõ

Cirzír.

CIR.

Ciscár
Císco
Císma
Cismatico
Cîsne
Cisterciênse
Cistérna

Citaçaõ
Citádo
Citár
Citeriôr
Cíthara
Citharêdo
Citríno
Cível
Civíl
Civilidáde.

CIU.

Ciúme
Ciúmes

CIZ.

Cizânia
Çiziraõ.

XI. No Portuguese word begins with *ço*; but according to *Madureíra*, there are some that begin with *ça*, and *çu*; as *çapáto*, *çapateíro*, *çargáço*, *çúja*, *çugidáde*, *çúmo*, *çúrra*, *çurrár*, and some others.

The *ç* is used after *p* in those Portuguese words that have in their Latin root *pt*; as *descrípçaõ*, *accepçaõ*, &c. from *descriptio*, *acceptio*, &c.

Of Double Letters.

It is to be generally observed, that the consonants are doubled in those Portuguese words, whose Latin roots have likewise the same double consonants; as *accelerár*, *accênto*, *occidênte*, &c. from *accélero*, *accentus*, *occidens*, &c *affligír*, *affluéncia*, *affirmaçaõ*, &c. from *affligo*, *affluentia*, *affirmatio*, &c. as you will see in the following collections.

B.

B is to be doubled in *abbáde*, *abbaciál*, *abbadía*, *abbadéssa*, *abbreviatúra*, *abbreviár*, and some others.

C.

C is to be doubled in the following words, and some of their derivatives.

A.
Abstracçaõ
Acçaõ

Accênto
Acçentuár
Accepçaõ

Acceíta
Acceitaçãõ
Acceitadôr

Acceitár
Acceſſaõ
Acceſsível
Accéſſo
Acceſſório
Accidentál
Accidênte
Accelerádа
Acceleráde
Accelerár
Acclamaçaõ
Acclamár
Accommodaçaõ
Accomodádo
Accommodár
Accumulaçaõ
Accumuládo
Accumulár
Accuſaçaõ
Accuſádo
Accuſadôr
Accuſár
Accuſatívo
Adſtricçaõ
Afflicçaõ
Attracçaõ.

B.

Báccho
Bôcca
Boccáça
Boccadínho
Boccádo
Boccál.

C.

Circumſpécçaõ
Coacçaõ
Cocçaõ
Collecçaõ
Conſtricçaõ
Conſtrucçaõ
Contracçaõ
Correcçaõ.

D.

Decocçaõ
Deducçaõ
Desjecçaõ
Deſoccupaçáõ
Deſoccupádo
Deſoccupár
Detracçaõ
Dicçaõ
Diccionário
Direcçaõ
Diſtrácçaõ.

E.

Eccêntrico
Eccleſiáſtico
Erecçaõ
Evicçaõ
Exacçaõ
Extracçaõ.

F.

Fácçaõ
Fícçaõ
Frácçaõ

I.

Impeccabilidáde
Impeccável
Inacceſsível
Indicçaõ
Indúcçaõ
Infécçaõ
Infracçaõ
Inſpecçaõ
Inſtrúcçaõ
Intellécçaõ
Interjécçaõ
Interſécçaõ
Introducçáõ.

M.

Manuducçaõ

O.

Objecçáõ
Obſtrucçáõ
Occaſiáõ
Occaſionár
Occáſo
Occidentál
Occidênte
Occíduo
Occiſáõ
Occurrêr
Occultamênte
Occultádo
Occultár
Occúlto
Occupaçaõ
Occupádo
Occupár
Occurrência.
Occurrênte.

P.

Peccádo
Peccadôr
Peccadôra
Peccânte
Peccár
Predicçáõ
Preoccupár
Producçaõ
Projecçáo
Profecçáõ
Putrefacçáõ.

R.

Rarefacçáõ
Recondacçaõ
Refecçaõ
Refracçaõ
Reſeccaçaõ
Reſtricçaõ

S.

Satisfacçáõ
Seccár
Sêcco
Secçaõ

Seccúra
Sôcco
Soccorrêr
Soccôrro
Subtracçáõ
Succedêr
Successaõ
Succésso
Successívo
Successível
Successôr
Succintamênte
Succínto
Súcco
Succôso
Súccubo.

T.

Transacçáõ
Tradacçáõ

V.

Vácca
Vaccáda
Vaccúm.

D.

This letter is doubled in the following words: *addiçaõ, addicionádo, addicionár, additamênto, additár.*

F.

F is to be doubled in

Affabilidáde
Affável
Affadigádo
Affadigár
Affagádo
Affagár
Affágos
Affamádo
Affamárse
Affastádo
Affastár
Affazendádo
Affazêrse.
Affeminádo
Affeminárse
Afferrádamènte
Afferrádo
Afferrár
Afferretoádo
Afferetoár
Afferrolhádo
Afferrolhár
Afferventádo
Afferventár
Affervorádo
Affervorár.
Affirmádamênte
Affirmadôr
Affirmár
Affistulárse
Affixár.

AFFL.

Afflamárſe
Afflicçaõ
Afflícto
Affligír
Affluência

AFFE.

Affeádo
Affeár
Affeamênto
Affectádamênte
Affectádo
Affectár
Affécto
Affectuôso
Affeiçaõ
Affeiçoádo
Affeiçoár
Affeite
Affeitár

AFFI.

Affiádo
Affiár
Affidalgádo
Affidalgárse
Affigurádo
Affigurár
Affilháda
Affiladôr
Affilár
Affinádo
Affinár
Affincádo
Affincâr

AFFO.

Affocinhár
Affogádo
Affogadôr
Affogár
Affogamênto
Affogueádo
Affogueár
Afforádo
Afforadôr
Afforár
Afforamênto
Afformentár
Afformoſeádo
Afformoſeár.

Affoutádo
Affoutár
Affoutêza
Affôuto.

AFFR.

Affracár
Afframengádo
Affreguesádo
Affreguesárse
Affrônta
Affrontádo
Affrontamênto
Affrontár
Affrontósamênte
Affrontôso
Affroxádamênte
Affroxádo
Affroxar.

AFFU.

Affugentádo
Affugentár.

Affumádo
Affumár
Affundádo
Affundárse
Affundírse
Affuzillár.

DI.

Diffamádo
Diffamár
Differênça
Differençár
Differênças
Differênte
Differêntemênte
Diffícil
Difficuldáde
Difficultár
Difficultósamênte
Difficultôso
Diffusaõ
Diffusamênte
Diffúso

E.

Effectivamênte
Effectívo
Effêito
Effeituár
Efficazmênte
Efficácia
Efficáz
Efficiênte
Effígie

O.

Offendèr
Offerecèr
Offuscár.

S.

Suffocár
Suffrágio, *and some others*.

G.

This letter is to be doubled in

Aggravânte
Aggravár
Aggravádo
Aggrávo
Aggressôr
Exaggeraçaõ
Exaggeradôr
Exaggerádo
Exaggerár
Suggeiír
Suggestaõ
Suggerído.

L.

L is to be doubled in

AB.

Aballádo
Aballadôr
Aballár
Abállo
Aballisádo
Abilisadôr
Aballisár.

AC.

Acafelladôr
Acafelladúra
Acafellár
Acallentádo
Acallentár
Acapelládo.

AF.

Affilládo
Affilladôr
Affillár.

AL.

Allegaçaõ
Allegádo
Allegár
Allegoría
Allegórico
Allegorisár
Alleiúia
Alliviár
Allucinaçaõ

Allucinár
Alludír
Allumiár
Allusaõ.

AM.

Amantelládo
Amarélo
Amarellecêrse
Amerellidaõ
Amolládo
Amollár
Amollecêr
Amollecído
Amollentár
Ampôlla.

AN.

Annulaçaõ
Annullár.

AP.

Appellaçaõ
Appellânte
Appellár
Appellidár
Appellído.

AQ.

Aquélla
Aquêlle
Aquellôutro
Aquíllo.

AR.

Armêllas
Arrepelládo
Arrepellaõ
Arrepellár.

AT.

Atropelládo
Atropellár.

AV.

Avillanádo.

BA.

Bacelláda
Bacêllo
Barbélla
Barrélla.

BE.

Béłla
Béllamênte
Béllo
Bellêza
Belleguím
Béllico
Bellicôso
Bellígero
Belluíno.

BU.

Búlla
Bullário.

CA.

Callíope
Camíllo
Cavillaçaõ
Cavillósamênte
Caballína
Cadélla
Cadellínha
Cállo
Camartéllo
Cambadélla
Cancélla
Capélla
Capellaõ
Capelláda
Capellanía
Capêllo
Capillár
Castélla
Castéllo
Casúllo
Casúlla
Caválla
Cavallaría
Cavallêiro
Cavállo.

CE.

Cebôlla
Cebollál
Cebollínho
Chancellér
Chancellaría
Célla
Cellêiro.

CL.

Clavellína

CO.

Codicíllo
Cólla
Colládo
Collár
Collêira
Colláçaõ
Collaterál
Colléçaõ
Colléçta
Collectívo
Collectôr
Colléga
Collegiáda
Collegiál
Collégio
Colligár
Colligír
Colly'rio
Cóllo
Collocaçaõ
Collocár
Collóquio

COM.

Compellír
Compostélla
Constellaçao
Corrollário
Covêllo

Courélla

DE.

Déll a
Déllas
Dêlle
Dêlles
Degolládo
Degollaçáõ
Degollár
Degolladôuro.

DI.

Diſtillaçáõ
Diſtilladôr
Diſtillár.

DO.

Donzélla.

DU.

Duéllo

EB.

Ebulliçaõ

ELL.

E'lla
E'llas
E'lle
E'lles
Elléboro
Ellípſe
Ellíptico.

EM.

Emolliênte
Emollír

EN.

Enallâge
Encapelládo
Encapellár
Encaſtellàdo
Encaſtellár
Encelleirár.

EQ.

Equipollência
Equipollênte.

ES.

Eſcabelládo
Eſcabéllo
Eſcudélla
Eſcudellaõ
Eſtillaçaõ
Eſtilládo
Eſtillár
Eſtillicídio
Eſtrêlla
Eſtrelládo.

EX.

Excellência
Excellênte
Expellír.

FA.

Fálla
Fallácha
Fallácia
Falladôr
Fallár
Fallecêr
Fallecído
Fallência
Fallído.

FE.

Ferdizêllo

FL.

Flagellânte
Flagéllo.

FO.

Fólle
Follículo
Fontéllo.

GA.

Gabélla
Galládo
Galladúra
Gallár
Gallêgo
Gállia
Gallicádo
Gallicár
Gállico
Gallínha
Gallinháço
Gallinhêira
Gallinhêiro
Gallinhóla
Gallióploi
Gallióta
Gallíza
Gállo
Gamélla
Gazélla.

GO.

Gólla.

HE.

Helleſpônto
Hendecaſy'llabo
Hollânda
Hypállage.

JA.

Janélla
Janellêira
Janellínha
Jarméllo.

I.

Illaçaõ
Illaqueár
Illatívo
Illegítimo
Illéſo
Illiçar
Illiciadôr

Illícitamênte
Illícito
Illocável
Illudído
Illudír
Illuminaçaõ
Illuminádo
Illuminár
Illuminatívo
Illusaõ
Illúso
Illustraçaõ
Illustrár
Illústre
Illustríssimo
Illy'rio
Imbélla
Impellír
Incapilláto
Infallível
Inintelligível
Intervállo.

L.

Libéllo
Lordêllo
Lousélla.

M.

Marcélla
Marcellína
Marcéllo
Martelláda
Martellár
Martéllo
Martellínho
Malfallânte
Mallográdo
Mamillár
Medúlla
Mellífluo
Méllo
Metállico
Millenário
Millésimo
Mirandélla
Miscellânia
Mólle
Mollèira
Mollèza
Mollíce
Mollidaõ
Mollificânte
Mollificár
Mollinár
Monosy'llabo.

N.

Nélla
Néllas
Nêlle
Nêlles
Nigélla
Novélla
Novelleiro
Núlla
Nullidáde
Nullo
Nuzellos.

O.

Odivéllas
Ollaria
Ollèiro
Ouguélla.

P.

Pálla
Palládio
Pallante
Pállas
Palliádo
Palliar
Pallidêz
Pállido
Pállio
Paradélla
Paralláxe
Parallélo
Paralélloogrâmo
Pélle
Pellesínha
Pellíca
Pellícula
Panélla
Pimpinélla
Phíllis
Pollegáda
Pollegár
Pollez
Polluçaõ
Pollúto
Polysy'llabo
Portacóllo
Portélla
Postílla
Pousafólles
Prunélle
Pulmélla
Pupílla
Pupíllo
Pusillanimidáde
Pusillânime.

Q.

Quartélla.

R.

Rabadélla
Rebelládo
Rebellaõ
Rebellárse
Rebelliaõ
Réllla
Rodofólle
Rodopéllo
Rosélla
Ruélla

S.

Sélla
Sellàdo
Selladôr
Sellagaõ
Sellár

Sellêiro
Sêllo
Sentinélla
Siby'lla
Sigíllo
Sigilládo
Sobrepellíz
Sugillaçaõ
Sy'llaba
Syllabático
Syllábico
Syllogisár
Syllogísmo.

T.

Tabélla
Tabelliaõ
Tabelliôa
Titillaçaõ
Titillár
Tôlla
Tollíce
Tôllo
Torcicóllo
Tranquillidáde
Tranquíllo
Trélla
Trisy'llabo
Tunicélla
Túllio

V.

Vacillaçaõ
Vacillânte
Vacillár
Válla
Valládo
Vallár
Válle
Vassallágem
Vassállo

VE.

Velleidáde
Vellicaçaõ
Vellicár
Véllo
Vellôso
Vellúdo
Verdesélla

VI.

Vílla
Villanía
Villaãmênte
Villaõ
Villãõ
Vitélla
Vitellíno.

N. B. *Annullar* signifies to *annul;* but *annulár* is an adjective, and signifies *annular*, or in the form of a ring. *L* is doubled by some in the words *pelo, pela,* (for) thus *péllo, pélla.*

M.

M is to be doubled in

Accommodár
Commemoraçaõ
Commênda
Commensurár
Commentár
Commerciár
Commettár
Comminaçaõ
Commiseraçaõ
Commissaõ
Commissário
Commoçaõ
Cómmodo
Commovêr
Commúm
Commungár
Communicár
Communidáde
Commutár
Consummár
Desaccommodár
Descómmodo
Dilêmma
Emmadeirár
Emmadeixár
Emmagrecêr
Emmanquecêr
Emmassár
Emmudecêr
Engommár
Epigrâmma
Flámma
Flammânte
Flâmmula
Gêmma
Gômma
Grammática
Immaculáda
Immanênte
Immarcessível
Immateriál
Immatúro

Immediátamênte
Immemorável
Immênso
Immensurável
Immobilidáde
Immoderádaménte
Immodésto
Immódico
Immolar
Immortalisár
Immortificádo
Immóvel
Immudável
Immúndo
Immunidáde
Immutável
Incómmodo
Incommunicável
Incommutável
Inflammár
Mâmma
Mammár
Recommendâr
Sômma
Sommár
Súmma
Summário
Summidáde
Symmetría, *and some others*

N. B. *M*, and not *n*, is always made use of before *b*, *m*, *p*.

N.

N is likewise doubled in several verbs compounded with *an*, *en*, *in*, *con*, as *annelár*, *annéxa*, *annaõ*, *annáta*, *annél*, *A'nna*, *ânno*, *annulár*, *connéxaõ*, *connéxo*, *depennár*, *empennár*, *ennastrár*, *ennegrecêr*, *innáto*, *innavegável*, *innocência*, *manná*, *Mariânna*, *pânno*, *pênna*, when it signifies a pen, *tyránno*, and some others.

P.

This letter is to be doubled in words beginning with *p* compounded with the Latin prepositions *ad*, *ob*, *sub*; as *apparáto*, *apparecêr*, *oppôr*, *opprimír*, *suppôr*, *Philíppe*, *póppa*, &c.

N. B. *Páppa* signifies *pap*, or a sort of spoon-meat for children; but *pápa* signifies *the Pope*.

R.

The *r* is doubled in such words as are strongly pronounced in the middle; as *guérra*, *arrancár*, *arredár*, *arrimár*, *arruinár*, *carregár*, *cárro*, &c.

S.

The *s* is to be doubled in the Portuguese superlatives, because it is doubled in the Latin roots; it is also doubled in the following words:

Abbadêssa	Assaltár	Nósso
Condêssa	Asséyo	Nóssa
Assár	Assessôr	E'ssa
Assanhár	Assím	E'sse
Assegurár	Assistír	I'sso
Assignár	Assombrár	O'sso
Assolár	Assoprár	Passeár
Accésso	Assobiár	Passár
Aggressôr	Assustár	Reméssa
Appressár	Atravessár	Ingrésso, *and many others.*
Amassár	Necessitár	
Arremessár	Nísso	

T

T is doubled in the following words and their derivatives:

Attemperár	Attribuír	Permittír
Attençaõ	Attribúto	Promettêr
Attendêr	Attriçáõ	Remettêr
Attentár	Attríto	Remettír
Attenuaçáõ	Commettêr	Sétta
Attenuár	Demittír	Settênta
Attónito	Enfittár	Settecêntos
Attráccáõ	Fítta	Transmittír
Attractívo	Intrommettêr	
Attrahír	Omíttír	

Of the Quantity of Syllables and their Sound.

Of Words that make their Penultima in a.

N. B. You must remember what we have said above about the accents.

All words ending in *ábo, ába, áco, áca, ácho, ácha, áço, áça, ádo, áda, áfo, áfa, ágo, ága, ágem, ágre, álho, álha, álo, ála,* have the penultimas long; as *diábo, mangába, macáco, macáca, cavácá, mingícho, garnácha, madráço, linháça, amádo, punháda,* (except *relámpago, antropófago, lêvado,* and *cágado,* which are short in the penultima), *abáfo, abáfa, saramágo, adága,* (except *stâmago,* or *estômago, âmago, amáraco,* which

are short,) *trabálho, toálha, badálo*, (except *anómalo, búfalo, escándalo*, which are short), *tanchágem, vinágre.*

Words ending in *ámo, áma, ânho, ânha, âno, âna*, have their penultimas long; as, *escámo, courâma, castánho, arânha, engâno, pestâna;* except *pâmpano, tŷmpano, bígamo.*

Words ending in *ápo, ápa, áque, áro, ára*, have their penultimas long; as, *guardanápo, solápa, basbáque, empáro, seára;* except *cântaro, púcaro, láparo, báfaro, lúparo, pífaro, pícaro, cámera, tâmara, pássaro, Lázaro, bárbaro, cócaras*, &c.

Words ending in *árro, árra, áto, áta, ávo, áva, áxo, áxas*, make the penultima long; as, *bizárro, bizárra, biscáto, pataráta, escrávo, escráva*, (except *côncava*, and *bisavô*), *cartáxo, tarráxa.*

Of Words that make their Penultima in e.

All words ending in *ébo, êba, êdo, êda, éfa*, have their penultima long; as, *mancêbo, mancêba, azêdo, azêda, sanéfa.*

Words ending in *éfe* are long; as, *magaréfe:* as well as those ending in *éco, éca, éço, éça;* as *bonéco, bonéca, cabêço, cabêça.*

Words ending in *égo, éga*, are long; as, *morcégo, socêgo, relégo, entréga, alléga;* except *cónego, tráfego, côrrego, sôfrego, pêcego, fôlego, bútega, cócegas.*

Words ending in *éjo, éja, élo, éla*, are long; as, *caranguéjo, bocêjo, igrêja, Alentéjo, envéja, martélo, queréla.*

Words ending in *êmo, éma, êno, êna*, are long; as, *suprêmo, postêma, acêno, açucêna;* except *apózema.*

N. B. The penultima is short in the word *íngreme.*

Words ending in *êpo, épa, épe, éque, éro, éra*, are long; as, *decêpo, carépa, julépe, moléque, sevéro, sevéra, tempêro*, (when a noun): and *tempéro*, (when a verb) except *áspero, próspero.*

Words ending in *êso, êsa, êzo, éza, éto, éta, éte, évo, éva, éve*, are long; as, *acêso, acêsa, desprêzo,*

grandêza and *despréso*, (when a verb) *entremêto*, *galhêta*, *ramalhête*, *bofête*, *atrêvo*, *atrêva*, *atrêve*.

Of Words that make their Penultima in i.

Words ending in *íbo*, *íba*, *íbe*, *ícho*, *ícha*, *íche*, *íco*, *íca*, *íço*, *íça*, *íce*, *ído*, *ída*, *ífo*, *ífa*, *ífe*, have the penultima long; as, *estríbo*, *arríba*, *arríbe*, *esguícho*, *esguícha*, *azevíche*, *paníco*, (a sort of stuff) *botíca*; except *mecânico*, *ecuménico*, *crítico*, *político*, *pânico*, (panic), and some others borrowed from the Greek and Latin. In *I'ço*, *íça*, &c. as, *rolíço*, *preguíça*, *velhíce*, *marído*, *medída*; except *húmido*, *pállido*, *hórrido*, and some others derived from the Latin. In *ífo*, *ífa*, &c. as *borrífo*, *alcatífa*, *patífe*.

Words ending in *ígo* and *íga*, are long; as, *amígo*, *amíga*, except, *pródigo*, *pródiga*.

Words ending in *íjo*, and *íja*, are long; as, *afflíjo*, *artemíja*.

Words ending in *ílho*, *ílha*, are long; as, *atílho*, *beatílha*. Others ending in *ílo*, *íla*, as, *gorgomílo*, *perfíla*, *desfíla*.

Words ending in *ímo*, *íma*, have the penultima long; as *optímo*, *cadímo*, *esgríma*, *lastíma*, (when a verb); except *lástima* (when a noun), *Jerónimo*, *péssimo*, and all the superlatives, *anónimo*, and some others.

Words ending in *ínho*, *ínha*, *íno*, *ína*, *ípo*, *ípa*, *ípe*, have the penultima long; as, *constípo*, *constípa*, *Eurípo*, *acipípe*. Others in *íquo*, *íqua*, *íque*, *íro*, *íra*, *íre*; as, *iníquo*, *iníqua*, *lambíque*, *retíro*, *mentíra*, *suspíre*.

Words ending in *íso*, *ísa*, *ízo*, *íza*, *íto*, *íta*, *ívo*, *íva*, *íxo*, *íxa*, are long in the penultima; as, *avíso*, *camísa*, *juízo*, *ajuíza*, *altívo*, *altíva*, *prolíxo*, *prolíxa*, *apíto*, *cabríto*; except *púlpito*, *vómito*, *decrépito*, *espírito*, *débito*, and some others.

Rules for such words as make their penultima in o.

Words ending in *óbo*, *óba*, *óbe*, *óbra*, *óbro*, *óbre*, have their penultima long; as, *lóbo*, *lóba*, *arróba*,

arrôbe, glôbo, alcôva, ôbro, ôbra, cóbre, côbro, dôbro.

Words ending in *ôcho, ócha, óco, ôca, ôço, oça, ôdo, ôda, óde, ôso, ósa, óse,* have the penultima long; as, *agarrôcho, garrócha, carócha, biôco,* except *allíloco) massaróca, minhóca, almôço, môça,* (a girl) *móça,* or *móssa,* (a notch) *almóço* (when a verb,) *carróça, lôdo, bôda, bóde, póde,* (the third person singular of the present indicative of the verb *podêr*), *pôde* (the third person singular of the preterperfect definite of the same verb), *galhôfa, bôfe.*

Words ending in *ófro, ôfra, ôfre,* are long; as, *alcaxófra, cófre, enxófre.*

Words ending in *ôgo, óga, ógue,* are long; as, *affógo, affóga, affógue, desafógo,* when a verb, and *desafôgo,* when a noun.

Words ending in *ôjo, ója,* have the penultima long; as, *despójo,* when a verb, *nôjo, despôjo* when a noun.

Words ending in *ólo, óla, óle,* are long; as, *vióla, gallinhóla, bóla, engóle, miôlo, bôlo, rebôlo, tôlo, cebôla;* except *pérola, frívolo benévolo, malévolo.*

Words ending in *ômo, ôma, ôme,* have the penultima long; as, *mordômo, redôma, fôme,* except *Thomé.*

Words ending in *ônho, ônha, ôno, ôna,* have the penultima long; as, *bisônho, risônha, dôno, atafôna, dôna;* except *altísono,* and *unísono.*

Words ending in *ópla, ôpo, ópa, ópe, ópro, ópra, ópre, óque,* have the penultima long; as, *manópla, tôpo, tópa, galópe, assópro,* when a verb, *assópra, assópre, assôpro,* when a noun, *botóque.*

Words ending in *óro, óra, óre,* are long in the penultima; as, *penhóro, penhóra, penhóre, chôro* when a noun; *chóro* when a verb; except *bácoro, rémora, pólvora, árvore.*

Words ending in *ôrro, ôrra,* are long; as *soccôrro, môrro, cachôrra;* and some others ending in *ôso, óse, ósa, óza, óza,* as, *primorôso, primorósa, industriôso, industriósa, ciôzo, cióza, descóse.*

Words ending in *ôto*, *óta*, *óte*, have their penultima long; as *gôto*, *gôta*, *bóta*, *devóto*, *fróta*, *capóte*, *garróte*.

Words ending in *óvo*, *óva*, *óve*, are long in the penultima; as, *óvo*, *corcóva*, *apróve*.

Words ending in *ôxo*, *ôxa*, are long in the penultima; as, *rôxo*, *rôxa*, *pintarrôxo*.

Rules for such Words as make their Penultima in u.

Words ending in *úbo*, *úba*, *úbro*, *úbra*, *úcho*, *úcha*, *úco*, *úca*, *úço*, *úça*, make the penultima long; as, *adúbo*, *adúba*; except *súccubo*, *íncubo*, and some other; *incúbro*, *incúbra*, *machúcho*, *embúcha*, *cadúco*, *cadúca*, *rebúço*, *embúça*.

Words ending in *údo*, *úda*, *úde*, *úfo*, *úfa*, *úfe*, *úgo*, *úga*, *újo*, *úja*, have the penultima long; as, *felpúdo*, *felpúda*, *almúde*, *pantúfo*, *adúfa*, *adúfe*, *sanguesúga*, *caramújo*, *azambúja*.

Words ending in *úlho*, *úlha*, *úlhe*, *úlo*, *úla*, *úle*, *úmo*, *úma*, *úme*, *únho*, *únha*, *únhe*; as, *bagúlho*, *borbúlha*, *entúlhe*, *engúlo*, *engúla*, *bulebúle*; except *vocábulo*, *vestíbulo*, *ángulo*, *régulo*, *opúsculo*, *trémulo*, *patíbulo*, *thiríbulo*, and some others; *consúmo*, *consúma*, *cardúme*, *testemúnho*, *testemúnha*, *empúnhe*.

Words ending in *úno*, *úna*, *úne*, *úpo*, *úpa*, *úpe*, *úque*, *úro*, *úra*, *úre*, are long in the penultima; as, *desúno*, *fortúna*, *desúne*, *apúpo*, *apúpa*, *apúpe*, *estúque*, *madúro*, *madúra*, *apúre*.

Words ending in *úso*, *úsa*, *úse*, *úzo*, *úza*, *úze*, *úto*, *úta*, *úte*, *úxo*, *úxa*, *úxe*, have the penultima long; as, *parafúso*, *parafúsa*, *parafúse*, *redúzo*, *redúza*, *redúze*, *condúto*, *labúta*, *enxúta*, *labúte*; except *cômputo* when a noun; *repúxo*, *empúxa*, *empúxe*; and some others ending in *úvo*, *úva*, *úve*; as, *viúvo*, *viúva*, *enviúve*.

N. B. When the penultima is immediately followed by another vowel, you must make the following observations:

A before *e* must be accented with the acute accent, and pronounced accordingly; as, *sáe, cáe*: but before *i* it has no accent.

A before *o* must be pronounced and accented thus, *bacalháo*; but when the relative *o* is added to the third person singular of the present indicative, then *a* has no accent; as, *áma-o.*

E before *a* is accented thus, *baléa*; and sometimes with the acute, as *assembléa, idéa*, and some others; and sometimes has no accent at all, as in *gávea, fêmea*, and some others.

E before *o* is exceeding sonorous and long, as in *chapéo, coruchéo*; except *páteo, férreo, plúmbeo, áureo, argênteo.*

I before *a, e, o*, is long; as, *dizía, fazía, almotolía*; except such as are borrowed from the Latin; as *néscia, comédia, féria, sciência, prudência*, and *sábia* when an adjective, &c. *I* before *o* and *e*, is long; as, *desvíe, desvío*; except *vício* and some others.

O before *a* is accented thus, *coróa, tóa, móa, esmóa.*

O before *e* is long in the words *dóe, móe, róe*, and in the verb *sóe* when it signifies *to be wont*; but when it signifies *to sound*, it is to be accented thus, *sóe.*

U before *a* is long; as *rúa, charrúa*; except *mellíflua, ínsua.*

U before *e* and *o* is long; as, *conclúo, recúo, conclúe, recúe*; except *mellífluo*, and some others derived from the Latin.

CHAP. IX.

Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin.

THE Portuguese retains so great an affinity to the Latin, that several words of the latter are preserved in the former, by only allowing a small alteration; as may easily be seen in the following observations.

1. The *o* of the Latin words is preserved in some Portuguese ones; nay, some Latin words are entirely preserved in the Portuguese; as, *hóspede, córda, pórta*, &c.

2. The *u* is changed into *o*; as, *fórca, golóso, estópa, mósca, amâmos*, &c. from *furca, gulosus, stupa, musca, amamus*, &c.

3. The diphthong, *au*, is frequently changed into *ou*; as, *louvável, óuro, cóuve, móuro*, &c. from *laudabilis, aurum, caulis, maurus*, &c.

4. The *e* is preserved in several Portuguese words; as, *cérto, sérvo, érva, térra, férro*, &c. from *certus, servus, herba, terra, ferrum*, &c.

5. The *e* takes the place of *i*; as, *enfêrmo, sêco*, &c. from *infirmus, sicus*, &c.; and the *i* is sometimes preserved, as in *indígno, benígno*, &c. from *indignus, benignus*, &c.

6. The *b* is also changed into *v*; as, *árvore, duvidár, devêr, estáva, amáva*, &c. from *arbor, dubitare, debere, stabat, amabat*, &c.

7. The *c* is very often changed into *g*; as, *dígo, agúdo, amígo, migálha*, &c. from *dico, acutus, amicus, amica*, &c.

8. *Cl* is changed into *ch*; as, *chamár, cháve*, from *clamare, clavis*, &c.

9. When the *c* in Latin is followed by *t*, this letter is changed into *ç*; as, *acçaõ, dicçaõ*, &c. from *actio, dictio*, &c.; and sometimes the *e* before *t* is

changed into *i*; as, *fêito, lêito, nôite, lêite, pêito,* &c. from *factus, lectum, nocte, lacte, pectus,* &c. Finally, both the *c* and *t* are preserved in a great number of words; as, *ácto, afflícto, distíncto,* &c. from *actus, afflictus, distinctus,* &c.

10. The *d* is several times lost; as, *roêr, excluír, ráio,* &c. from *rodere, excludere, radius,* &c.

11. The *f* is frequently preserved; as in *fílho, fazêr, fervôr, formôso,* &c. from *filius, facere, fervor, formosus,* &c.

12. The *g* is changed into *i*; as, *rêino,* from *regnum.* Sometimes it is quite lost, as in *dédo, frio, sétta, sinál, baínha,* &c. from *digitus, frigus, sagitta, signum, vagina,* &c.

13. The *h* is placed instead of the *l*; as, *álho,* from *allium.* Sometimes it is added; as, *artílho, alhéo, fôlha, consélho,* &c. from *articulus, alienus, folium, consilium,* &c.

14. The *n* is sometimes added, and sometimes taken off; as, *máncha, ílha, Salítre, espôso,* from *macula, insula, sal nitrum, sponsus,* &c.

15. The *mn* is preserved by many Portuguese writers in the words *alúmno, calúmnia, colúmna, damno, solémne, sômno,* from *alumnus, calumnia, columna, damnum,* &c.

16. The double *nn* of the Latin is preserved in several words; as in *ânno, innocência, innócuo, innavegável, innovár, connéxo,* &c. from *annus, innocentia, innocuus, innavigabilis, innovare, connexus,* &c.

17. The *gn* and *gm* are preserved in several Portuguese words; as in *augmênto, fragmênto, enígma, benígno, dígno, indígno, ignomínia,* &c. from *augmentum, fragmentum, ænigma, benignus, dignus,* &c.

18. The *e* and the *i* after *n* are sometimes changed into *h*; as in *aránha, vínha, Hespânha, castánha,* &c. from *aranea, vinea, Hispania, castanea,* &c.

19. The *p* is changed into *b*; as in *cábra, cabéllo, cabêça,* &c. from *capra, capillus, caput,* &c.

Sometimes *pl* is changed into *ch*; as, *chága, chôro, chúva*, &c. from *plaga, ploro, pluvia*, &c.

20. The *q* is changed into *g*; as, *iguál, alguém, antígo, ágoa, águia*, &c. from *equus, aliquis, antiquus, aqua, aquila*, &c.

21. The *t* is likewise changed into *d*; as, *cadêa, fádo, ládo, nadár, piedáde*, &c. from *catena, fatum, latus, natare, pietas*, &c. The *ti* of the Latin is sometimes changed into *ça*, and sometimes into *ci*; as in *gráça, clemência, paciéncia*, &c. from *gratía, clementia, patientia*, &c.

N. B. All these alterations are not general in all the words but are used in several; and on some occasions the Latin word is preserved without any mutilation or variation. And as it would be endless to pretend to shew all the affinity between the Portuguese and the Latin, I shall only observe, that they sometimes add, and sometimes take off letters from the Latin roots; as in *fácil, débil, finál, materiál, estrépito, estómago, expectadôr, especulár*, &c. from *facilis, debilis, finalis, strepitus, spectator*, &c.

END OF THE SECOND PART.

A NEW

PORTUGUESE GRAMMAR.

PART III.

CONTAINING

I. *The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language.*
II. *Such Words as are most used in Discourse.*
III. *A Collection of the Choicest Portuguese Proverbs.*
IV. *Familiar Dialogues.*

The different Significations of andár, *to go.*

ANDA'R a pé,	TO go on foot.
Andár a cavállo,	To ride on horseback.
Andár pélla pósta,	To ride, *or* go post.
Andár em côche,	To ride in a coach.
Andár á véla,	To sail.
Andár pélla bolína,	To sail with a side wind.
Andár pára diânte,	To go forward.
Andár para tráz,	To go backward.
Andár a trás de alguém,	To go behind, *or* after one *also* to follow, to press, to solicit a person.

Andár ás apalpadéllas,	To grope along, to grope, *or* feel one's way.
Andár com têmpo,	To go according to the times.
Andár pejáda,	To be with child, *or* big with child.
Andár sahída,	*(speaking of a bitch)* To be proud.
Andár perdído,	To go astray.
Andar de pé,	To be sickish, *but not bed-rid.*
Andár com hônra,	To act like an honest man.
A'nda,	Go.
A'nda para diânte,	Go on.
Andár de esguélha,	To go sideling.
Andár de mal para peór,	To fall out of the frying-pan into the fire.
Andár de rêixa com alguêm,	To bear one a grudge, to have a spleen against him, to owe him a spite.
Com o andár do têmpo,	At long run.
Andár de galope,	To gallop.
Andar em côrpo,	To be in cuerpo, *or* to be without the upper coat or cloak, so as to discover the true shape of the *cuerpo* or body.
A'nda o múndo as avéssas,	The world is come about.
Andár espalhádos,	To lie about.
Andâr trabalhândo nalgúma óbra,	To be about some piece of work.
Andár de gatínhas,	To go crawling.
Andár de cócoras,	To go on one's breech.
Andár dizêndo,	To publish *or* report.

The different Significations of dar *and* dar-se.

Dar,	To give, to strike.
Dar a entendér,	To make one believe.
Dar fé,	To credit, to believe, *also* to perceive, to descry, to take notice, to smell out.
Dar or *vendêr fiádo,*	To sell upon credit.
Dar á lûz,	To publish.
Dar senhoría,	To give the treatment of Lordship.
Dar tu, or *fallár a alguêm por tu,*	To thee and thou one.

Dar-se, a partído, or *lançár-se no partído de alguém*,	To side with one, to be for him.
Dár palávra,	To promise.
Dar húma sálva,	To give a volley of shot, *or* to make a discharge of guns in honour of some persons of quality.
Dar fiadôr,	To bail.
Dar princípio, or *fim*,	To begin, *or* end.
Dar cônta,	To give an account.
Dar-se ao estúdo,	To apply one's self to study.
Dar em que fallár,	To make one speak, to give an occasion to be talked of.
Dar entráda,	To give access to.
Dar cáusa,	To give cause.
Dar em que entendér,	To vex one sadly, to trouble one.
Dar de bebér,	To give drink.
Dar côuces,	To kick.
Dar hum coscorrão,	To give a box on the ear.
Dar pancádas,	To beat with a cudgel.
Dar múrros,	To cuff.
Dar murrádas,	To butt, as rams do.
Dar o fáro a alguém de algúma côusa,	To smell out a matter.
Dar húma estocáda,	To give a thrust.
Dar os bons días,	To bid one good-morrow.
Dar a guardár,	To give in keeping.
Dar á cósta,	To run a-ground.
Dar com alguém,	To meet with one by chance, to light upon a person.
Dar em alguém,	To strike one, *also* to accuse one.
Dar cártas,	To deal, *or* give the cards.
Dar sobre o inimígo,	To fall upon the enemy.
Dar os parabêns,	To congratulate.
Dar os parabêns a alguém da súa chegáda,	To bid one welcome.
Dar a mão ajudândo,	To give a helping hand.
Dar a escolhêr,	To let one take his choice.
Dar enfádo a alguém,	To molest one.
Dar no álvo,	To hit the mark.
Dar as cóstas,	To run away, to betake one's self to flight.
Dar párte de hum negócio,	To impart a business.

Dar pêllo amôr de Déos,	To give for God's sake.
Dar húma súrra,	To beat one soundly.
Dar húma vólta em redôndo,	To walk a turn.
Dar húma vísta de ólhos,	To cast an eye on.
Dar alcánce ao que se dezéja,	To obtain, *or* compass one's wish.
Dar suspíros,	To sigh.
Dar ouvídos,	To give hearing.
Dar em rôsto,	To upbraid, to cast in the teeth.
Dá cá,	Give hither.
Déu-me húma dôr,	I was taken with a pain.
Dar que fazér a alguém, or *occupár álguém,*	To employ one, to set him at work, to set him upon some business.
Dar hóras,	To strike.
O relógio dá hóras,	The clock strikes.
Dar a álma a Déos,	Tó give up the ghost, to die.
Dar comsígo em algúma parte,	To cast one's self into a place, *or* to go to a place.
Dar leíte,	To suckle.
Dar garróte,	To strangle.
Dar vózes,	To cry out, to bawl.
O sol dá nos ólhos,	The sun shines in one's eyes.
Dar razôens,	To debate, *or* contend.
Dar comsígo no chaõ,	To fall upon the ground.
Dar frúto,	To bear fruit.
Dar as maõs,	To shake hands.
Dar com a pórta na cára de alguêm,	To shut the door upon one.
Dar com a pórta nos ólhos a algúma côusa, (metaph.)	To slight, to despise a thing.
Dar préssa,	To press, *or* hasten.
Dar trégoas, (metaph.)	To respite, to give some respite
E'sta travéssa vai dar á rúa larga,	This lane strikes, *or* goes into the broad street.
Déi no pensaménto de, &c.	It came into my head to, *&c.*
Quem me déra estár em casa!	How fain would I be at home!
Naõ sabe aônde ha de dar com a cabêça.	He does not know which way to turn himself.
I'sto vos ha de dar na cabéça,	The mischief will light upon your own head.
Dar com a cabéça péllas parédes,	To beat one's head against the wall.

Dar em tódos, or *dizêr mal de tôdos*,	To have a satirical virulent tongue, to spare nobody.
Dar bôa cônta de si,	To give a good account of himself, to behave cleverly.
Dar á cônta,	To pay an account.
Eu darêi cônta dísso,	I'll be answerable for it.
E'lle déu em ir áquélle lugár,	He began to use that place.
Dar em dróga,	To grow a very drug.
Dar em ridicularías,	To grow, *or* become ridiculous.
Dar húma fíga a alguêm,	To flirt at one, to fig, to give the fico.
Dar-se por culpádo,	To acknowledge one's self guilty.
De nenhúma sorte vos déis por entendído, or *achádo*,	Take no notice of any thing.
Dar-se por aggravádo,	To make a shew of anger.
Dar-se por satisféito,	To rest satisfied.
Dar-se por vencído,	To submit, to surrender one's self a prisoner, *or* to yield a point.
Dar-se por desentendído,	To feign one's self ignorant, to take no notice of any thing, to make as if one saw or knew not.
Quándo se dér a occasiáõ,	When occasion shall require it
Dar-se préssa,	To be in haste, to make haste.
Elle déu-se a tôda a sórte de vícios,	He gave himself over to all manner of vices.
Naõ se me dá dísso,	I mind it not.
Que se vos dá a vós dísso?	What have you to do with it?
Põuco se me dá,	I care but little.
Náõ se lhe dá morrêr,	He does not fear death.
E'lles daõ-se múito bem,	They agree mighty well together.
E'sta cárne naõ se dá bem comigo,	This meat does not agree with me.

Of the different Significations of the Verb estár.

We use the verb *estár* to make an action of repose, by putting the verb that follows in the gerund; as, *élle está escrevéndo*, he is writing.

Estár has several other significations; as,

Estár em pé,	To stand upright.
Estár bem, ou *mal,*	To be well, *or* ill.
Estár assentádo,	To be sitting.
Estár para sahír, para fóra,	To be just going out.
Estár com o sentído em Fránça, or *estár com o sentído em ôutra párte,*	To have one's wits a wool-gathering.
Está múito bem,	It is well, it is very well.
Está para chovér,	It is going to rain.
Estár para cahír,	To be ready to fall.
Estár para morrêr,	To be like to die.
Estár em dúvida,	To be in doubt.
Estarêmos a vér,	We will expect the issue.
Estár com huma maõ sôbre a ôutra,	To stand idle.
Estár em cása,	To stay at home.
I'sto vos está bem,	This becomes you very well.
Aquílo naõ me está bem,	That does not become me well.
Estár dormíndo,	To lie sleeping.
Estár fazêndo,	To be a doing.
Estár de nôjo,	To be in mourning.
Estár álérta,	To look heedfully about.
Estár de sentinélla,	To stand centry.
Está alégre,	To be merry.
E'lle está cômo quer,	He lives in clover.
Estár em perígo,	To be in danger.
Estár encostádo,	To lean upon.
Estár esperândo,	To expect.
Estár múito têmpo,	To stay a good while.
Estár caládo,	To be silent.
Estár ou *vivér com ôutros,*	To dwell with others.
Estár de címa,	To lie over.
Estár debáxo,	To lie under.
Estár bem aviádo,	To be in an ill taking.
Estár á espéra,	To lie in wait.
Estár enamorádo,	To be in love.
Estár na câma,	To be a-bed.
Estár de câma,	To be bed-rid.
Estár no câmpo,	To live in the country.
Estár com saúde, or *de saúde,*	To be in health.
Estár quiéto,	To stand still, or to be quiet.
Estár neutrál,	To stand neuter.
Estarêi por túdo o que vos parecér máis conveniênte,	I shall stand to whatever you shall think proper.

A difficuldáde está em, &c.	The difficulty consists in, &c.
Estár por alguêm,	To stand for one, to be of his side.
Estár por, or *em lugár de, &c.*	To stand for, *or* signify.
E'lle estáva na altúra do Cábo de Bóa Esperânça,	He stood off the Cape of Good Hope.
Eu naõ quéro estár ás razoens comvôsco,	I won't stand, *or* dispute, with you.
Está quânto quizéres,	Stay as long as you please.
Aônde estáis de cása?	Where do you live?
Estarêi péllo que dissêr a pessôa que fôr de vósso mayór agrádo,	I'll refer it to whom you please.
Naõ podêmos estár por ísso,	We can't stand to that.
Naõ quéro estár pélla vóssa sentênça,	I wont take your judgment.
Cômo está vm^ce?	How do you do, sir?

Estár, joined with the infinitive of a verb and the particle *para*, signifies to be ready, or about doing a thing, which has always reference to the signification of the verb; as,

Estôu para ir,	I am going, I am ready to go.
Estôu para comprár hum cavállo,	I am about buying a horse.
Estôu para cazárme,	I am going to be married.
E'sta cása está para cahír,	This house is ready to fall.
Estôu para dizêr,	I dare say.
Naõ está no mêu podêr,	It is not in my power.
Estár com a bôca abérta (metaph.)	To stare, to look, to hearken attentively.
Estár de regiménto,	To keep to a diet.
Estár fiádo em alguêm,	To trust to, to rely *or* depend upon one.
Estár no fúndo,	To lie at the bottom.
Estár de frônte,	To lie over-against.
Estár em competência,	To stand in competition.
Estár ao lúme,	To stand by the fire.
Estár de lônge,	To stand at a distance.
Estár ao ar,	To stand in the air.
Estár álto,	To stand high, or in a high place.
Estár á maõ dirêita de alguêm.	To be at one's right hand, to have the first place.

Elle estêve em perígo de afogárse,	He was like to be drowned.
Não estár no cáso de, &c.	Not to be able, or in the case of, *&c.*
Estár a órdem de alguêm,	To be at one's disposal.
Isso naõ está nos têrmos,	That is not right, it won't do.
Naõ estôu no cáso,	I don't understand the case.
Estár ás razôens,	To contend, to strive, *or* quarrel.
Estár bem com alguêm,	To be in favour with one, to live in friendship with him.
Estár bem,	To be well, to be at one's ease.
Bem aviádo estaría êu, se, &c.	It would be very bad for me, indeed, if, *&c.*
Estár em concêito de hómem honrádo,	To be looked upon as an honest man.
Estár na fé,	To believe, to think, *or* suppose.
Estár de pósse,	To possess, to have the possession of a thing.
Deixái estár ísso,	Let that alone.
Estár em si,	To be in one's right wits.
Estár fora de si,	To be out of one's wits.
Deixavos estár (a sort of threatening.)	I'll be revenged on you, you shall pay for it.

We have already observed the difference between *sêr* and *estár*. See page 55.

Of the different Signification of fazêr *and* fazêr se.

Fazêr signifies *to do, to make, to create;* also *to form of materials;* also *to feign, to seem, to make as if.*

Elle fez que naõ o vía,	He made as if he did not see it.
Fazêr huma saúde,	To drink, *or* to toast a health.
E'lle lhe fez cortár a cabêça,	He caused his head to be cut off.
Fazêr pé atráz (metaph.)	To fall, *or* draw back, to give ground; *also* yield, to submit.
Que têndes vós que fazêr com ísto.	What have you to do with it? *or* what is that to you?

Fazér brío de algúma côusa,	To make a pride of a thing, to take glory in it.
Fazér fim ao dezéjo,	To ſatisfy one's deſire, *or* longing.
Fazêr por algúma côuſa,	To take pains, to endeavour, to labour to a certain purpoſe, to work for a certain end.
Fáço por iſſo,	I endeavour after it.
Fazér ao negócio, or *ao cáso,*	To come to the purpoſe.
Fazêr eſmólas,	To give alms.
Fazêr gáſto,	To ſpend.
Fazêr gôſto,	To like, to be pleaſed with.
Fazêr o gôſto, or *a vontáde a alguêm,*	To pleaſe one, to comply with one's deſire.
Fazêr parallélo,	To parallel, to compare.
Fazér de comér,	To cook.
Fazêr fúmo,	To ſmoak.
Fazér auzênte a alguêm,	To believe one abſent.
Faz frío,	It is cold.
Fazêr gênte,	To raiſe men, ſoldiers.
Fazér em pedáços,	To pull into pieces.
Fazêr zombaría de alguêm,	To mock, or to laugh at a perſon.
Naõ façáis cáſo diſſo,	Do not mind that.
Fazér agoáda,	To take in freſh water.
Iſto me faz vir a ágoa á bôca,	This makes my teeth, *or* mouth, water.
Fazér álto,	To halt in a march.
Fazér cáſa (in playing at backgammon.)	To put two men on the ſame point.
Fazêr a céa,	To get ſupper ready.
Fazêr cáras.	To make mouths.
Fazér enrêdos,	To form a ſecret deſign againſt another.
Fazêr carráncas,	To pout.
Fazér cáſo,	To make account of, or eſteem.
Fazér de trípas coraçaõ,	To make one's utmoſt efforts.
Fazér múito cáſo de algúma côuſa,	To make great account of a thing, to make much of it.
Naõ fáço cáſo délle,	I don't mind him.
Fazér feſta,	To endear, to fondle.
Fazér húma feſta,	To give an entertainment, to feaſt.

Fazêr as vêzes de alguém,	To make any buſineſs for another.
Fazêr trapáças,	To chicane, to cavil, to uſe tricks.
Fazêr lugár,	To make room.
Fazêr mercé,	To grant a favour.
Fazêr ouvídos de mercadór,	To make as if one were deaf.
Têr que fazêr,	To be buſy.
Fazêr exercício,	To uſe exerciſe.
Fazêr exercício (a military word.)	To exerciſe.
Os ſoldádos eſtáõ fazêndo exercício,	The ſoldiers exerciſe.
Que fazéis aquí?	What make you here?
Fazêr hum veſtído,	To make a ſuit of clothes.
Fazêr húma léy, hum diſcurſo,	To make a law, a ſpeech.
Fazêr guérra,	To make war.
Fazêr ſabêr algúma côuſa a alguêm,	To make one acquainted with a thing.
Fazêr enraivecêr álguêm,	To make one mad.
Fazêr húma cônta,	To caſt up an account.
Fazêr cônta,	To intend, or to propoſe.
E'lle fazía húma cônta, e ſahío-lhe ôutra,	He was much diſappointed.
Fazêr contas com alguêm,	To ſettle the accounts with one.
Iſſo náõ me faz náda,	It makes nothing to me, that does not concern me.
Fazêr páuſa,	To make a ſtand.
Fazêr de álguêm tôlo,	To make a fool of one.
Fazêr dinhéiro de algúma côuſa,	To make money of a thing, to ſell it.
Tornár a fazér,	To make again.
Fazêr a razcõ,	To pledge one.
Ter que fazêr com alguêm,	To deal with one, *or* to have to do with one.
Fazêr a alguêm hum gilváz na cára,	To mark one in the face.
Fazêr hônra,	To honour.
Fazêr fé,	To make known, to teſtify, to witneſs.
Fazêr fórte,	To fortify, *or* ſtrengthen.

Fazér mençáõ,	To mention.
Fazér mal,	To hurt.
Fazér de alguém o que húma pessôa quer,	To diſpoſe of one.
Fazér húma apósta,	To lay a wager.
Faz vénto,	The wind blows.
Faz hôje óuto dias,	This day ſe'nnight, *or* a week ago.
Fazér vída com alguém,	To cohabit, *or* dwell together.
Fazér a súa vontáde,	To do as one pleaſes.
Fazér o possível,	To do one's beſt, *or* endeavour, to do one's utmoſt.
Naõ faréis náda com isso,	You will do no good in it.
Naõ façáis máis assím,	Do ſo no more.
Se tornárdes a fazér assím,	If ever you do ſo again.
Dezéjo que fáça a súa fortúna,	I wiſh he may do well.
Custôu-me muíto a fazéllo vir,	I had much to do to get him to come.
Fazér a ôutrem o que quizéramos que ôutrem nos fizésse a nós,	To do by others as you would be done by.
Naõ ténho que fazér comísso,	I have nothing to do with it.
Fazér o que alguém mânda,	To do as one is bid.
Faz de mim o que vos parecér,	Do with me as you ſhall think fit.
Fazér hum grânde estrôndo,	To make a great noiſe.
E'lle fôi o que fez túdo naquêlle negócio,	He was the do-all in that buſineſs.
Que faréis hóje?	What will you do to-day? *or* how do you employ yourſelf to-day.
Fazér o sêu cúrso,	To finiſh its courſe as a ſtar does.
Fazér húma bôa cása,	To raiſe, to ſet up one's family.
Fazér a bárba,	To ſhave.
Fazér a câma,	To make the bed.
Naõ sêi que lhe fazér,	I can't help it.
Fazér grânde negócio,	To drive a great trade.
Fazér o seu offício,	To exerciſe, *or* diſcharge.
Fazér profissaõ,	To profeſs.
Tôdos o faziaõ môrto,	They gave out that he was dead.
Fazér vir,	To call, *or* ſend for.

Fazér entrár, ou *sahír alguêm,*	To call in, *or* out, to bid one come in, *or* out.
I'sto naõ faz náda,	It is no matter.
Naõ séi que fazér disso,	I have no need of it.
Ja naõ tênho que fazér com élle	I have done with him.
Fazér hum lívro,	To write a book.
Fazér amizâde com álguêm,	To make friendſhip, to get into friendſhip with one.
Fazér exêmplo em alguêm, or *castigállo para dar exêmplo,*	To make one a public example.
Fazêr húma côusa múito ao desentendído,	To do a thing very covertly, ſo that people can't apprehend that it is done on ſet purpoſe, and with a deſign.
Fazêr das súas,	To play the fool, to dodge, to play tricks.
E'lle sempre está fazêndo das súas,	He is always playing his fooliſh tricks.
Fazér fóscas,	To bully, to provoke, to excite by words, or actions of contempt; alſo to elude, or deceive by falſe ſhow.
Fazér de pessôa,	To behave courageouſly.
Fazér jurár alguêm,	To tender the oaths to one, to put one to his oaths.
Fazér ſaltár, or *voár péllos áres,*	To blow up.
Fazér bôa vezinhânça,	To keep fair with one's neighbours.
Fazêr lénha,	To fell wood.
Fazér a rônda,	To walk the rounds.
Fazér dívidas,	To run in debt, to contract debts,
Fáz lua,	The moon ſhines.
Fazér violéncia,	To offer violence.
Fazér-se ao trabálho,	To inure one's ſelf to hardſhips.
Fazér-se tôlo,	To play the ninny.
Fazêr-se vélho;	To grow old, *or* to grow in years.
Fazêr-se féio,	To grow ugly.
Fazér-se sobérbo,	To grow proud.
Faz-se târde,	It grows late.

Fazêr-se signifies also *to feign, to pretend, to seem, make as if.*

Faz-ſe môuco,	He won't hear.

The different Significations of têr *and* têr-se.

Ter que fazér,	To be buſy.
Ter ódio,	To hate.
Ter por coſtúme,	To be wont.
Ter alguém por ignorânte,	To believe one ignorant.
Ter cuidádo de,	To be careful of.
Ter cuidádos,	To be full of care, or thoughtful.
Ter faſtío,	To loath, to ſee food with diſlike.
Ter ânimo,	To have courage.
Ter bôa fâma,	To be well ſpoken of.
Ter cára d'aço,	To have a brazen face.
Ter neceſſidáde,	To be in want.
Ter préſſa,	To be in haſte.
Ter múitos fúmos,	To be very proud.
Ter grânde preſúmpçaõ,	To preſume much on one's ſelf.
Ter razaõ,	To be in the right.
Naõ tér razaõ,	To be in the wrong.
Ter algúma côuſa debáxo da língua,	To have a thing at one's tongue's end.

Ter algúma côusa na pônta da lingua, we say, to have a thing at one's fingers ends, to have it perfect. They also say, *sabêr algúma côusa nas pôntas dos dêdos,* which exactly answers to our English phrase.

Ter feiçôens feiticêiras,	To have a taking look.
Ter má fâma,	To be ill ſpoken of.
Ter ciúmes,	To be jealous of.
Ter mêyos,	To be able, or have means.
Ter no penſamênto,	To bear in mind.
Ter obrigaçáõ,	To be obliged.
Ter mêdo,	To be fearful.
Ter razáõ, e máis que razáõ,	To have reaſon, to ſpare.

Que téndes vós com íſſo?	What is that to you?
Ter carruágem e criádos,	To keep a coach and ſervants.
Ter a alguém ſuſpênſo,	To hold one in ſuſpence.
Hómen que tem bôa feiçaõ,	A man of good addreſs, a polite man.
Ter méſa frânca,	To keep open table, to keep a table where a man may come without bidding.
Ter frío,	To be cold.
Ter as cóſtas quéntes com alguêm,	To be backed, *or* ſupported by one.
Ter por bem,	To approve of, or conſent.
Ténho-o por dôudo,	I take him to be mad.
Ter maõ na ſua reſoluçáõ,	To be ſtill in one mind.
Ter com que,	To have wherewith.
Naõ têndes de que vos queixár,	You have no reaſon of complaint.
Naõ têndes que, &c.	It is uſeleſs, *or* it will be to no purpoſe for you to, *&c.*
I'ſto naõ tem náda que fazêr, com o que éu dígo,	That is nothing to the purpoſe.
Ter êntre maõs,	To have in hand, *or* in one's poſſeſſion.
Ténho íſſo por cérto,	I hold that for a certainty.
Ir ter com alguêm,	To addreſs one's ſelf to one.
Vênho ter com vm^ce para ſabêr cômo páſſa a ſenhôra fullána,	I addreſs, *or* apply myſelf to you to know how miſs ſuch a one does.
Ir ter a algúm lugár,	To go to a place.
E'ſta rua vái ter ao mercádo,	This ſtreet ſtrikes, *or* goes into the market.
Ter alguêm por ſi,	To be ſupported, *or* protected by one.
Têmos por nós a authoridade dos mais prudêntes,	We have the wiſeſt men of our ſide, *or* of our opinion.
Ter para ſi,	To think, *or* imagine, to reckon.
Ter em múito,	To ſet much by.
Ter em pôuco,	To value but little.
Ser tído em bôa cônta,	To be eſteemed, regarded, or valued, to be in great eſteem.
Ter maõ,	To hold *or* keep in, to reſtrain.
Ter maõ nalgúma côuſa,	To bear up, to ſupport, to prop, to keep up, to hold up.

A'tomos que tem maõ huns nos ôutros,	Atoms that ſtick togèthèr,
Ténha maõ, or *tem maõ,*	Hold, ſtop.
Ter,	To contain.
Ter-se em pé,	To ſtand, to ſtand up.
Ter-se bem a caválło,	To ſit faſt, *or* well, on horſe-back.
Ter-se em cása,	To keep at home.
Ter-se com alguêm,	To hold out, to reſiſt, to ſtand againſt one, to cope with one, to oppoſe, *or* reſiſt him.
Naõ me póſſo ter com ríso,	I can't forbear laughing.
Naõ se póde ter, que naõ fálle,	He can't forbear ſpeaking.

The different Significations of querêr.

Querêr signifies *to will, to be willing,* and *to believe* ; as,

Quérem algúns,	Some believe.
Querêr bem,	To love.
Querêr mal,	To hate.
A'ntes querér,	To have rather.
Queîra Déos,	God grant it, God ſend it may be ſo.
Mas quéro que assím séja,	I grant it, ſuppoſe it were ſo.
Que quer dizêr aquelle hômem?	What does that man mean?
Que quer dizêr ísto?	What means this? what's the meaning of that?
I'sto quer dizêr que, &c.	The meaning is that, &c.
E'u quéro absolutaménte que,	I poſitively reſolve that, &c.
E'u assim o quéro,	I'll have it ſo.
E'lle quer que vós obedeçáis,	He will have you obey.
Naõ quéro,	I will not, I won't.
E'lle o fará quándo quizer,	He will do it when he pleaſes, *or* when he has a mind to it.
E'lle quer partír amanhaã,	He intends, *or* has a mind, to ſet out to-morrow.
O mal que êu lhe quéro me, vênha a mim,	I wiſh him no more harm than I do myſelf.

Havêr, to have.

Tu has de hir,	You muſt go.
E'lle ha de vir hôje,	He is to come to day.

Se êu houvêr de hir,	If I ſhall be obliged to go.
Aíndaque iſſo me houvéſſe de cuſtar a vída,	Though I were to loſe my life for't.
E'lle eſtá tôdo nú, e ha de têr múito frío,	He is all naked, he muſt needs be very cold.
Havéis vós de eſtár em cáſa?	Shall you be at home?
Eu hêi de achárme lá,	I muſt be there.
E'lle ha de ſêr enforcádo,	He is to be hanged.
Eu hêi de recebêr dinhéiro,	I am to receive money.
Vós he que havêis de jugár,	You are to play.
Aquíllo he que vós havíeis de fazêr,	You ſhould do that.
Havêr por bem,	To take in good part.
Havêr por mal,	To take in ill part.
Que ha de ſer,	That is to be hereafter.
Aquíllo núnca há-de ſer,	That will never be.
E'u hêi de ſer a cáuſa da ſúa mórte, ou *rúina,*	I ſhall be the death, *or* ruin of him.
Para havêr de fallár, ouvír, &c.	In order to ſpeak, hear, &c.
Que há de ſêr de mim?	What is to become of me?
Havêr filhos,	To beget, to become the father of children.
Lívros do déve, e ha de haver,	Books of debtor and creditor.
Havêr miſtér,	To want.
Há miſtér apreſſár-ſe,	It is neceſſary to haſte, *or* to make haſte.

Havêr, when impersonal, is rendered into English by the verb *to be*, preceded by *there;* as,

Há,	There is, *or* there are.
Há hómens taõ malvádos,	There are men ſo wicked.
Havía húma molhér,	There was a woman.
Háalgúns bons e ôutros máos,	There are ſome good, and ſome bad.
Há muítas cáſas,	There are ſeveral houſes.
Há algúma couſa de nôvo?	Is there any news?
Há máis he húma hóra,	It is above an hour ſince.
Há múito têmpo,	Long ſince.
Há pérto de húma hóra que êlle ſahío,	It is almoſt an hour ſince he went out.
Ha hum ânno,	A year ago.

Há óuto días,	Eight days ago.
Há pérto de 20 légoas daquí lá,	It is near upon 20 leagues thither.
Naõ há,	There is not.
E'lle cúida que naõ há máis que purgár,	He believes that purging is all in all, *or* that purging is the only remedy in ſuch a caſe.
Havêr ſe, v. r.	To carry, to behave one's ſelf.
E'lle ſábe cômo ſe há-de havêr, or *êlle ſábe cómo ha de havêr-ſe*,	He knows how to behave himſelf.
Elle hôuve-ſe de manéira que, &c.	He behaved himſelf in ſuch a manner that, &c.

N. B. When this verb is used impersonally, it is always followed by the particle *de*; as,

Ha-ſe de miſtér dinhéiro,	Money is wanted.
Ha-ſe de fazêr, ou *dizêr iſto*,	This muſt be done, *or* ſaid.
Ha-ſe de fazêr o que êlle quizér,	People muſt do what he pleaſes.

Hir, a neuter and irregular verb, *to go, to walk, to march*; also, *to grow, to reach any estate gradually, to be going.*

Hir por már e por térra,	To travel by ſea and land.
Cômo vaõ os vóſſos negócios?	How go your concerns?
Túdo vái bem,	All is well, all goes well.
As ſúas côuſas vaõ múito mal,	Things go very ill (or very hard) with him.
Hir á máõ,	To hinder, to obſtruct, to obviate.
Hir paſſând o,	To grow out of faſhion *or* uſe.
Hir andândo,	To go on *or* forward, to keep *or* hold on his way; *alſo* to proceed, to continue on, to proſecute.
Hir andândo, or *paſſândo*,	To ſhift, to paſs life not quite well, to live though with difficulty.
Que vái de nôvo?	Is there any thing new?
Que vái niſto? or *ônde vái iſto a dar comſigo?*	What of all this?

Hir debáxo,	To come by the worſt.
Hir para,	To approach, to go near.
Quânto mais vâmos para a primavéra, mais comprí-dos ſãõ os días,	The nearer the ſpring, the longer the days.
Hir de mal para peór,	To grow worſe and worſe.
Hir diânte,	To go before.
Hir por diânte,	To go on, or forward.
Hir ao encôntro,	To go to meet.
Hir ao fúndo,	To ſink, *or* fall to the bottom.
Hir e vir,	To gó to and fro, to go and come.
Naõ fáço máis do que hir e voltár,	I will not ſtay, I ſhall be back preſently.
Iſſo ja lá vái,	'Tis a thing paſt and done.
Eílo lá vái,	There he goes.
Eilo vái,	So, ſo, pretty well.
Que vos paréce daquélla mol-hér? eílo vái, élla naõ he féa,	How do you like that wo-man? She is ſo ſo, ſhe may paſs.
Eílo vái, fólga que aſſím ſeja,	Well, well, I am glad on't.
Cômo as côuſas agora vaõ,	As things go now, as the world goes.
Por que párte ides?	Which way d'ye go?
Déos vá comvôſco,	The Lord of heaven go with you.
Hir á róda do múndo,	To go about the world.
Hir com alguêm,	To go along with one.
E'ſta travéſſa vái ter â rúa lárga,	This lane goes into the broad ſtreet.
E'u o irêi vêr de camínho,	I will call upon him as I go along.
Hir continuândo o ſêu ca-minho,	To go along.
Hir fóra do ſêu caminho,	To go out of one's way.
Hir hum de húma bânda, e ôutro da ôutra,	To go aſunder.
Hir para tráz,	To go backward.
Hír detráz,	To go behind.
Hir atráz de alguém,	To purſue, to go after one.
Hir em alcânce de alguém,	To go after one, in order to overtake him.
Hir buſcár,	To go for, *or* fetch.
Hir para dêntro,	To go in.
Hir para fóra,	To go out.

Hir peregrinândo,	To go a pilgrimage.
Hir fazêr húma embaixáda,	To go on an embaſſy.
Hir ver, cantár, &c.	To go to ſee, to ſing, *&c.*
Vámos,	Come, come on.
Hir fazêr hum negócio,	To go upon a buſineſs.
Hir com a maré,	To go with the tide.
Hir par a par com alguêm,	To go cheek by jole with one.
Vái para quátro mêſes que êu aquí cheguéi,	It is now going on four months ſince I came hither.
I'de em paz,	Depart in peace.
O têmpo vai abrandándo,	The weather grows mild.
Hir (at cards),	To go, to lay, to ſtake, to ſet.
Hir-ſe, v. r.	To go, to go away, to go one's way, to depart, *alſo* to run, *or* leak.
Hir-ſe a ôlha, ou *a panêlla,*	*Is* for the pot to boil over.
Hir-ſe o enférmo,	*Is* for a ſick man to die.
A quaréſma vái-ſe acabándo,	Lent draws to an end.
Hir-ſe,	To ſlip, *or* paſs away (as time.)
Náda ſe vái máis depréſſa que o têmpo,	Nothing goes faſter than time.
Aquêlles môntes vãõ-ſe eſtendêndo,	Thoſe mountains extend, *or* ſtretch themſelves.
Hir-ſe embóra,	To go away, alſo to be over.
Eſperái até que a cálma ſe va embóra,	Stay till the heat be over.
Vái-te embóra; que naõ ſábes engodár a gênte,	Away, or go, you know not how to wheedle people.
Hir-ſe de húma carta (at cards),	To throw away a card.
Vái-ſe fazêndo tárde,	It grows late.
Vai-ſe chegándo a nôite,	The night draws on.
Vái-ſe chegándo o têmpo da ſéga,	It grows near harveſt.
Vai-ſe acabándo o mêu conſulado,	My conſulſhip is almoſt at an end.
Hir-ſe eſcapulíndo,	To ſneak away.
Hir-ſe á mãõ,	To refrain, to forbear, to abſtain.

Hir-se impersonal; as, *vái-se,* they go; *foi-se,* they are gone; *hir-se há,* they shall go.

To pray.

Senhôr, cômo amigo, fáçame o favõr,	Dear ſir, do me the favour.
Eu vos péço, or *péçovos,*	I pray you.
Péçolhe em corteſía,	I beſeech you.
Péçolhe encarecidamênte,	I intreat, *or* conjure, you to do it.
Péçolhe por favõr que, &c.	I beg of you that, *&c.*
Fáçame a finêza,	Do me the kindneſs.
Péçolhe perdaõ,	I beg your pardon.

Expressions of Kindness.

Mínha vída,	My life.
Mínha álma,	My dear ſoul.
Mêu amôr,	My love.
Mêu querído, mínha querída,	My little darling.
Mêu coraçáõ,	My dear love, my love.
Fílho do mêu coraçaõ,	My dear child.
Fílha da mínha álma,	My little honey.

To shew Civility.

Agradêço a vm^ce,	I thank you.
Dôu a vm^ce as agradecimêntos,	I give you thanks.
Bêijo as maõs de vm^ce,	I kiſs your hand.
Fálo-hêi com tôdo o gôſto,	I will do it cheerfully.
Com tôdo o mêu coraçáõ,	With all my heart.
De múito bôa vontáde,	Heartily, willingly.
Véja vm^ce ſe o póſſo ſervír nalgúma côuſa,	See if it is in my power to ſerve you.
Diſpônha vm^ce cômo lhe parecêr dêſte ſêu criádo,	Do what you pleaſe with your ſervant.
Eſtôu eſperândo pêllas ôrdens de vm^ce,	I wait for your commands.
Ja que vm^ce aſsím ordena,	Since you will have it ſo.
As órdens de vm^ce,	At your ſervice.
Fico múito obrigádo a vm^ce,	I am very much obliged to you.
Quer vm^ce que êu fáça algúma côuſa,	Have you any thing to command me.
Sem ceremónia,	Without ceremony.
Naõ tem vm^ce máis que fallar,	You need but to ſpeak.
Fâçame a honra de de me pôr aos pés da ſnr^a,	Preſent my reſpects, *or* duty, to my lady.

Naõ ſêi cômo agradecêr a vm^ce tântos favôres,	I know not how to make a proper return for ſo many favours.
Naõ ſôu de comprimêntos,	I am not for ceremonies.
Deixêmos êſtes comprimêntos,	Away with theſe ceremonies *or* compliments.
I'ſſo he o melhŏr,	That is the beſt way.

To give tokens of Affirmation, Consent, Belief, and Refusal.

He verdáde,	It is true.
He íſſo verdáde?	Is it true?
He múito verdáde,	It is but too true.
Para dizèrvos a verdáde,	To tell you the truth.
Com effêito he aſſím,	Really it is ſo.
Quem duvída diſſo?	Who doubts it?
Naõ ha dúvida níſſo,	There is no doubt of it.
Parêçeme que ſim, que naõ,	I think ſo, not.
Apóſto que ſim,	I lay it is.
Apóſto que naõ,	I lay it is not.
Crêame vm^ce?	Do believe me?
Eſtá vm^ce zombândo?	Don't you jeſt?
Fálla vm^ce de véras?	Are you in earneſt?
Fállo de véras,	I am in earneſt.
Pôis, eſtá fêito,	Well, let it be ſo.
Pôuco a pôuco,	Softly, fair and ſoftly.
I'ſſo naõ he verdáde,	It is not true.
Naõ ha tal côuſa,	There is no ſuch thing.
He mentíra,	It is a lie.
Eſtáva zombândo,	I did but jeſt.
Sêja múto embóra,	Let it be ſo.
Naõ quéro,	I won't, I will not.

To consult.

Que ſe ha de fazêr?	What is to be done?
Que farêmos?	What ſhall we do?
Que lhe parêce a vm^ce que êu fáça?	What do you adviſe me to do?
Que remédio tem íſſo?	What remedy is there for it?
Façâmos aſſím,	Let us do ſo, and ſo.
Façâmos húma côuſa,	Let us do one thing.
Será melhór que,	It will be better that.
Sería melhór que,	It would be better that.

Esperái hum pôuco,	Stay a little.
Deixáime com isso,	Let me alone.
Antes quizéra,	I had rather.
Se isso fôsse comígo,	Were I in your place.
Túdo he o mêsmo,	It is all one.

Of Eating and Drinking.

Ténho fóme,	I am hungry.
Môrro de fóme,	I am almoft ftarved.
Cô-na vm.ce algúma côusa,	Eat fomething.
Que quer vm.ce comêr?	What will you eat?
Quêr vm.ce comêr máis?	Will you eat any more?
Ténho sêde,	I am dry, *or* thirfty.
Ja matêi a fóme,	I have no more ftomach.
Ténho múita sêde,	I am very dry.
Môrro de sêde,	I am almoft dead with thirft.
Dême de bebêr,	Give me fome drink.
Víva vm.ce múitos ánnos,	I thank you.
Eú bebería hum cópo de vinho,	I could drink a glafs of wine.
Pôes bêba vm.ce,	Drink then.
Tenho bebído bastánte,	I have drank enough.
Naõ póssо bebêr máis,	I can drink no more.
Ja matêi a sêde,	I am no more thirfty, *or* my thirft is quenched.

Of Going, Coming, Stirring, &c.

Dônde vem vm.ce?	From whence do you come?
Para ônde vái vm.ce?	Where do you go?
Vênho de; vôu para, or *a,*	I come from; I am going to.
Quer vm.ce subír, ou *descêr?*	Will you come up, *or* come down?
E'ntre vm.ce, saya vm.ce,	Come in, go out.
Naõ se búla daquí,	Do not ftir from hence.
Chêgue-se para mim,	Come near to me.
Va-se vm.ce,	Go your way, be gone.
Vem cá,	Come hither.
Espére por mím,	Stay for me.
Naõ vá taõ depréssa,	Do not go fo faft.
Tíre-se de diânte de mim,	Get you out of my way.
Naõ me tóque,	Do not touch me.
Deíxe estár isso,	Let that alone.
Estôu bem aquí,	I am well here.
A'bra vm.ce a pôrta,	Open the door.

Féche a pórta,	Shut the door.
A'bra, ou *féche a janélla,*	Open the window, *or* ſhut the window.
Vénha vm^ce por aquí,	Come this way.
Páſſe por lá,	Paſs that way.
Que procúra vm^ce?	What do you look for?
Que perdêo vm^ce?	What have you loſt?

To wish well to a Person.

O Céo vos guárde,	Heaven preſerve you.
Dêos vos dê bôa fortúna,	God ſend you good luck.
Dezéjo-vos tôdo o bem,	I wiſh you every thing that is good.
Dêos vos ajúde,	God aſſiſt you.
Dèos vos perdôe,	God forgive you.
I'de com Dêos,	God be with you.
Até vêr-nos,	Till I ſee you again.
Bôm provéito fáça a vm^ce,	Much good may do you.

To wish ill.

O diábo te léve,	The devil take thee.
Maldíto ſêjas tu,	A curſe on thee.
Vái para os quíntos infērnos,	Away, go to hell.
Váite enforcár,	Go and be hanged.
Enforcádo ſêjas tu,	Would thou wert hanged.

To swear.

Aſſím Dêos me ſálve,	As God ſhall help me, ſhall ſave me.
Arrebentado ſêja êu,	May I burſt.
Em conciência,	In my conſcience.

To threaten and insult.

O'lha que te hèi de dar,	Take care, I will beat thee.
Dèixa-te eſtár, or *cála-te que me has de pagár,*	Thou wilt pay it me.
Júro que te farêi arrependêr diſſo,	I ſwear thou ſhalt repent of it.
Se me enfadáres,	If you put me into a paſſion.
Coitádo de ti,	Woe be to thee.
Pôucas razôens, or *cala éſſa bôca,*	Hold your tongue, don't ſpeak to me.
I'ſto baſta,	It is enough, it is ſufficient.

To mock, to blame, and to call one names.

Que bélo focínho!	O the fine ſnout!
Que cára de môno!	What an ape's face!
Trapacêiro,	A chicaner.
Embuſtêiro,	A cheat, an impoſtor.
Mexeriquêiro,	A tale bearer, a tell-tale.
Que bélo ſogêito,	O the dull thing.
Velháco,	A knave.
Marôto,	A rogue, a raſcal.
Má cáſta,	Curſed race.
Tônto,	Giddy-brains, blunderbuſs.
Aſneiráõ,	A great beaſt, a thick-ſkull.

To admire.

O' Déos!	O God!
Hé poſsível!	Is it poſſible!
Quem tería imaginádo, crído, díto,	Who would have thought, believed, ſaid!
Que animál!	What a beaſt!
Que maravílha! or *que milágre!*	O ſtrange!
Naõ me maravílho!	I don't wonder.
Cômo póde ſer íſto! or *Cômo he poſsível!*	How can that be!
Eis aquí cômo ſáõ as côuſas dêſte múndo!	So goes the world!

To shew Joy and Displeasure.

Que gôſto!	What pleaſure!
Que glória!	What glory!
Que alegría!	What joy!
Que contentaménto he o mêu!	How pleaſed I am!
Que felicidáde!	What happineſs!
Sínto íſſo,	I am sorry for it.
Sínto iſſo na álma,	That touches my very ſoul.
Sínto íſſo no coraçaõ,	It pierces me to the heart.
O' que deſgráça he a mínha!	O how unhappy am I!

Affrontár-me déſta sórte!	To affront me thus!
Aſsím he que ſe tráta?	Do you deal thus?
O'lha marôto!	You rogue!
Que bélla cortesía!	O what fine manners!
Naõ devería tratár comígo déſta ſórte,	Thou oughteſt not to treat me thus.
Paréce-te bem?	Doſt thou think that it will?
Aprênde, pedáço d'áſno,	Learn, beaſt as thou art.
O'lha cômo me tráta éſte animál,	See the brute, how he uſes me.
Olhái que velháco he éſte,	Do you behold that raſcal.
Que diábo tem êlle fêito?	What the devil has he done?
Pôis, aínda teimáis?	What, are you obſtinate ſtill?

To call.

O'uve!	Hark!
O'nde eſtás?	Where art thou?
Húma palávra,	A word.
Dúas palávras ſomênte,	I'll ſpeak but two words to you.

To shew Uneasiness, Trouble, and Sorrow.

Sínto or *pêſame,*	I am ſorry.
Dêixame,	Let me be quiet.
Péço-te que me dêixes.	Prithee get thee gone.
Naõ me québres a cabêça,	Do not break my head.
O'ra vâmos, dêixame,	Away, away.
Dêixame, vái com Dêos,	Go, go, God be with you.
Váite daquí or *váite embóra,*	Get thee gone from hence.
Vái tratár da túa vída,	Go mind your own buſineſs.
Váite na má hóra, or *váite co'diábo,*	Go to the devil.
Naõ me faças a cabêça tônta,	Do not make me giddy.
Ja me tens díto íſſo hum cénto de vêzes,	You have told it me a hundred times already.

To ask.

Que nóvas há?	What news?
Que he íſto? que há?	What is this, what is the matter?

O'nde ídes?	Where are you a-going?
Dônde víndes?	Whence come you?
Que quer dizêr?	What do you mean?
De que ſérve?	To what purpoſe?
Que vos parêce?	What do you think?
Quem têve tal atrevimênto?	Who is that has been ſo bold?
Que dizem? que ſe diz?	What do they ſay?
Cómo diz vm^ce?	How do you ſay?
Por que naõ me reſponde?	Why don't you anſwer?

To forbid.

Deixái eſtár íſſo,	Let that alone.
Naõ toquêis,	Do not touch.
Naõ digáis náda,	Say not a word.
Guardáivos,	Have a care.

Of speaking, saying, doing, &c.

Fálle vm^ce álto,	Speak loud.
Fálle vm^ce mânſo,	Speak low.
Com quem fálla vm^ce?	Who do you ſpeak to?
Fálle vm^ce comígo?	Do you ſpeak to me?
Fálle-lhe,	Speak to him, *or* to her.
Fálla vm^ce Portuguéz?	Do you ſpeak Portugueſe?
Que diz vm^ce?	What do you ſay?
Naõ dígo náda,	I ſay nothing.
E'lla naõ quer calár-ſe.	She will not hold her tongue.
Ouví dizêr que——	I was told that——
Aſsím mo diſsérão,	I was told ſo.
Aſsim dízem,	They ſay ſo.
Aſsím dizem tôdos,	Every one ſays ſo.
Quem lho díſſe a vm^ce?	Who told it you?
Díſſemo o Sr. A.	Mr. A. told it me.
Pôis élle he que lho díſſe?	Did he tell you ſo?
Pôis élla he que o díſſe?	Did ſhe tell it?
Quândo o ouvío vm. dizêr?	When did you hear it?
Diſſéraõ mo hôje,	I heard it to day.
Naõ póſſo crê-lo,	I can't believe it.
Que diz élle?	What does he ſay?
Que vos díſſe êlle?	What did he ſay to you?
E'lle naõ me díſſe náda,	He ſaid nothing to me.
Naõ lho díga vm.	Do not tell him that.
E'u lho dirêi,	I'll tell him, *or* her of it.
Naõ díga náda,	Say not a word.
Díſſe vm. aquíllo?	Did you ſay that?

Naõ o dísse,	I did not ſay it.
Naõ dísse vm. assím?	Did you not ſay ſo?
Que está vm. fazêndo?	What are you doing?
Que tem vm. fêito?	What have you done!
Naõ fáço náda,	I do nothing.
Raõ ténho feito náda,	I have done nothing.
Tem vm. acabádo?	Have you done?
Que está êlle fazêndo?	What is he doing?
Que faz élla?	What does ſhe do?
Que quer, or *que ordêna vm?*	What is your pleaſure?
Que lhe fálta?	What do you want?

Of understanding or apprehending.

Entênde-o, or *percébe-o vm. bem?*	Do you underſtand him well?
Percébe vm. o que êlle díſse?	Did you underſtand what he ſaid?
Percébe vm. o que élle diz?	Do you underſtand what he ſays?
Entêndeme, or *percébemevm.?*	Do you underſtand me?
Entêndo a vm. múito bem,	I underſtand you very well.
Naõ entêndo a vm.	I do not underſtand you.
Sabe vm. a língua Portuguéza?	Do you underſtand Portugueſe?
Naõ a ſéi,	I do not underſtand it.
Tem-me vm. percebído?	Did you underſtand me?
Agóra o percébo,	Now I underſtand you.
Naõ ſe percébe o que élle diz,	One cannot underſtand what he utters.
Parêce gágo,	He ſpeaks like a ſtammerer.

Of knowing, or having Knowledge of.

Sábe vm. íſso?	Do you know that?
Naõ o ſêi,	I do not know it.
Naõ ſéi náda diſso,	I knew nothing of it.
E'lla bem o ſabía,	She knew well of it.
Porventúra naõ ſabía êlle íſso?	Did he not know of it?
Dêmos que êu o ſoubéſse,	Suppoſe I knew it.
E'lle naõ ſaberú náda diſso,	He ſhall know nothing of it.
Elle núnca ſôube náda diſto,	He never knew any thing about this.
E'u ſôube-o primêiro, or *ântes que vm. o ſoubéſse,*	I knew it before you.

He isto assim ou naõ?	Is it so, or not?
Naõ que êu saiba,	Not that I know of.

Of knowing or being acquainted with, forgetting, and remembering.

Conhêce-o vm.?	Do you know him?
Conhêce-a vm.?	Do you know her?
Conhêce-os vm.?	Do you know them?
Conhêço-o muito bem,	I know him very well.
Naõ os conhêço,	I do not know them.
Nós naõ nos conhecêmos,	We do not know one another.
Conhêço-o de vista,	I know him by sight.
Conhêço-a de nôme,	I have heard of her.
Elle conhecêo-me múito bem,	He knew me very well.
Conhêce-me vm.?	Do you know me?
Tênho-me esquecído do sêu nôme	I have forgot your name.
Tem-se vm esquecído de mim?	Did you forget me?
Conhêce-vos élla?	Does she know you?
Conhêce o Sr. a vm.?	Does the gentleman know you?
Parêce que naõ me conhêce,	It appears he does not know me.
O Sr. bem me conhêce,	The gentleman knows me well.
E'lle ja me naõ conhêce,	He knows me no more.
Tênho a honra de ser sêu conhecído,	I have the honour to be known to him.
Lêmbra-se vm. dísso?	Do you remember that?
Naõ me lêmbro dísso,	I do not remember it,
Lêmbro-me múito bem dísso,	I do remember it very well.

Of Age, Life, Death, &c.

Que idáde tem vm.?	How old are you?
Que idáde tem sêu irmaõ?	How old is your brother?
Tênho vinte e cinco ânnos,	I am five and twenty.
Tem vinte e dôus ânnos,	He is twenty-two years old.
Vm. tem máis ânnos do que êu,	You are older than I.
Que idáde terá vm.?	How old may you be?
He vm. casádo?	Are you married?
Quântas vêzes tem vm. sido casádo?	How often have you been married?
Quântas molhéres tem vm. tido?	How many wives have you had?

Tem vm. aínda páy, e mãy?	Have you father and mother ſtill alive?
Mêu páy morrêo,	My father is dead.
Mínha mãy morréo.	My mother is dead.
Ha dôus ánnos que mêu páy morrêo,	My father has been dead theſe two years.
Minha mãy casôu ôutra véz,	My mother is married again.
Quântos fílhos tem vm.?	How many children have you?
Tênho quátro,	I have four.
Fílhos, ou fílhas?	Sons or daughters?
Tênho hum fílho, e tres fílhas?	I have one ſon and three daughters.
Quântos irmaõs tem vm.?	How many brothers have you?
Naõ ténho nenhúm vivo,	I have none alive.
Tôdos morrêraõ,	They are all dead.
Tódos havêmos de morrér,	We muſt all die.

Of the word hora, *as a Noun as well as an Interjection.*

Hóra,	An hour, *also* a particular time.
Eu eſtarêi lá, dêntro de húma hóra,	I will be there within an hour.
Que hóras sãõ?	What's o'clock?
Saõ séte hóras,	It is ſeven o'clock.
A que hóras eſtarêis vós lá?	At what hour *or* time will you be there?
As hóras que fôr precíso,	In due *or* good time, at the time appointed.
Hóras desoccupádas,	Leiſure hours.
A última hóra ou *a hóra da mórte,*	The laſt hour, *or* the dying hour.
Cada hóra,	Every hour.
De hóra em hóra,	Hourly, every hour.
Mêya hóra,	Half an hour.
Hum quárto de hóra,	A quarter of an hour.
Húma hóra e mêya,	An hour and a half.
Pérto das nóve hóras,	About nine o'clock.
Há huma hóra,	An hour ago, *or* an hour ſince.
Fóra de hóras,	Beyond the hour, *or* very late.
A hóras,	In time.
Recolhêr-se a boas hóras,	To keep good hours.
Recolhêr-se fóra de hóras,	To keep bad hours.
Hóras de jantár ou *de ceár,*	Dinner, *or* ſupper time.
Pérto das hóras de jantár,	About dinner time.

Aínda eſtáis na câma a éſtas hóras?	Are you a-bed at this time of the day?
O relógio dá hóras,	The clock ſtrikes.
Já dérão ônze hóras,	It ſtruck eleven o'clock.
Relógio de hôra,	Hour-glaſs.
Múito a bôas hóras,	Early, betimes.
A bôas hóras,	In good time, in time, at the time appointed.
Na má hóra,	In an ill hour, unluckily, unfortunately.
Vái te na ma-hóra,	Go to the devil, go and be hanged.
Tôda a hóra que,	Whenſoever, at what time ſoever.
A tôda a hóra que quizérdes,	At what time you will.
Hóra,	Time *or* hour of child-birth.
Molhér que ânda para câda hóra,	A woman near her time.
Hóras de fazêr oração,	Prayer-time.
Hóras de hir á igrêja,	Church-time.
Hóras de hir para a câma,	Bed-time.
Hóras de comér,	Times of eating.
Já não ſão hóras,	The time is paſt, it is too late.
Chegár á hóra,	Is for a perſon to die.
Eſtár eſperândo pella ſúa hóra	To wait for God's time.
Não vêr a hóra,	To long, to deſire earneſtly, to wiſh with eagerneſs continued, with *em*, or *de* before the thing deſired.
São hóras de, &c.	It is time to, *&c.*
Hóras canónicas,	The ſet time for the clergy to ſay their office; alſo thoſe parts of the office itſelf, called *Prime, Tierce, Sixth, None*, &c.
Hóras,	Any little prayer book, but particularly that in which is the office of the *Bleſſed Virgin.*
As quarênta hóras,	So they call the ſpace of three days, in which the conſecrated Hoſt is expoſed and laid to públic view.
Cônta das hóras,	Horography, account of hours
A'rte de dividír o têmpo em hóras,	Horometry.

Hóra *as an Adverb and Interjection.*

Hóra deíxa-o-hír,	Pray let him go.
Hóra deíxate déſtas parvoíces,	Away with theſe fopperies.
Hóra, deixêmo-nos dêſtes comprimêntos,	Away with theſe compliments.
Hóra-vâmos, deſpáxate,	Come, come, make haſte.
Hóra vâmos, naõ ha perígo,	Away, there is no danger.
Hóra vâmos, tíra daqui íſto,	Away with this.
Hóra vâmos, têm vergônha,	Away for ſhame.
Hóra, êu naõ póſſo ſofrêr aquíllo,	I cannot bear that.
Hóra hum, hóra ôutro,	Sometimes one, ſometimes another.
E'lles hóra eſtáõ ſôbre hum pé, hóra ſôbre ôutro,	They ſtand now on one foot, and then on another.
Hóra, que quer dizêr íſſo?	How now?
Túdo o que he bôm, déve ſêr amádo; hóra, Dêos he infinitamênte bôm, lógo, &c.	All that is good to be loved, now God is infinitely good, therefore, *&c.*
Hóra, havía hum enfêrmo,	Now there was a ſick man.
Por hóra,	At preſent, for the preſent, now, at this time.

A VOCABULARY OF WORDS MOST USED IN DISCOURSE.

Do Céo e dos Elemêntos.	*Of the Heaven and the Elements.*
DÊOS,	GOD.
Jesús Chrísto,	Jesus Christ.
O Espírito Santo,	The Holy Ghost.
A Trindáde,	The Trinity.
A Vírgem,	The Virgin.
Os ânjos,	The angels.
Os archânjos,	The arch-angels.
Os sântos,	The saints.
Os bemaventurádos,	The blessed.
O céo,	Heaven.
O paraiso,	Paradise.
Inférno,	Hell.
Purgatório,	Purgatory.
Os diábos,	The devils.
O fôgo,	The fire.
O ár,	The air.
A térra,	The earth.
O már,	The sea.
O sól,	The sun.
A lúa,	The moon.
As estrêllas,	The stars.
Os ráios,	The rays.

As núvens,	The clouds.
O vénto,	The wind.
A chúva,	The rain.
O trovaõ,	Thunder.
O relâmpago,	The lightning.
Saráiva,	Hail.
O ráyo,	The thunderbolt.
A néve,	The snow.
A geáda,	The frost.
O caramélo,	The ice.
O orválho,	The dew.
Névoa,	A fog, *or* mist.
Nevoéiro,	A thick fog.
O terremóto,	The earthquake.
O dilúvio,	The deluge, *or* flood.
O calôr,	The heat.
O frío,	The cold.

Do Têmpo.	*Of the Time.*
O día,	The day.
A nôite,	The night.
Mêyo día,	Noon.
Méya nôite,	Midnight.
A manháa,	The morning.
Despôis do mêyo día,	The afternoon.
Húma hóra,	An hour.
Hum quárto de hóra,	A quarter of an hour.
Mêya hóra,	Half an hour.
Tres quartos de hóra,	Three-quarters of an hour.
Hóje,	To-day.
O'ntem,	Yesterday.
Amanhãa,	To-morrow.
Antes d' ôntem,	The day before yesterday.
Depôis de amanhãa,	After to-morrow.
Depôis de jantár,	After dinner.
Depôis de cêa,	After supper.
Húma semána,	A week.
Hum mês,	A month.
Hum ánno,	A year.
Día sánto,	A holy-day.
Día de trabálho,	A working day.
O nascêr do sól,	The sun-rising.
O pôr do sól,	The sun-set.

Témpo de séga, or *da acéifa*,	The harvest.
Témpo de vindíma,	The vintage.

Das Estaçôens do Têmpo.	*Of the Seasons.*
A primavéra,	The spring.
O veráõ,	The summer.
O outôno,	Autumn.
O invérno.	Winter.

Os Días da Semâna.	*The Days of the Week.*
Domíngo,	Sunday.
Segúnda féira,	Monday.
Têrça féira,	Tuesday.
Quârta féira,	Wednesday.
Quínta féira,	Thursday.
Sêxta féira,	Friday.
Sábado,	Saturday.

Dos Méses.	*Of the Months.*
Janéiro,	January.
Feveréiro,	February.
Márço,	March.
Abríl,	April.
Máyo,	May.
Júnho,	June.
Júlho,	July.
Agôsto,	August.
Setêmbro,	September.
Outúbro,	October.
Novêmbro,	November.
Dezêmbro,	December.

Días Sântos.	*Holy-Days of the Year.*
Día de A'nno bom,	New Year's Day.
Día de Réys, a Epiphanía,	Twelfth Day.
A Candelária,	Candlemas day.

Purificaçáõ,	The Purification.
O Entrúdo,	The Carnival, *or* Shrovetide.
Quárta féira da Cinzas,	Ash Wednesday.
A Quarésma,	The Lent.
Annunciaçáõ,	Lady Day in March.
As Quátro Témporas,	The Ember Weeks.
A Semâna sânta,	The Holy Week.
Domíngo de Râmos,	Palm Sunday.
Quárta féira de Trevas,	Wednesday before Easter.
Quínta féira de Endoênças,	Maunday Thursday, the last Thursday in Lent.
Sésta féira da Paixáõ,	Good Friday.
Páscoa da Resurreyçáõ,	Easter Day.
Assumpçáõ de N. S^a^.	Lady Day in harvest.
As Rogaçóens, or *Ladaínhas,*	Rogation Week.
Ascensaõ,	The Ascension.
Pentecóste,	The Pentecost, *or* Whitsuntide.
Día do Côrpo de Dêos,	Corpus Christi Day.
Día de S. Joáõ,	Midsummer Day.
Día de S. Pédro,	Lammas Day.
Día de tôdos os Sântos,	All Saints Day.
Día dos Finádos,	All Souls.
Día de S. Martínho,	Martinmas.
Día de Natál,	Christmas Day.
Vigília, or *véſpera,*	The eve.

Da Igréja e Dignidádes Ecclesiásticas.	*Of the Church and Ecclesiastical Dignities.*
A náve,	The aisle of the church.
Zimbório,	The dome.
Pináculo,	Pinnacle.
Côro,	The choir.
Capélla,	The chapel.
Estánte,	A reading desk, *or* chorister's desk.
Sacristía,	The vestry.
Campanário, ou *tôrre dos sinos,*	The belfry, *or* steeple.
Síno,	The bell.
Badálo,	The clapper of the bell.
Pía,	The font.
Hysópe,	A sprinkler.
Confeſſionário,	A confession seat.

Tribúna,	A tribune, *or* gallery.
Cemitério,	A church-yard, a burying-place.
Carneíro,	A charnel.
Altár,	An altar.
Frontál,	An antipendium,
Pállio,	A canopy.
Toálha do altár,	The altar cloth.
Missál,	A missal, a mass-book.
Sotána,	A cassock.
Sobrepellíz,	A surplice.
Roquête,	A short surplice, a bishop's surplice.
O pápa,	The pope.
Hum cardeál,	A cardinal.
Hum patriárca,	A patriarch.
Hum arcebíspo,	An archbishop.
Hum bíspo,	A bishop.
Hum legádo,	A legate.
Více legádo,	A vice-legate.
Hum núncio,	A nuncio.
Hum preládo,	A prelate.
Hum commendadôr,	A commander.
Hum abbáde,	An abbot.
Húma abbadéssa,	An abbess.
Hum priôr,	A prior.
Hum reitôr,	A rector.
Beneficiádo,	Beneficed clergyman, *or* incumbent.
Fráde, or *religiôso,*	A friar.
Corôa,	A shaven crown.
Hum guardiáõ,	A guardian.
Hum definidôr,	A definitor.
Hum provinciál,	A provincial.
Hum gerál,	A general.
Hum vigário,	A vicar.
Hum vigário gerál,	A vicar-general.
Hum de õ,	A dean.
Hum arcediágo,	Archdeacon.
Diácono,	Deacon.
Subdiácono,	A sub-deacon.
Hum cónego,	A canon.
Arcipréste,	Arch-priest.
Hum clérigo,	A priest.
Capelláõ,	A chaplain.

Hum esmolér,	An almoner
Hum párroco,	A curate.
Benefício simples,	Sinecure.
Frêira,	A nun.
Hum prégadôr,	A preacher, *or* lecturer.
Sacristáõ, or *sancristáõ,*	A sexton, a vestry-keeper.
Menino do côro,	A singing boy.

Nômes das côusas que geralmênte se comem.	*Names of things most usually eaten.*
Paõ,	Bread.
A'goa,	Water.
Vinho,	Wine.
Cárne,	Meat, *or* flesh.
Pêixe,	Fish.
Cárne cozída,	Boiled meat.
Cárne açáda,	Roast meat.
Hum bocádo de paõ,	A mouthful of bread.
Hum pastél,	A pye.
Sôpa,	Soup.
Cáldo,	Broth.
Saláda,	A sallad.
Môlho,	Any kind of sauce to dip in, provoking appetite.
Frúta,	Fruit.
Queíjo,	Cheese.
Manteíga,	Butter.

Do Servíço de huma Mêsa.	*Of the Covering of the Table.*
A mêsa,	The table.
Húma cadêira,	A chair.
A toálha da mêsa,	The table cloth.
Toálha de maõs,	A towel.
Hum guardanápo,	A napkin.
Húma fáca,	A knife.
Hum gárfo,	A fork.
Húma colhér,	A spoon.
Hum práto,	A plate.
Hum saleiro,	A saltseller.
Galhêta do vinágre,	A vinegar bottle, or cruet.
Galhêta do azeíte,	A cruet, or vial for oil.

Talhér,	A cruet-stand.
Assucarêiro,	Sugar-basin.
Bayxélla ou *servíço de práta,*	A set of silver plate.
Húma cubérta,	A course.
Práto, guardanápo, fáca, gárfo, colhér (túdo júnto)	A cover.
Járro,	The ewer.
Húma bacia,	A basin.
Hum cópo,	A glass.
Húma garráfa,	A bottle.
Húma táça,	A cup.
Castiçál,	A candlestick.
Véla,	A candle.
Tesôuras de espevitár,	Snuffers.
Húma sálva,	A salver.
Húma escudélla,	A porringer.
Césto pâra pôr o paõ,	A bread-basket.
Donzélla,	A dumb-waiter.
Faquéiro,	A case for knives.
Lóuça de Bárro,	Earthen ware.
Lóuça de estánho,	Pewter.

Do Comêr, e Bebêr.	*Of Eating and Drinking.*
Váca,	Beef.
Carnéiro,	Mutton.
Vitélla,	Veal.
Cordéiro,	Lamb.
Gallínha,	Hen, a fowl.
Gállo,	Cock.
Perú,	A turkey.
Almôndegas,	Force meat balls.
O jantár,	The dinner.
Almôço,	Breakfast.
Céa,	Supper.
Merênda,	The afternoon's luncheon.
Consoáda,	A light supper, as upon a fast-day.
Banquête,	An entertainment, a banquet,
Fóme,	Hunger.
Sêde,	Thirst.
Fastío,	A loathing.
Paõ,	Bread.

Páõ frésco, or *paõ mólle*,	New bread.
Paõ quênte,	A hot loaf.
Paõ de tôda farínha,	Common bread.
Páõ brânco, or *paõ alvo*,	White bread.
Arrôz,	Rice.
Paõ de rála,	Brown bread.
Paõ de ceváda,	Barley bread.
Paõ de centéo,	Rye bread.
Paõ de avêa,	Oaten bread.
Paõ de mílho miúdo,	Millet bread.
Paõ de mílho grânde, ou *de maíz*,	Indian corn bread.
Paõ lêvedo,	Leavened bread.
Paõ ásmo,	Unleavened bread.
Biscóuto,	Biscuit.
Migálha de paõ,	A crumb of bread.
Fatía de páõ,	A slice of bread.
Côdea de paõ,	A crust of bread.
Mássa,	Dough.
Tórta,	A tart.
Rôsca,	Bread made like a roll.
Estofádo,	Stewed meat.
Fiâmbre,	Cold meat.
Cárne assáda sôbre grélhas,	Broiled meat.
Cárne fríta,	Fried meat.
Picádo, or *cárne picáda*,	Sausage meat.
Javalí, or *pôrco montéz*,	A wild boar.
Presúnto,	Ham, gammon of bacon.
Pôrco,	Pork.
Cabríto,	Kid.
Toucínho,	Bacon.
Hum lômbo,	A loin.
Maõs de carneíro,	Sheep's trotters.
Fressúra, or *forçúra*,	A pluck.
Cachóla de porco,	A pig's head.
Linguíça, or *lingóiça*,	A sausage.
Chouríço de sângue de pôrco,	Black-pudding.
Páyo,	A thick and short sausage.
Fricassé,	A fricassee.
Fígado,	Liver.
Léite,	Milk.
Náta,	Cream.
Sôro,	Whey.
Requeijáõ,	A kind of new cheese.
Coalháda,	Curdled milk.

ôvo,	An egg.
Gêmma do ôvo,	The yolk of an egg.
Clára do ôvo,	The white of an egg.
ôvo frêſco,	A new laid egg.
ôvo mólle,	A soft egg.
ôvo dúro,	A hard egg.
ôvo assádo,	A roasted egg.
ôvo galládo,	An egg with a chicken in it.
óvos reáes,	Sweet eggs spun out like hairs.
óvos escalfádos,	Poached eggs.
óvos frítos,	Fried eggs.
óvos mexidos, e frítos,	An amlet.
Bolinhólo,	A fritter.
óvas de péixe,	The roes of fish.
Dôces,	Sweetmeats,
Conféitos,	Comfits.
Marmeláda,	Marmalade.

O que ſe A'ssa.	*What is roasted.*
Hum capaõ,	A capon.
Húma frânga,	A pullet.
Hum frângo,	A chicken.
Pômbos,	Pigeons.
Pômbo trocáz,	A wood culver, or wood-pigeon.
Gallinhóla,	A woodcock.
Húma espécie degallinhóla pequena á qualos Castelhànos chamão gallineta ciéga,	A snipe.
Perdíz,	A partridge.
Tôrdo,	A thrush.
Faisáõ,	A pheasant.
Faisãosínho,	A pheasant-powt.
Hum leitáõ,	A roasting-pig.
Veádo,	A stag.
Hum Coêlho,	A rabbit.
Láparo,	A young coney.
Lébre,	A hare.
ádem,	A duck.
Gânso, or o mácho da ádem,	A drake.
Páta,	Goose.
Páto,	Gander, the male of the goose.

Calhándra,	A sky-lark.
Codorniz,	A quail.

De ôutros Pássaros.	*Of other Birds.*
águia,	An eagle.
aguia nóva,	An eaglet.
Abútre,	A vulture.
Abestrús,	An ostrich.
Esmerilhaõ,	A merlin.
Gaviáõ,	A sparrow hawk.
Môcho,	The horned owl.
Falcáõ,	A falcon.
Falcáõ que ainda naõ vóa,	A jass-hawk.
Gerifálte,	A ger-falcon.
Sácre,	A saker, a saker-hawk.
Garça,	A heron.
Melharúco,	Tomtit.
Garçóta,	A little heron.
Milhâno, or *milháfre,*	A kite.
Côrvo,	A crow, or raven.
Grálha,	A rook.
Grálho,	A jack-daw.
Alvéloa or *rabêta,*	A wag-tail.
Canário,	A canary-bird.
Pintacilgo,	A gold-finch.
Mérlo,	A black-bird.
Tentilháõ,	A chaffinch.
Rouxinól,	A nightingale.
Verdelháõ,	A green-bird.
Papagáyo,	A parrot.
Péga,	A magpie.
Estorninho, or *zorzál,*	A starling.
Francêlho,	A hobby, a musket.
Môcho,	Owl.
Corúja,	A screech owl.
Morcêgo,	A bat.
A've noctúrna, cómo mélro, que máma as cábras,	A goat milker.
O francolím,	A godwit, a moor-cock.
Búfo,	A night crow, *or* raven.
Cercéta,	A teal.
Córvo morinho,	A cormorant.

Gaivóta,	A moor-hen, *or* gull.
Gaivão,	A martlet, *or* martin, a kind of swallow.
Andorínha,	A swallow.
Mergulhaõ,	A dive, *or* didapper.
Marréca,	A wild-duck.
Picânço,	A wren, a little bird.
Taralhão,	A kind of ortolan.
Pavão,	A peacock.
Pavôa,	A pea-hen.
Arára,	A macaw.
Pardál,	A sparrow.
Rôla,	A turtle-dove.
Alcyôn,	A king's fisher.
Cegônha,	A stork.
Cúco,	A cuckow.
Císne,	A swan.
Pintarrôxo,	A red robin.
Grôu,	A crane.
Pavoncíno,	A lapwing.
Pelicâno,	A pelican.
Tarambóla,	A plover.
Písco,	A bullfinch, *or* red-tail.

Para os Días de Péixe, ou de Jejúm.	*For Fish Days, or Fast Days.*
Sôpa de érvas, &c.	Soup meagre, *or* lenten pettage.
Péixe,	Fish.
Péixe do már,	Sea-fish.
Péixe do río, ou *da ágoa dôce,*	Fresh-water fish.
Sável,	A shad.
Anchôva,	An anchovy.
Anguía, or *Enguía,*	An eel.
Bârbo,	A barbel.
Lúcio,	A pike, *or* jack.
Cárpe,	A carp.
Síba,	A cuttle.
Lúla,	A calamary.
Cábra,	The miller's thumb.
Goráz,	A rochet, *or* roach.
Cóngro,	A conger.
Douráda,	Dorado, St. Peter's fish, *or* the gilt head.

Linguádo,	A sole.
Lagôsta,	A lobster.
Bordálo,	A sturgeon; some call it shad-fish.
Múgem,	A mullet.
Rodoválho,	A byrt *or* turbot.
Sárda,	A sort of little mackarel.
Caválla,	A mackarel.
Sardinha,	A pilchard.
Bacalháo,	Dry cod.
Arênque,	A herring.
Voadôr,	A flying-fish.
Arrênque de fúmo,	A red herring.
Arrênque com óvas,	A hard-rowed herring.
Pescáda,	A kind of cod-fish.
Cadóz,	A gudgeon.
ôstra,	An oyster.
Lampréa,	A lamprey.
Lampréa pequêna,	A lampern.
Pôrco marínho,	A porpoise.
Pôlvo,	Pourcontrell *or* many-feet.
Pérca,	Perch.
Tínca,	A tench.
Trúta,	A trout.
Atúm,	A tunny-fish.
Salmaõ,	A salmon.
Camaraõ,	A shrimp, *or* pawn.
Caranguéjo,	A crab.
Amêijoa,	A cockle.
Ervílhas,	Pease.
Fávas,	Beans.
Espináfres,	Spinage.
Alcachófras,	Artichokes.
Espárgo,	Asparagus.
Côuve,	Cabbage, colewort.
Repôlho,	Summer cabbage.
Nábos,	Turnips.
Grêlos de côuve,	Sprouts.
Côuve crêspa,	Curled colewort.
Couve Flôr,	Cauliflower.
Beldroégas,	Purslane.
Cenôuras,	Carrots.
Célgas, or *acélgas,*	Beets.
Tomátes,	Apples of love.

Pâra temparár o Comêr.	*To season meat with.*
Sál,	Salt.
Piménta,	Pepper.
Pimentáõ,	Cayan pepper.
Azéite,	Oil.
Vinágre,	Vinegar.
Mostárda,	Mustard.
Crávo da India,	Cloves.
Canéla,	Cinnamon.
Louréiro,	Laurel.
Alcapárras,	Capers.
Cogumélos,	Mushrooms.
Túbara da térra,	Truffles.
Cebôlas,	Onions.
Ourégaõ,	Organy.
Fúncho,	Fennel.
Cebolínhas,	Young onions.
A'lho,	Garlick.
Larânjas,	Oranges.
Limôens,	Lemons.
Pinhôens,	The kernels of a pine apple.
Perrexíl,	Wild parsley.
Sálsa,	Garden parsley.
Orteláã,	Mint.
Aipo,	Cellery.
A'lho pôrro,	Leek.
Coéntro,	Coriander.
Açafrám,	Saffron.
Comínhos,	Cummins.

Pâra Saláda.	*For a Sallad.*
Almeiraõ,	Wild succory.
Almeiraõ hortênse, or *endívia,*	Endive.
Alfáce,	Lettuce.
Chicória,	Succory.
Agriôens,	Water cresses.
Mastrúços, or *mastúrços,*	Cresses.
Cerefólio,	Chervil.
Rábaõ,	Raddish root.

Pâră Sombremêsa.	*For the Dessert.*
Maçaãs,	Apples.
Pêras,	Pears.
Péra bergamóta,	A bergamot pear.
Pêcegos,	Peaches.
Camoêza,	A pippin.
Albricóque,	Apricot.
Cerêjas,	Cherries.
Cerêjas de sáco,	Hard cherries.
Ginjas,	Sour cherries.
Ginja garrafál,	A very large sort of cherry, the fruit of the dwarf cherry-tree.
Larânja da Chína,	China-orange.
U'vas,	Grapes.
Pássas de úva,	Raisins.
U'va espím,	Gooseberries.
Fígos,	Figs.
Fígos lâmpos,	The first figs that come in May.
Amêixas,	Plums.
Pássas de améixas,	Prunes.
Amóras de çarça, or *de sylva,*	Blackberries.
Amóras que nácem de húma sorte de sylva tênra,	Raspberries.
Amóras que nácem da amorêira.	Mulberries.
Marmêlos,	Quinces.
Romããs,	Pomegranates.
Líma,	A lime.
Azeitônas,	Olives.
Amêndoas,	Almonds.
Nêsperas,	Medlars.
Melãõ,	A melon.
Melancía, or *balancía,*	Water-melon.
Castânhas,	Chesnuts.
Nózes,	Walnuts.
Avelâns,	Hazelnuts.
Morângos,	Strawberries.
Medrônho,	A sort of fruit they have in Portugal like a strawberry, eating whereof, they say, makes people drunk.

Tâmara,	A date.
Fístico,	A pistache-nut.
Alfarrôba,	A carob.
Bolóta,	A sweet acorn.
Sôrva,	Service.
Açofeifa, or *maçãã de náſega,*	A jubub.
Dôces,	Sweet-meats.

Das A'rvores e Arbústos.	*Of Trees and Shrubs.*
Damasquêiro,	An apricot-tree.
Amendoêira,	An almond-tree.
Cerejêira,	A cherry-tree.
Castanhêiro,	A chesnut-tree.
Cidrêira,	A citron-tree.
Sorvêira,	A service-tree.
Palmêira,	A palm-tree.
Figuêira,	A fig-tree.
Marmelêiro,	A quince-tree.
Macéira,	An apple-tree.
Macêira da náſega,	A jubub-tree.
Romêira,	A pomegranate-tree.
Limoêiro,	A lemon-tree.
Amorêira,	A mulberry-tree.
Olivêira,	An olive-tree.
Nesperêira,	A medlar-tree.
Laranjêira,	An orange-tree.
Múrta,	Myrtle.
Noguêira,	A walnut-tree.
Zambujêira,	A wild olive-tree.
E'ra,	Ivy.
Peceguêiro,	A peach-tree.
Rosêira,	A rose-bush.
Ameixiêira,	A plum-tree.
Perêira,	A pear-tree.
Rosmanínho,	Rosemary.
Pinhêiro,	A pine-tree.
Giésta,	Broom.

Dos Reptís, e Animáes amphíbios.	*Of Reptiles and Amphibious Creatures.*
Minhóca,	An earth-worm.
Serpênte,	A serpent.

Serpênte com ázas,	A flying serpent.
A'spide,	An asp.
Cóbra,	A snake.
Cóbra de cascavél,	A rattle-snake.
Víbora,	A viper.
Lagárto,	A lizard.
O'sga,	An evet, eft, *or* newt.
Alacráo,	A scorpion.
Crocodílo,	A crocodile.
Jacaré, or *crocodílo da America.*	An alligator.
Castór,	A beaver.
Cágado,	A land tortoise.
Lôntra,	An otter.

Dos Inséctos.	*Of Insects.*
Arânha,	A spider.
Formíga,	A pismire *or* ant.
Caracól,	A snail.
Ráā,	A frog.
Sápo,	A toad.
Ouçáō,	Hand-worm.
Escaravélho,	A beetle.
Carúncho,	Wood-worm
Piôlho, or *lagárta da hortalíça*	Caterpillar.
Cigárra,	Grasshopper.
Borbolêta,	A butterfly.
Gríllo,	A cricket.
Piôlho,	A louse.
Piôlho ládro,	Crab-louse.
Lêndea,	A nit.
Púlga,	A flea.
Môsca,	A fly.
Persovéjo,	A bug.
Carrapáto,	A tick.
Gafanhôto,	A locust.
Polílha, or *tráça,*	Moth.
Vêspa, or *abespora,*	A wasp.
Abélha,	A bee.
Zângo, or *Zangáō,*	A drone.
Tavaō,	An ox fly.
Bôy de Déos,	A lady-bird.
Mosquíto,	A gnat.

Gráos de Parentêsco.	*Degrees of Kindred.*
Páy,	Father.
Mãy,	Mother.
Avô,	Grandfather.
Avó,	Grandmother.
Bisavô,	Great grandfather.
Bisavó,	Great grandmother.
Filho,	Son.
Filha,	Daughter.
Irmáõ,	Brother.
Irmáã,	Sister.
Primogénito,	The eldest son.
O filho maís môço,	The youngest son.
Tio,	Uncle.
Tia,	Aunt.
Sobrínho,	Nephew.
Sobrínha,	Niece.
Prímo,	Cousin.
Príma,	A female cousin.
Prímo com irmáõ,	The male first cousin.
Príma com irmáã,	The female first cousin.
Cunhádo,	Brother-in-law.
Cunháda,	Sister-in-law.
Mêyo irmáõ,	Half-brother.
Sôgro,	Father-in-law.
Sógra,	Mother-in-law.
Padrásto,	A step-father.
Madrásta,	A step-mother.
Enteádo,	A step-son.
Enteáda,	A step-daughter.
Gênro,	A son-in-law.
Nóra,	A daughter-in-law.
Néta,	A grand-daughter.
Néto,	A grand-son.
Bisnéto,	A great grand-son.
Bisnéta,	A great grand-daughter.
Consórte, masc. and fem.	A consort.
Marido,	Husband.
Molhér,	Wife.
Irmáõ gémeo,	A twin-brother.
Coláço, or *irmáõ de léite,*	A foster-brother.
Bastárdo,	A bastard.
Compádre,	A male-gossip.

Comádre,	A female gossip.
Afilhádo,	A god-son.
Afilháda,	A god-daughter.
Padrinho,	A god-father.
Madrinha,	A god-mother.
O parênte,	A male relation.
A parênte,	A female relation.
Parênte por affinidáde, or *consanguinidade.*	A kin, a relation either of affinity *or* consanguinity.

Dos differêntes Géneros de Estádo de hum Hómem, ou de húma Molhér, e das súas qualidádes,	*Of the conditions of Man and Woman, as well as of their qualities.*
Hum hómem,	A man.
Húma molhér,	A woman.
Hum hómem de idáde,	An aged man.
Húma molhér de idáde,	An aged woman.
Hum vélho,	An old man.
Húma vélha,	An old woman.
Hum môço, ou *mancêbo,*	A young man.
Húma rapariga,	A girl.
Hum amánte,	A lover.
Húma amigà,	A mistress.
Húma criânça, ou *menino,*	A child, a little child.
Hum rapáz,	A boy.
Hum rapazinho,	A little boy.
Húma menina,	A little girl.
Húma donzélla,	A maiden.
Húma vírgem,	A virgin.
A'mo,	A master.
A'ma,	A mistress.
Criádo,	A male-servant.
Criáda,	A female-servant.
Cidadãõ,	A citizen.
Rústico,	A countryman.
Hum estrangêiro,	A stranger, or foreigner.
Hum viúvo,	A widower.
Húma viúva,	A widow.
Hum herdéiro,	An heir.
Huma herdéira,	An heiress.
Soltéiro,	A bachelor.
Estádo de soltéiro,	Bachelorship.

Hómem casádo,	A married man.
Molhér casáda,	A married woman.
Molhér que está de párto.	A lying-in woman.
Déstro,	Dexterous.
Agúdo,	Sharp.
Recatádo,	Cautious.
Astúto, or *velháco,*	Cunning, sly, crafty.
Espérto, or *vívo,*	Sprightly.
Dôudo,	Mad.
Maliciôso,	Malicious.
Tímido,	Fearful.
Valerôso,	Brave.
Tônto,	Stupid.
Embustéiro,	Deceitful.
Grosséiro,	Clownish.
Bem criádo,	Well-bred.
Cortêz,	Courteous.
Jústo,	Just.
Desavergonhádo,	Impudent.
Impertinênte,	Impertinent.
Importúno,	Troublesome.
Descuidádo,	Careless.
Temerário,	Rash.
Constânte,	Constant.
Devóto,	Devout.
Diligênte,	Diligent.
Misericordiôso, or *compassivo.*	Merciful.
Paciênte,	Patient.
Ambiciôso,	Ambitious.
Cõbiçôso,	Covetous.
Sobérbo,	Proud.
Cobárde,	Coward.
Lisonjéiro,	A flatterer.
Golôso,	Glutton.
Desleál,	Treacherous.
Desagradecído,	Ungrateful.
Inhumâno,	Inhumane.
Insolênte,	Insolent.
Luxuriôso,	Lewd.
Teimôso,	Pofitive, stubborn.
Preguiçôso,	Slothful.
Pródigo,	Prodigal.
Molherêngo,	Given to women.
Atrevído,	Bold.
Alégre,	Merry.

Que tem ciúmes,	Jealous.
Adúltero,	Adulterer.
Salteadôr,	A highwayman.
Matadôr,	A murderer.
Murmuradôr,	A censurer.
Calumniadôr,	A calumniator.
Feiticéiro,	A sorcerer.
Traidôr,	A traitor.
Malvádo,	Wicked.
Rebélde,	A rebel.
Pérfido,	Perfidious.
Bôbo,	A buffoon.
Mentirôso,	A lyar.
Altívo,	Haughty.
Côxo,	Lame of the legs.
Estropeádo das maõs,	Lame of the hands.
Cégo,	Blind.
Môuco, or *súrdo,*	Deaf.
Canhôto, or *esquêrdo,*	Left-handed.
Múdo,	Dumb.

Dos Moradôres de húma Cidáde.	*Of the Inhabitants of a City.*
Fidálgo,	A nobleman.
Nóbre,	A gentleman.
Mecânico,	A mechanic.
Tendêiro,	A shop-keeper.
Mercadôr, or *hómem de negócio,*	Merchant, *or* tradesman.
O vúlgo, or *a plébe,*	The mob.
Canálha, or *a máis vil gênte da plébe,*	The rabble.
Officiál,	A work-man, a man that labours with his hands.
Jornaléiro,	A journeyman.
Ouríves,	A silver-smith.
Ourives do ôuro,	A gold-smith.
Livréiro,	A book-seller.
Impressôr,	A printer.
Barbéiro,	A barber.
Mercadôr de séda,	A mercer.
Mercadôr de pánno,	A woollen-draper.

Mercadôr de pânno, de linho, e roupas da India, or *fanqueiro*,	A linen-draper.
Alfayáte,	A taylor.
Alfayáte remendáõ,	Botcher.
Costureíra,	A sempstress.
Chapeleiro, or *Sombreiréiro*,	A hatter.
Sapatéiro,	Shoemaker.
Remendáõ, (sapatéiro),	A cobler.
Ferrêiro,	A blacksmith.
Alveitár,	Farrier.
Cerralheíro,	A locksmith.
Parteíra,	A midwife.
Médico,	A physician.
Charlatáõ,	A quack.
Cirurgiám, or *surgiáõ*,	A surgeon.
Tira dentes,	A tooth drawer.
Selleíro,	A sadler.
Carpenteíro,	A carpenter.
Pioneíro, or *gastadôr*, (in an army.)	A pioneer.
Padêiro,	A baker.
Carniceíro,	A butcher.
Fruteíro,	A fruiterer.
Molhér que vênde verdúras ou *ortalíças*,	A herb woman.
Pasteleíro,	A pastry-cook.
Taverneíro, or *vendeíro*,	A vintner.
Cervejeíro, or *o que faz cervéja*	A brewer.
Estalajadeíro,	An inn-keeper.
Bofarínhêiro,	A pedlar.
Relojoeíro,	A watch-maker.
Pregoeíro,	A crier.
Joyeíro, or *joyalheíro*,	A jeweller.
Boticário,	An apothecary.
Vidraceíro,	A glazier.
Carvoeíro,	A coal man.
Jardineíro,	A gardener.
Letrádo,	A lawyer.
Procuradôr,	A solicitor.
Advogádo,	An advocate, *or* a pleader.
Juíz,	A judge.
Carcereíro,	A gaoler.
Carrásco,	A hangman.
Mariôla,	A porter.

Os cínco Sentídos.	*The five Senses.*
A vísta,	The sight.
O ouvído,	The hearing.
O olfácto,	The smell.
O gôsto,	The taste.
O tácto,	The feeling.

As Pártes do Côrpo Humâno.	*The Parts of the Human Body.*
Cabéça,	The head.
Miólos, or *cérebro,*	The brains.
Toutíço,	The hinder part of the head.
Tésta,	The forehead.
Molleíra,	The mould of the head.
Fôntes,	The temples.
Orélha,	The ear.
Cartilágem,	The gristle, *or* Cartilage.
Tímpano,	The drum of the ear.
Sobrancélha,	Eye-brow.
Pálpebras, or *Capéllas dos olhos,*	The eye-lid.
Pestânas,	The eye-lashes.
Lagrimál,	The corner of the eye.
A'lvo do ôlho,	The white of the eye.
Menínas dos ólhos,	The eye-balls.
Naríz,	The nose.
Maçáã do rôsto,	The ball of the cheeks.
Véntas,	The nostrils.
Sépto, or *diaphrágmo do nariz,*	The gristle of the nose.
A pônta do naríz,	The tip of the nose.
A bôca,	The mouth.
Os dêntes,	The teeth.
A gengíva,	The gum.
A língoa,	Tongue.
Padár, paladár, or *céo da bôca,*	The roof, *or* palate of the mouth.
Queixáda,	The jaw.
A bárba,	The chin.

As bárbas,	The beard.
Bigódes,	Whiskers.
O pescôço,	The neck.
A núca,	The nape of the head.
A gargânta,	The throat.
Séyo,	The bosom.
Têta,	The pap.
Pêito,	The breast.
Bíco de pêito,	The nipple.
Estômago,	The stomach.
Costélas,	The ribs.
Embígo,	The navel.
Barríga,	The belly.
Verílha,	The groin.
O bráço,	The arm.
O cotovêlo,	The elbow.
Sobáco, or *sováco,*	The arm-pit.
A maõ,	The hand.
Púlso,	The wrist.
A pálma da maõ,	The palm of the hand.
Os dêdos,	The fingers.
O dêdo polegár,	The thumb.
O dêdo mostradôr,	The fore-finger.
Dêdo do mêyo,	The middle-finger.
Dêdo annulár,	The ring-finger.
Dêdo meninho, or *mínimo,*	The little-finger.
Pôntas dos dêdos,	The tips, *or* tops of the fingers.
Júntas, e nós dos dêdos,	The joints, and knuckles of the fingers.
Dêdo do pé,	A toe.
A únha,	The nail.
As cóstas,	The back.
Os ômbros,	The shoulders.
Ilhárgas,	The sides.
As nádegas,	The buttocks.
Côxa,	The thigh.
Joêlho,	The knee.
Barríga da pérna,	The calf of the leg.
Espinháço,	The ridge-bone of the back.
Tornozêlo,	The ancle.
O pé,	The foot.
Sóla do pé,	The sole of the foot.
O coraçaõ,	The heart.
Os bófes,	The lungs.

O fígado,	The liver.
O báço,	The spleen.
Os rins,	The kidneys.
A bôca do estômago,	The pit of the stomach.
As trípas,	The guts.
O fél,	The gall.
A mádre,	The womb.
Bexíga,	The bladder.
Sângue,	The blood.
Cúspo,	Spittle.
Ourína,	Urine.
Excreménto,	Dung.
Suór,	Sweat *or* perspiration.
Mônco or *rânho,*	Mucus.
Lágrima,	Tear.
Carépa, or *cáspa,*	Scurf.

Dos Vestídos.	*Of Cloaths.*
Hum vestído,	A suit of cloaths.
Cabelleíra,	A wig.
Cravâta,	A cravat *or* neckcloth.
Chapéo,	A hat.
A'bas do chapéo,	The brims.
Cordaõ, ou *fíta, para o chapéo,*	A hatband.
Barrête,	A cap.
Capóte,	A cloak.
Gibâõ,	A doublet.
Véstia, or *colête,*	A waistcoat.
Camísa,	A shirt.
Casáca,	A coat.
Casacáõ,	A great coat.
Calçõens,	Breeches.
Cerôulas,	Drawers.
Mêas, or *mêyas,*	Stockings.
Mêas de cabrestílho,	Stirrup stockings.
Lígas,	Garters.
Sapátos,	Shoes.
Chinélas,	Slippers.
Bótas,	Boots.
Fivélas,	Buckles.
Espóras,	Spurs.
Púnhos,	Ruffles.
Talím, or *taly,*	A shoulder-belt.

Boldrié,	A sword-belt.
Expáda,	A sword.
Lúvas,	Gloves.
Cínta,	A girdle.
Lênço,	Handkerchief.
Lênço para o pescôço,	A neck handkerchief.
Samárra, or *pellóte do câmpo,*	A shepherd's jacket.

Para Molhéres,	*For Women.*
Camísa de molhéres,	A shift, *or* smock.
Toucádo,	A head dress.
Sáya,	A petticoat.
Mantílha,	A little cloak women wear on their heads.
Mânto,	A mantle, a kind of cloak women wear in Portugal, covering their head and the upper part of their body.
Aventál,	An apron.
Bracelêtes,	Bracelets.
Anél,	Ring.
Bríncos,	Ear-rings.
Léque,	A fan.
Penteadôr,	A combing cloth.
Toucadôr,	A toilet, a dressing table.
Sináes,	Patches to wear on one's face.
Espélho,	A looking-glass.
Regálo,	A muff.
Espartílho,	Stays.
Pénte,	A comb.
Alfinêtes,	Pins.
Tesôura,	A pair of scissars.
Dedál,	A thimble.
Agúlha,	A needle.
Fio,	Thread.
Fío de pérolas,	A necklace of pearls.
Polvílhos,	Powder.
Jóyas,	Jewels.
Côr,	Paint.
Palíto,	A tooth-pick.
Róca,	A distaff.
Fúso,	The spindle.
Almofadínha para alfinêtes,	Small pincushion.

Agúlha de toucár,	Bodkin.
Fítas,	Ribbons.
Fichú (sórte de lênço para o pescôço,)	A necklace.
Tenazínhas,	Nippers.
Pendêntes,	Bob, *or* pendant.
Palatína,	Tippet.
Guárda infânte, or *Guard infante,*	Farthingale, *or* hoop.
Véo,	Veil.
Rênda,	Lace.
Bílros,	Bobbins.
Bílros feítos de ôsso,	Bones.
A'goa da raínha de Ungría,	Hungary water.
A'goa de chêiro,	Scented water.
Justílho,	Bodice.

Os dôze Signos Celêstes.	*The twelve Celestial Signs.*
A'ries,	Aries, *or* the ram.
Tôuro,	The bull.
Gémini or *Géminis,*	The twins.
Cáncer,	The crab.
Leaõ,	The lion.
Vírgem,	The virgin.
Líbra,	The balance.
Escorpiáõ,	The scorpion.
Sagitário,	The archer.
Capricórnio,	The goat.
Aquário,	The water-bearer.
Peíxes,	The fishes.

De húma Cása e do que lhe pertênce.	*Of a House, and all that belongs to it.*
Cása,	A house.
Alicérse,	Foundation.
Parêde,	A wall.
Tabíque,	A light brick-wall.
Páteo, or *Pátio,*	A court, *or* yard.
Andár, or *sobrádo,*	A floor.
Facháda,	The front.
Janélla,	A window.

Abóbada,	A vault.
As escádas,	The stairs.
Degráos,	Steps.
Telhádo,	A tiled roof.
Têlhas,	Tiles.
Ladrílhos, or *tijôlos,*	Bricks.
Sála or *quarto,*	A room.
Antecâmara,	Antichamber.
Sála,	A hall.
Técto,	A roof.
Alcôva,	An alcove.
Balcáõ,	A balcony.
Gabinête,	Closet.
Almário,	A cupboard.
Guárda-rôupa,	Wardróbe.
Adéga,	A cellar.
Cozínha,	A kitchen.
Despênsa,	A pantry.
Cheminé,	A chimney.
Cavallaríça,	The stable.
Gallinheíro, or *cása das gallínhas,*	A hen-house.
Poleíro,	A hen-roost.
Jardím,	A garden.
Necessária,	Water closet.
Cása de jantár,	A dining-room.
Quárto de câma,	Bed-chamber.
Andár rênte da Rúa,	A parlour.
Pórta,	The door.
Postígo,	A wicket.
Liminár, or *lumiár,*	The threshold.
Clara bóia,	Sky-lights.
Algeróz,	The gutter tile.
Beíras, or *ábas do telhádo,*	The eaves.
A couceíra da pórta,	The hinges.
Fechadúra,	A lock.
Cadeádo,	A padlock.
Ferrôlho,	The bolt.
Trânca da pórta,	The bar of a door.
Câno da cháve,	The pipe of a key.
Cháve méstra,	A master-key.
Guárdas da fechadúra,	The wards of a lock.
Palhetáõ da cháve,	Key bit.

Vidráça,	The glass of a window.
Escáda feíta a carracól,	A winding stair-case.
Escáda secréta,	Back-stairs, a private stair-case.
Víga,	A beam.
Paréde méstra,	The main wall.
Parêdes mêyas,	The party walls.
A'rca,	Chest.
Cáma,	Bed.
Sobrecéo da câma,	The bed's tester.
Cortínas da cáma,	Bed curtains.
Lençóes,	Sheets.
Cabeceíra da câma,	The bed's head.
Péz da câma,	Bed's feet.
Côlcha,	Counterpane, a quilt.
Colcháõ,	A matrass.
Cobertôr,	A blanket.
Cobertôr de felpa,	A rug.
Cama de Armaçaõ,	Bedstead.
Travesseíro,	A pillow.
Tapête,	A carpet.
Tapeçaría,	Tapestry.
Pederneíra,	A flint.
I'sca,	Tinder.
Mécha,	Match.
Enxergaõ,	A straw-bed.
Esteíra,	A mat.
Cáens da cheminé,	Hand-irons.
Fólles,	Bellows.
Tenázes,	Tongs.
Férra,	A shovel.
Abâno or *abanadôr,*	Fire-pan.
Panélla,	A pipkin.
Têsto,	The pot-lid.
A'za da panélla,	The ear of a pot, *or* pipkin.
Férro para atiçár o lúme,	A poker.
Escumadeíra,	A skimmer.
Colhér grânde,	A ladle.
Caldeíra,	A kettle.
Sertáã, or *frigideíra,*	A frying pan.
Coadôr,	A cullender, *or* strainer.
Grélhas,	Gridiron.
Rálo,	A grater.

Espéto,	A spit.
Almofaríz,	A mortar wherein things are pounded.
Maõ do almofaríz,	A pestle.
Redôma,	A vial,
Bálde,	A bucket, *or* pail.
Sabaõ,	Soap.
Rodílha,	A kitchen towel.
Esfregáõ,	A dish-clout.
Fõrno,	Oven.
Pá do fôrno,	The peel of the oven.
Vascúlho pára alimpár o fôrno,	A maukin, a coal-rake to make clean an oven.
Farínha,	Meal-flour.
Trinchânte,	A carver.
Mordômo,	A steward.
Escudeiro,	A valet-de-chambre.
Camareíro mór,	A chamberlain.
Escôva,	A brush.
Vassôura,	A broom.
Despenseíro,	A steward.
Págem,	A page.
Lacáyo,	A footman.
Cocheíro,	A coachman.
Cocheíra,	A coach-house.
Môço dos cavállos, ou *da estrebaría,*	A groom.
Copeíro,	A butler.
Escudeíro de húma fidálga,	A lady's gentleman usher.
A'mo, ou *senhôr da cása,*	The master of the house.
A'ma, ou *senhôra da cása,*	The mistress of the house.
Grímpa,	Weather-cock.

Côres.	*Colours.*
Brânco,	White.
Azúl,	Blue.
Azúl celéste,	Sky-colour.
Azúl ferréte,	Dark blue.
Azúl cláro,	Light blue.
Côr de camúrça,	Light yellow.
Amarélo,	Yellow.
Cor de rósa,	Rosy colour.
Côr de pálha,	Straw colour.

Vérde,	Green.
Côr de vêrde mar, or *vérde cláro,*	Sea-green.
Côr vermêlha, or *Incarnada,*	Red colour.
Côr vermêlha muito víva, or *carmín.*	Carmine, a bright red colour.
Côr de cárne,	Flesh colour.
Côr carmesín,	Crimson red.
Côr négra, or *préta,*	Black colour.
Côr de mél,	A dark yellow.
Fúrta côres,	A deep changeable colour.
Côr víva,	A lively and gay colour.
Côr tríste,	A dull colour.
Côr escúra,	A dark colour.
Côr carregáda,	A deep colour.
Côr de fôgo,	Fire colour.
Párdo,	Grey.
Côr de cínza,	Ash colour.
Escarláta,	Scarlet.
Leonádo,	Tawney.
Côr de larânja,	Orange colour.
Côr de azeitôna,	Olive colour.
Rôxo,	Purple, violet.
Rôxo, or *côr de auróra,*	Aurora colour.

Rôxo sometimes signifies *red* or *rosy colour*; particularly in poetry, as in *Camóens*, Canto I. Stanza 82.

Para que ao Portuguêz se lhe tornásse,
Em rôxo *sângue a ãgoa, que bebêsse.*

Animáes.	*Beasts.*
Bêsta doméstica,	Tame beast.
Bêsta bráva,	A wild beast.
Bêsta de cárga,	A beast of burthen.
Bêsta de sélla,	A beast for the saddle.
Gádo,	Cattle.
Gádo grôsso,	Great cattle.
Gádo miúdo,	Small cattle.
Rebánho,	A flock.
Manáda de gádo grôsso,	A herd of big cattle.
Tôuro,	A bull.
Bezêrra,	Heifer.

Bezêrro,	A calf, a steer, a young bullock.
Bôy,	An ox.
Búrro,	An ass.
Búrra,	A she-ass.
Pôrco,	A hog, *or* pig.
Pôrca,	A sow.
Fáca,	A young mare, also a nag.
E'goa,	A mare.
Cría,	A foal, a filly.
Pôtra,	A colt, *or* young horse.
Cavállo,	A horse.
Cavállo anaõ,	A nag.
Cavállo de pósta,	A post horse.
Garranháõ, or *cavállo de lançamênto,*	A stallion.
Cavállo de aluguél,	A hackney-horse.
Cavállo de côche,	A coach-horse.
Cavállo que ânda de chôuto,	A jolting-horse.
Cavállo pequêno que sérve para senhôras,	A palfrey.
Cavállo que tóma o freio éntre dêntes,	A horse that champ's the bit.
Cavállo rijo da bôca,	A hard-mouthed horse.
Cavállo dôce de freio,	A tender-mouthed horse, one that easily submits to the curb.
Cavállo que tem bôa bôca,	A horse that will eat any thing.
Cavállo que tropéssa,	A stumbling-horse.
Cavállo espantadíço,	A startling-horse.
Cavállo ardênte, or *fogôzo,*	A fiery horse.
Cavállo que mórde e dá côuces,	A biting and kicking horse.
Cavallo rebelláõ,	A untamed horse.
Cavállo que não sôffre âncas,	A horse that will not carry double.
Cavállo mal mandádo,	A restive horse.
Cavállo de albárda,	A pack-horse.
Cavállo de cárro,	A cart-horse.
Cavállo de sélla,	A saddle-horse.
Cavállo de corrêr,	A race-horse.
Cavállo de guérra,	A war-horse.
Cavállo ajaezádo,	A horse with all his furniture.
Cavállo de Barbaría,	A Moorish horse, a barb.
Cavállo capádo,	A gelding.
Cavállo sem ser capádo,	A stone-horse.
Cavállo que dá aos fólles,	A broken winded horse.

Cavállo quatrálvo,	A horse that has four white feet.
Cavállo alazáõ,	A sorrel horse.
Cavállo báio,	A bay horse.
Cavállo castânho,	A chesnut-coloured horse.
Cavállo báio e castânho,	A chesnut bay.
Cavállo rocím,	A worthless nag, a poor jade.
Cavállo remendádo,	A dapple horse.
Cavállo ruáõ or *rússo porcelláno,*	A dapple-grey horse.
Cavállo que sóffre ancas,	A double horse.
Cavállo trotaõ,	A trotting-horse.
Cavállo que sérve para andár á cáça,	A hunter.
Cavállo que ânda de furta passo,	A pad, an easy-paced horse.
Cáõ,	A dog.
Cáõ de quínta,	A house dog.
Cáõ de cáça,	A hound.
Cáõ de ágoa,	A water spaniel.
Cáõ de gádo,	A shepherd's dog.
Cáõ de móstra, pôdengo, or *perdigueiro,*	A setting dog.
Cáõ de fíla,	A great cur, a mastiff dog.
Cáõ sacadôr,	A dog tumbler.
Cáõ de búsca,	A finder.
Aláõ,	A bull-dog.
Gálgo,	A greyhound.
Cáõ para caçár rapôzas e lôntras,	A terrier.
Cachorrínho,	A little puppy, a whelp.
Cachorrinho de frálda,	A lap-dog.
Cachôrro,	A little dog.
Mácho, or *múlo,*	A he-mule.
Múla,	A she-mule.
Côrça,	A she-deer, a doe.
Côrça de tres ânnos,	A spade.
Côrça de dôus ánnos,	A pricket.
Côrça,	A wild buck.
Côrça ou córa de hum ánno,	A fawn.
Gâmo,	A fallow deer.
Veádo,	A stag.
Cábra montéz,	A wild she goat.
Veádo grande de cínco ânnos,	A hart.
Donínha,	A weasel.
Teixúgo, or *texúgo,*	A badger.

Gáto de algália,	A civet cat.
Donínha de rábo múi felpúdo, a módo de rapôsa,	A squirrel.
Elephânte,	An elephant.
Foínha, fuínha,	A marten, *or* martern.
Armínho,	An ermin.
Ouríço cacheíro,	An hedge-hog.
Arganáz,	A dormouse.
Ráto,	A rat.
Rapôsa,	A fox.
Lôbo,	A wolf.
Ráta da I'ndia,	A rat of India of the bigness of a cat.
Foraõ,	A ferret.
Toupeíra,	A mole.
Leaõ,	A lion.
Leôa,	A lioness.
Zibelína,	A musk cat.
Leopárdo,	A leopard.
U'rso,	A he-bear.
U'rsa,	A she-bear.
U'rso pequêno,	A bear's cub.
Tígre,	A tiger.
Pôrco montéz,	A wild bear.

Das côusas do Câmpo.	*Of country affairs.*
Cása do câmpo, or *quínta,*	A country house.
Cása de lavradôr,	A farm-house.
Quinteíro,	A husbandman, a farmer.
Boyeíro,	A herdsman, he that ploughs with oxen, *or* tends them.
Vaqueíro,	A cow-keeper.
Porqueíro,	A swine-herd.
Pastôr,	A shepherd.
Surráõ,	A scrip, *or* small bag.
Cajádo,	A shepherd's hook.
Pastôra,	A shepherdess.
Herdáde,	A great *or* large field, a wide arable ground.
Hortoláõ,	A gardener.
Hortalíça,	All sorts of herbage.
Cavadôr,	A ploughman.
Vinhateíro,	A vine dresser.

Lavradôr,	A farmer, one who cultivates ground, whether his own *or* another's.
Pástos,	Feeding ground, pasture, sheep-walk.
Arádo,	A plough.
Férro do arâdo,	The plough-share.
Rábo do arádo,	The plough-handle.
Abegaõ, or *official que faz arados,*	A plough-wright.
Aguilháda,	A goad.
Ensínho,	A rake.
Gráde,	A harrow.
Semeadôr,	A sower.
Roçadôr,	A weeder.
Fôuce roçadôura,	A weeding-hook.
Fôuce,	A scythe, *or* sickle.
Podáõ,	A pruning-knife.
Segadôr,	A reaper, *or* mower, harvest man.
Mangoál,	A flail.
Forcádo,	A prong to cast up sheaves of corn with.
Caçadôr,	A huntsman.
Pescadôr,	A fisherman.
Rêgo,	A furrow.
Térra que fica levantáda ên-tre dôus rêgos,	A balk, *or* ridge of land between two furrows.
Outeíro,	A hill.
Mônte, or *montânha,*	A mountain.
Válle,	A valley.
Lagôa,	A moor, fen, *or* marsh, a standing water, but sometimes dry.
Lágo,	A lake *or* standing pool, but always full of water.
Ribeíro,	A brook, a stream of water, with a gentle *or* natural current.
Ribeirínho,	A rivulet, a streamlet.
Plâno, or *planície,*	A plain.
Pênha, or *rócha,*	A rock.
Penhásco,	A great rock.
Desérto,	A desert *or* wilderness.

Despenhadeíro,	A precipice.
Bósque,	A wood.
Bósque pequêno,	A grove, *or* thicket.
Pedáço de chaõ sem árvores, dêntro de hum bósque,	A glade in a wood.
Pomár, or *vergél,*	An orchard.
Prádo,	A meadow.
Ramáda,	A bower.
Fónte,	A fountain.
Trígo,	Wheat.
Trígo candiál,	The best wheat.
Trígo bretânha,	Red wheat.
Centêo,	Rye.
Feráã,	Meslin, mixed corn, as wheat and rye, *&c.*
Treméz,	The corn of three months growth.
Espélta,	Spelt.
Espíga,	Ear of corn.
Cabeça da espíga,	The grain at the top of the ear of corn.
Baínha, dônde sáhe a espíga depôis de formáda,	The husk in which the ear of corn is lodged.
Legúmes,	Pulse.
Graõs de bico,	Spanish pease.
Lentílha,	A lentil.
Tramíço, or *tremóço,*	A lupine.
Feijôens,	French-beans.
Feijáõ sapáta, or *bájes,*	Kidney-beans.
Feijáõ fradínho,	A sort of small French beans with a black spot.
Chícharo,	Chicklings, a sort of peas.
Carrêta,	A waggon.
Cárro,	A cart.
Róda,	A wheel.
Caímbas,	The felloes of the wheel.
E'ixo,	The axle-tree of a wheel.
Ráyo da róda,	The spoke of a wheel.
Currál de bôys,	An ox-stall.
Currál de ovêlhas,	A sheep-fold.
Currál de cábras,	A house for goats.
Chiqueíro de pórcos,	A hog's-sty.
E'rva,	Grass.
Trígo em érva,	Green corn.

Seára,	Standing corn.
Tárro,	A milk-pail.
Cíncho,	A cheese-vat, to make cheese in.
Enxáda,	A mattock, a hoe.
Enxadaõ, or *alvião,*	A mattock.
Cánga,	A yoke for oxen.
Cangálhos,	The arms of the yoke used for oxen.
Sébe,	A hedge *or* fence.
O que faz sébes,	Hedger.
Fôuce roçadôura de que úzaõ pára fazér sébes,	Hedging bill.
Tempo de tósquía e a fésta que nélle fázem os rústicos,	The sheep-shearing, the time of shearing sheep.
Cantíga dos segadôres despôis, de acabádo o têmpo da séga,	Harvest home.
Sárça,	A bramble.
Máta,	A thicket, a forest.
Máto,	A heath.
Leíra, or *taboleíro,*	A bed in a garden.
Chôrro de ágoa,	A water-spout.
Veréda,	A path.
Rásto,	The track.
Césta,	A basket.
Cabáz,	A frail, a pannier.
Cabãna, or *choupâna,*	A cottage, a hut.
Cabáço,	A dry hollow gourd used to keep seeds in.

Côusas pertencêntes à Guérra. — *Things relating to War.*

Servíço ou *vída militár,*	Warfare.
Militár ou *servír na guérra,*	To serve in the army.
Artilharía, artelharía, ou *artilhería,*	Artillery.
Canháõ, ou *péça de artilharía,*	A cannon.
Canháõ de férro,	Iron cannon.
Canháõ de brônze,	Brass cannon.
Alma do canháõ,	The mouth of a cannon.
Fogáõ do canháõ,	The touch-hole of a cannon.
Culátra do canháõ,	The breech of a cannon.

Botão, ou extremidáde da culátra,	The pummel.
Bálas encadeádas,	Chain-shots.
Bála de canhão,	A cannon bullet, cannon-ball, *or* cannon-shot.
Carréta do canhão,	The carriage of a cannon.
Pólvora,	Gun-powder.
Méyo canhão,	A demi-cannon.
Canhão dobrádo,	A double cannon.
Canhão pâra batêr húma praça,	A battering cannon.
Canhão, de vinte e quátro,	A twenty-four pounder.
Calibre,	Caliber.
Carregár,	To load.
Escorvár,	To prime.
Fazêr pontaría,	To level.
Petréchos, or *muniçôens de guérra,*	Military stores.
Encravár húma péça,	To nail up a gun.
Descavalgár húma péça,	To dismount a gun.
Desparár,	To fire.
Tiro de péça,	A cannon shot.
Trêm de artilharía,	The train of artillery.
Colubrina,	A culverin.
Falconête,	A falconet.
Petárdo,	A petard.
Pedreíro,	A swivel gun, pederero, *or* paterero.
Bômba,	A bomb.
Bombárda,	A great gun, a bombard.
Morteíro,	A mortar-piece.
Granáda,	A granade.
Espingárda,	A firelock.
Pistóla,	A pistol.
Carabina,	A carabine.
Mosquête,	A musket.
Machadinha,	A battle-ax.
Lânça,	A lance.
Alabárda,	An halbert.
Partasâna,	A partizan.
Pique,	A pike.
Calár os piques pâra resistir á cavalaria,	To present the pikes against the cavalry.
Alfânge,	Scymeter.
Espáda,	A sword.

Disembainhár a espáda,	To unsheath the sword.
Púnho da espáda,	The handle of a sword.
Maçãa da espáda,	The pommel of a sword.
Guarnição da espáda,	The hilt of a sword.
Fôlha da espáda,	The blade of a sword.
Metêr mão á espáda,	To clap one's hand on one's sword.
Matár,	To kill.
Ferir,	To wound.
Desbaratár,	To rout.
Saqueár,	To sack.
Punhál,	A poniard.
Bayonêta,	A bayonet.
Calár a bayonéta,	To fix the bayonets.
Capacête,	A helmet.
Morrião,	A morrion.
Visêira,	The vizor of an helmet.
Gorjál, or *góla,*	The gorget.
Peito de ármas,	A breast-plate.
Couráça,	A cuirass.
Espaldár,	The back-plate.
Cossolête,	A corslet.
Broquél,	A buckler.
Escúdo,	A shield.
Adága,	Dagger, a short sword.
Sáya de málha,	A coat of mail.
Rêy de armas,	The king at arms, *or* king of heralds.
Aráuto,	A herald.
Generál,	A general.
Tenênte generál,	A lieutenant general.
Sargênto mór de batálha,	A major general.
Sargênto,	A serjeant.
Sargênto mór,	Major.
Mariscál, or *marichál,*	Marshal.
Méstre de câmpo generál,	Master de camp general.
Coronél,	Colonel.
Méstre de câmpo,	Master de camp.
Coronél de infantaria,	Colonel of foot.
Officiál de guérra,	An officer.
Brigadeiro,	Brigadier.
Tenênte coronél,	Lieutenant-colonel.
Ajudânte de sargênto mor,	Adjutant.
Ajudânte de tenênte de méstre de câmpo,	Aid de camp.

Capitāõ,	Captain.
Pôsto de capitāõ,	Captaincy *or* captainship.
Tenênte,	Lieutenant.
Cornêta,	Cornet.
Alféres,	Ensign.
Bandeíras,	Colours.
Estandárte,	Standard.
Alféres de cavalaría que tráz o estandárte,	Standard-bearer.
Pagadôr,	Pay-master.
Provedôr dos mantiméntos de húma armáda,	Purveyor.
Commissário,	Commissary.
Commissário gerál,	Commissary-general.
Engenheíro,	Engineer.
Quartel mestre,	Quarter-master.
Cábo de esquádra,	Corporal.
Tambôr, ou *caíxa,*	Drum.
Tambôr ou *o que tóca tambôr,*	A drummer.
Baquêtas,	Drum-sticks.
Cordéis de tambôr,	Drum-strings.
Tóques do tambôr,	The beats of a drum.
Tocár o tambôr,	To beat a drum.
Alvoráda, ou *generál,*	The general, one of the beats of the drum.
Móstra,	Muster.
Passar móstra,	To muster, to review forces.
Trombêta,	A trumpet.
Trombeteíro, ou *trombêta,*	A trumpeter.
Pífano,	A fifer *or* fife.
Sôldo,	Wages, *or* pay for soldiers.
Soldádo,	A soldier.
Soldádo que está de sentinélla,	Soldier on duty.
Entrár de guárda,	To mount, *or* go upon the guard.
Sentinélla,	Duty, centinel.
Rendêr a guárda, sentinéllas, &c.	To relieve the guard, *&c.*
Blocár, or *bloqueár,*	To block up.
Infânte, or *soldádo de pé,*	A foot soldier.
Granadeíro,	Grenadier.
Bigódes,	Whiskers.
Dragaõ,	Dragoon.
Soldádo de cavállo,	Trooper, or horse soldier.
Montár a cavállo,	To get on horseback.

Apeár-se,	To alight.
Guárda da pessôa real, or *archeíro,*	Life-guard-man.
Couracêiro,	Cuirassier.
Mosquetéiro,	Musketeer.
Fuzilêiro,	Fuselier.
Alabardeíro,	Halberdier.
Genísero,	Janissary.
Soldádo armádo com lânça,	A spearman.
Soldádo que léva píque, or *piquéiro,*	A pikeman.
Besteíro, ou *soldádo que pelêja com bésta,*	Cross-bow-man.
Pionêiro,	A pioneer.
Mineíro, ou *minadôr,*	Miner.
Bombardeíro,	A bombardier.
O tíro da artilharía, ou *o espáço que a bála desparáda córre; Alcance,*	Gunshot, or the space to which a shot can be thrown.
Artilhêiro,	Matross, also a gunner, *or* cannoneer.
A árte da artilharía,	Gunnery.
Generál de artilharía,	General of the artillery.
Voluntário,	A volunteer.
Recrútas,	Recruits.
Exploradôr, ou *corredôr de exército,*	Scout.
Espía,	Spy.
O que leva víveres ao exército, ou *vivandeíro,*	Sutler.
Soldádo que faz correrías,	A marauder, a soldier that goes a marauding.
Timbále or *atabale,*	Kettle-drum.
Infantería,	The infantry.
Cavalaría,	Cavalry.
Cavalaría ligeíra,	Light-horse.
Vanguárda,	The vanguard.
Côrpo de batálha,	The main body of an army.
Retaguárda,	The rear.
Côrpo de resérva,	The corps de reserve.
Côrpo de guárda,	The corps de guard.
Piquête,	The piquets of an army, *or* piquet guard.
A'la,	The wing of an army.
Batalhão,	Battalion.

Destacamênto,	Detachment.
Regimênto,	Regiment.
Companhía,	A company.
Esquadráõ,	A squadron.
Mochíla,	Knapsack.
Bagágem, ou *bagáge,*	Baggage.
Batedôres do câmpo,	Discoverers.
Almazêm, ou *armazêm,*	Magazines.
Murálhas,	Walls.
Améa, ou *amêya,*	A battlement.
Parapeíto,	The parapet.
Castéllo,	A castle.
Fórte,	A fort.
Fortalêza,	A fortress.
Fortificaçáõ,	Fortification.
Tôrre,	A tower.
Citadélla, or *cidadélla,*	A citadel.
Baluárte,	Bulwark.
Fileíra,	A file.
Cortína,	A curtain.
Méya lúa,	Half moon.
Troneíra,	A loop-hole.
Térra-pléno,	A platform of earth.
Rebelím, ou *Revelím,*	A ravelin.
Contrascárpa,	Counterscarp.
Barreíra,	A barrier.
Falsabrága,	A faussbraye.
Fôsso,	A ditch.
Guaríta,	A centry-box.
Casamáta,	A casemate.
Corredôr, ou *estráda encobérta,*	The covered way.
Cestôens,	Gabions.
Estacáda, ou *palissáda,*	A palisade.
Redúto,	A redoubt.
Ataláya,	A watch tower.
Mânta, ou *Mantelête,*	A mantelet, *or* cover for men from the shot.
Faxína,	Fascines.
Mína,	A mine
Contramína,	A countermine.
Fazêr voár a mína,	To spring a mine.
Trincheíra,	A trench.
Abrir as trincheíras,	To open the trenches.
Câmpo,	Camp.
Víveres, ou *muniçôens de bôca,*	Provisions.

Bisônho,	A new recruit.
Batálha,	A battle.
Dár batálha,	To give battle.
Escaramúça,	A skirmish.
Sítio, or *cêrco,*	A siege.
Quartél,	A quarter.
Encamisáda,	A camisado.
Sortída,	A sally.
Batêr,	To batter.
Brécha,	A breach.
Pontáõ,	A pontoon.
Escaláda,	An escalade.
Assálto,	An assault.
Dar assálto,	To storm.
Tomár por assálto,	To take by storm.
Chamáda,	The chamade.
Capitulár,	To capitulate.
Capitulaçáõ,	Capitulation.
Trégoas,	Truce.
Guarniçáõ,	Garrison.
Prebóste,	A provost.
Prebóste-generál,	A provost-marshal.
Léva,	Levy.
Levantár soldádos, ou *fazêr léva de gênte,*	To raise men, to levy, *or* raise soldiers.
Levantár o sítio,	To raise the siege.
Levantár o câmpo,	To decamp.
Assentár o câmpo,	To pitch one's camp.
Câmpo volânte,	A flying camp.
Campânha,	A campaign.
Metêr-se em campânha,	To begin the campaign, to open the field.
Guerreár,	To war, to fight.
Péça de campânha,	A field-piece.
Forrágem,	A forage.
Quartéis de invérno,	Winter quarters.
Dar quartél,	To give quarter.
Aquartelár-se,	To take quarter.
Marchár,	To march.
Marchár com bandeíras despregádas,	To march with flying colours.
Tocár a recolhêr,	To beat tap-tow.
Entregár húma práça,	To surrender a place.
Fila da vanguárda,	Front rank.
Fila do Cêntro,	Centre rank.

Fila da Rectaguárda,	Rear rank.
Diréita,	Right.
Esquérda,	Left.
Têmpos,	Motions.
Exercício,	Exercise.
Féchos,	Lock.
O Caõ ou *Perro da Arma,*	Cock.
Crônha,	Butt.
A bôca da Arma,	Muzzle.
O câno,	The barrel.
Varêta,	Ramrod.
Gatilho,	Trigger.
Pellotáõ,	Platoon.
Batalhaõ,	Battalion.
A'la,	Wing.
Devisaõ,	Division.
Linha ou Fileira,	Line.
Caçadôres,	Riflemen.
Flânco,	Flank.
Estâdo Mayór,	Staff.
Frênte,	Front.
Infantaría Ligeira,	Light infantry.
Regulamêntos,	Regulations.

Palávras de Comândo.	*Military words of Command.*
Sentído,	Attention.
Armas ao Hombro,	Shoulder arms.
Descançár sobre as Armas,	Order arms.
Metêr as Bayonêtas,	Fix bayonets.
Apresentár as Armas,	Present arms.
Calár as Bayonêtas,	Charge bayonets.
Descançár as Armas,	Support arms.
Tirár as Bayonêtas,	Unfix bayonets.
Cruzár as Armas,	Pile arms.
Preparár,	Make ready.
Carregár,	Load.
Tirár o Cartúcho,	Handle cartridge.
Escorvár,	Prime.
Tirár as Varêtas,	Draw ramrods.
Atuchár o Cartucho,	Ram down cartridge.
Fôgo,	Fire.
Armas á Cara,	Present.

Metér o cartûcho,	Cast about.
Fógo por pellotões,	Firing by platoons.
Fógo de Filas,	File firing.
Alto,	Halt.
Formár em linha,	To form in line.
Fôgo obliquo,	Oblique firing.
Formár,	Form.
Marcha,	March.
Ordem cerráda,	Close order.
Desfilár,	To file.
Colúmna cerráda,	Close column.
Meia vólta á esquerda,	On your left backward wheel.
Voltár,	Wheel.
Avançár,	Advance.
Cerrár as Filéiras,	Close the ranks.

Navegaçáõ.	*Navigation.*
Navío,	A ship.
Náo,	A large ship.
Náo de guérra,	A line of battle ship.
Navío de cárga, ou *mercantíl,*	A merchant-ship, a merchantman.
Navío veléiro,	A very good sailer, *or* a ship that sails well.
Navío roncéiro,	A bad sailer.
Galé,	A galley.
Galeáça,	A galleass.
Galeáõ,	A galleon.
Galeóta,	A galliot, a small galley.
Comítre,	The boatswain of a galley.
Fragáta,	A frigate.
Carráca,	A carrack.
Fústa,	A foist.
Pináça,	A pinnace.
Bárca de passágem,	A ferry-boat.
Bárco,	A boat.
Bárca,	A bark, great boat.
Canôa,	A canoe.
Gondóla,	Gondola, a small boat, much used in Venice.
Esquífe,	A skiff.
Chalúpa, ou *balândra,*	A sloop.
Chalúpa pequêna,	A shallop.

Bergantím,	A brigantine, *or* brig,
Bálsa,	A float.
Capitânia,	The admiral's ship.
Almirânta,	The vice-admiral's ship.
Armáda,	A fleet, a navy.
Fróta,	A fleet of merchant ships.
Esquádra,	A squadron, part of a fleet.
A bórdo,	On board.
Pôpa,	The poop, stern, *or* steerage.
Prôa,	The prow, *or* head.
Péças de prôa para dar caça ao inimígo,	Chase guns.
Tartâna,	A tartan.
Brulóte,	A fire-ship.
Patáxo,	A patache.
Falúa,	A felucca.
Batél, or *bateíra,*	A small bark, a wherry.
Caravéla,	A caravel.
Sórte de patáxo pâra servíço de húma náo de guérra,	A tender.
Náo de línha,	A line of battle-ship.
Guárda cósta,	A guard-ship.
Galeóta da quál se lânçam as bômbas,	Bomb-ketch.
Navío que sérve pâra andár a côrso,	A cruiser.
Corsário,	A privateer.
Hyácte,	Yacht.
Navío de transpórte,	A transport.
Náo da India Orientăl,	East India-man.
Náo da India Occidentál,	West India-ship.
Sórte de embarcaçáõ pequêna Hollandéza de hum só mastro,	A Dutch dogger.
Navío pâra levár carváõ,	A collier.
Embarcaçôens pequênas,	Small craft.
Embarcaçáõ, ou bárco grânde que sérve pâra levár fazêndas a bórdo,	A barge, a lighter.
Embarcaçáõ grânde, ou caravéla, que sérve pâra commerceár pêlla cósta,	A coasting vessel.
Embarcaçáõ de avízo,	Advice-boat.
Paquête,	Packet-boat.
Bárco de pescár,	A fishing-boat.
Láncha,	Boat.

Rémos,	Oars.
Pá do rêmo,	The blade of the oar.
Sentína,	The well.
Lástro, ou *lásto,*	Ballast.
Lastár, ou *lançár lástro ao navío,*	To ballast a ship.
Mástro, or *árvore,*	A mast.
Mástro grânde,	The main mast.
Mástro de mezêna,	The mizen mast.
Mástro do traquête,	The fore mast.
Gurupés,	The bowsprit, *or* boltsprit.
Gávea,	The round-top, main-top, *or* scuttle of a mast.
Quílha,	The keel.
Vêrga, ou *entêna,*	A yard.
Laíz, ou *extremidádes das vêrgas,*	The yard-arm.
Prânchas, que cóbrem os costádos do navío da párte de fóra,	Side-planks, *or* side of a ship.
*Véla,**	A sail.
Véla méstra, or *a véla do mastro grânde,*	The main sheet.
Véla da Gávea,	The main-top-sail.
Véla do joanéte do mástro grânde,	Main-top-gallant-sail.
Papafígos,	The mizen and fore-sail.
Mezêna,	Mizen-sail.
Gáta, ou *véla de címa da mezêna,*	Mizen-top-sail.
Traquête,	The fore-sail.
Velácho,	The fore-top-sail.
Joanête do traquête,	The fore-top-gallant-sail.
Cevadéira,	The sprit-sail.
Véla latína,	A shoulder of mutton sail.
Fazêr fôrça de véla,	To crowd the sail.
Mastaréos,	The topmasts, *or* top-gallant-masts.
Mastaréo da mezêna, ou *mastaréo da gáta,*	Mizen-top-mast.
Portinhóla,	A port-hole.
Bandéiras,	The colours.
Flémmulas ou galhardetes,	Streamers, pendants.

* By *vela* is oftentimes meant the ship itself.

Agúlha de mareár,	The mariner's compass.
Bitácola,	Bittacle.
Costúras do navío,	The seams of a ship.
Léme,	Helm, *or* rudder.
Cána do léme,	The whip, *or* whip-staff.
Cubérta,	Deck.
Cubérta corrída,	Flush fore and aft.
Escotílhas,	The hatches; scuttles.
Escotílhão,	A room by the hatches, to keep the provisions.
Castéllo de pôpa,	The hind castle.
Castéllo de prôa,	The fore castle.
Garrár a âncora,	To drive; or when a ship drags her anchor.
Ancora,	The anchor.
Metér a âncora na lâncha, ou *bóte depôis de levantála,*	To boat the anchor.
Ancora de rebóque,	A kedger.
Ancora de esperânça,	Sheet anchor.
U'nhas da âncora,	The flooks of an anchor.
Argóla da âncora,	The ring of an anchor.
Estár a âncora a píque,	Is for the anchor to be a-peak.
Amárra,	A cable.
Picár, ou *cortár as amárras,*	To cut the cables.
Sônda, ou *prúmo,*	The sounding lead.
Cutélos,	Studding sails.
Maré,	The tide.
Bosína,	A speaking trumpet.
Preparár hum navío, de vélas, córdas, &c.	To rig a ship.
Pilôto,	Pilot, *or* steersman.
Escrivão,	A purser.
Pilotágem,	Pilotage.
Cárta de mareár,	Sea-chart.
Capitão,	A captain.
Capitão tenênte,	First lieutenant.
Contraméstre,	A boatswain.
Marinheíro,	A sailor.
Camaróte,	A cabin.
Marinheíro que he camaráda ou *pertênce ao mêsmo rancho*	A messmate.
Torménta,	A tempest.
Borrásca,	A storm.
Bonânça,	Fair weather.
Calmaría,	Calm.

Vénto em pôpa,	The wind full a-stern, a fore-wind.
Navío arrasádo em popa,	A ship that sails before the wind.
Derróta,	The course, *or* way of a ship.
Alár a bolína,	To sharp the main bowling, to haul up the bowling.
Ir pela bolína,	To tack upon a wind, sail upon a bowling.
Nó da bolína,	The bowling knot.
Barlavênto,	Windward.
Ganhár a barlavênto,	To get the wind.
Barlaventeár, ou *deitár a barlavénto,*	To ply to windward.
Sotavênto,	Leeward.
Escovêns,	Hawsers.
Escôtas,	Tacks.
Velâme, córdas, e o máis que he necessário pâra preparár hum navío,	Tackle, or tackling, the rigging of a ship.
Córda,	A rope.
Enxárcias,	Shrouds.
Arribár,	To put into a harbour.
Bombórdo,	Larboard.
Estibórdo,	Starboard.
Ló,	Loof.
Metêr de ló,	To loof, or keep the ship nearer the wind.
Bômba,	A pump.
Dár á bômba,	To pump,
Bálde pâra deitár ágoa na bômba,	Pump-can.
Escúma que sáhe da bomba depôis de ter tirádo a ágoa,	Pump-suck.
Navío, cúja ágoa se naõ póde tirár com a bâmba,	A ship that is stoaked.
Mânga de côuro por ônde sáhe a ágoa da bômba,	Pump-dale.
Bráço da bômba,	The pump handle.
Faról,	Light, lantern, *or* lighthouse.
Vênto,	Wind.

Rósa da Agúlha, *ou* dos Vêntos.	*The Fly of the Mariner's Compass.*
Nórte,	North.
Nórte 4ª a nordéste,	N. by E.
Nor nordéste,	N. N. E.
Nordéste 4ª a nórte,	N. E. by N.
Nordéste,	N. E.
Nordéste 4ª a léste,	N. E. by E.
Les nordéste,	E. N. E.
Léste, 4ª a nordéste,	E. by N.
Léste,	East.
Léste 4ª a suéste,	E. by S.
Lés suéste,	E. S. E.
Suéste 4ª a léste,	S. E. by E.
Suéste,	S. E.
Suéste, 4ª a sul,	S. E. by S.
Susuéste,	S. S. E.
Sul 4ª a suéste,	S. by E.
Sul,	South.
Sul 4ª a sudoéste,	S. by W.
Susudoéste,	S. S. W.
Sudoéste 4ª sul,	S. W. by S.
Sudoéste,	S W.
Sudoéste 4ª a oéste,	S. W. by W.
Oés sudoéste,	W. S. W.
Oéste 4ª a sudoéste,	W. by S.
Oéste,	West.
Oéste 4ª a noroéste,	W. by N.
Oés noroéste,	W. N. W.
Noroéste 4ª a oéste,	N. W. by W.
Noroéste,	N. W.
Noroéste 4ª a nórte,	N. W. by N.
Nor noroéste,	N. N. W.
Nórte 4ª a noroéste,	N. by W.
Vênto travessaõ, ou *travessia,*	Contrary wind.
Dar a embarcaçaõ a travéz,	To hull.
Pairár,	To ply to and again in one's station.
Esporaõ,	Beak.
Colhér hum cábo,	To coil a cable.
Largár máis cábo,	To pay more cable.
Abrír ágoa,	To leak, *or* spring a leak.
Fazér agoáda,	To take in fresh water.
Arpaõ,	A grapple.

Arpár hum navío,	To grapple a ship.
Fatéxa,	Grapple.
Pedáço de lôna breáda que se pôem ao redór do másto e das bômbas para que a ágoa naõ penétre,	Tarpaulin.
Passadôr,	A fidd, *or* pin of iron to open the strands of ropes,
Córda com que se prênde o bòte, ou *lâncha á pôpa do navío,*	Boat rope, *or* gift-rope.
Apíto,	A boatswain's call.
Abadérnas,	Nippers.
Abíta,	Bits.
Emproár,	To steer right forward, to turn the prow straight forward.
Guinár o navío,	To yaw *or* make yaws.
Partę superiôr, ou *máis álta da pôpa de hum navío,*	The tafferel.
Apagafanóes,	Leech-lines.
Arreigádas,	Puttocks.
Briões,	Bunt lines.
Barredóuras,	Bow-studding-sails.
Bartidôuro,	Boat's skit.
Bastárdos,	Parrels.
Bigóta,	A dead-eye.
Botálos,	Studding-sail-booms.
Braceár,	To brace.
Bráços,	Braces.
Bragueíro, or *vergueíro,*	The rudder's rope.
Brandáes,	Back-stays.
Buçárdas,	Breast-hooks.
Cachólas,	Cheeks.
Cadáste,	Stand-post.
Cadernál,	A large block with more than one shive.
Cavérnas,	The floor-timbers.
Colhedôres,	Lines of the shrouds.
Compassár hum navío,	To trim a ship.
Cossóuros,	Trucks.
Cráca,	The foulness of the ship's bottom.
Estár hum navió lançádo á bánda,	Is for a ship to heel.
Cabrestante,	The capstan.
Dar cáça,	To chase.

Cúrvas,	The knees.
Mésas da guarniçaõ,	Chain-wales.
Desástre,	Boat's skit.
Enbornáes,	Scupper-holes.
Poraõ,	The hold of a ship.
Máca,	Hammock.
Convéz,	Deck *or* quarter-deck.
Camaróte do cirurgiaõ,	Cockpit.
Fréte,	Freight.
Cárga,	Cargo.
O'rdem que o capitaõ recébe para dár á véla,	Sailing orders.
A acçãm de imbarcár se,	Embarkation.
Desembárque,	Landing.
Embárgo,	Embargo.
Ancorágem,	Anchorage.
Batálha navál,	Naval battle.
Caravéla mexeriqueíra, ou *de espía,*	A ship for espial, or look out.
Arriár, ou *arreár,*	To veer.
Arreár as vélas,	To strike sail.
Arreár bandeíra,	To strike the flag.
Levantár férro, levár áncoras, levar ferro, levar-se, ou *levar,*	To weigh anchor.
Léva,	The action of weighing *or* taking up the anchor.
Boleár a péça,	To move a gun towards starboard *or* larboard.
Péça de léva,	The signal gun.
Rebocár, ou levár de rebóque,	To tow.
Fazêr costúras,	To splice.
Passágem,	Passage.
Passageíro,	Passenger.
Viágem,	Voyage.
Navió cújo capitaõ tem cártas de represálias,	Letters of marque.
Querenár hum navío,	To careen a ship.
Breár as costúras do navío,	To pay the seams of a ship.
Dar á cósta,	To run a-ground *or* on shore.
Soluçár a náo,	Is for a ship to roll, *or* to float in rough water.
Naufragár,	To suffer a wreck, to be wrecked.
Naufrágio,	Shipwreck.
Patraõ, ou *méstrẽ de náo,*	Shipmaster.

Carpentéiro de navíos,	Shipwright.
Estaleíro,	Stocks.
Embarcár,	To ship.
Embarcár,	To go aboard, to take shipping.
Gruméte,	The meanest sort of sailors; *or* servant to the sailors.
Rapáz que sérve cômo môço do navío,	Ship-boy.
Rapáz que sérve ao capitaõ,	A cabin-boy.
Calafáte,	A calker.
Calafetár hum navío,	To calk a ship.
Calafêto,	Oakham.
Arsenál, ou *ribeíra das náos,*	An arsenal, a store-house, dock-yard.
Emmasteár hum navío,	To fit a ship, *or* vessel, with masts.
Remâr,	To row.
Remadôr,	Rower.
Forçádo,	Galley-slave.
Despenseíro,	Steward.
Marinheíros, e tôda a ôutra gênte que pertênce ao navío,	The crew of a ship.
Chúsma,	Crew of galley slaves.
Guarniçaõ da náo,	Marines, soldiers who serve on board of ships.
O sobrecárga do navío,	Supercargo.
Balestílha,	Cross-staff.
Quadrânte,	Quadrant.
Outânte,	Hadley's quadrant.
De ré,	Aft.
Paravânte,	Fore.
Situaçaõ de húma cósta, ilha, &c. *a respeíto de qualquér ôutro lugár,*	The bearing.
Quarentêna,	Quarantine.
Balíza,	Sea mark.
Lárga,	Large.
Amarár,	To bear off.
Caçár a véla,	To turn the sail to the wind side.
Caceár hum navío,	It is said of a ship that is hurried away from her course by strong winds, tides, *&c.*
Lançár hum navío áo már,	To launch a ship.
Fugír,	To bear away.

Entrár com vênto frésco e bôm no pôrto,	To bear in the harbour.
Bórdo,	Tack.
Bórdo, ou *bânda,*	Broadside.
Navío de álto bôrdo,	First rate man of war.
Cáça,	Chace.
Prêsa, ou *tomadía,*	Prize, *or* capture.
Estár de vergadálto,	To stand for the offing.
Vêntos de monçaõ, ougeroes,	Trade winds.
Andár de consérva,	To keep company together, to sail under a convoy.
Dar, ou *fazêr hum bórdo,*	To tack the ship. *or* tack about, *or* to bring her head about.
Estár á cápa, ou *por-se á cápa,*	To lie by at sea, to back the sails.

Do Commércio, e do que lhe pertênce.	*Of Trade, and of Things relating to it.*
Cônta,	Account.
Cônta de vênda,	Account of sales.
Fazêr húma cônta,	To cast up an account.
Pedír côntas,	To call to an account.
Dar á cônta,	To pay on account.
Cônta corrênte,	Account current.
Dinheíro de contádo,	Ready money.
Fundos Publicos,	Stocks.
O que negocêa em comprár e vendêr acçóens,	Jobber.
Ballânço,	Balance.
Fárdo,	Bale.
Bânco,	Bank.
Banqueíro,	Banker.
Québra,	Bankruptcy.
Falído, ou *quebrádo,*	Bankrupt.
Ajúste, ou *concêrto,*	Bargain.
Tróca,	Barter.
Portadôr,	Bearer.
Lançadôr,	Bidder.
O que lânça máis,	Out bidder.
Lêtra de câmbio,	Bill of exchange, a draught.
Negociár húma lêtra de câmbio,	To negotiate a bill of exchange.
Cônta,	Bill.
Partída,	Parcel.
Conhecimênto,	Bill of lading.

Escritúra de obrigaçaõ,	Bond, engagement.
Guárdalívros, ou *o que em húma cása de negócio tem a séu cárgo os lívros,*	Book-keeper.
Occupaçaõ, or *negócio.*	Business.
Compradôr,	Buyer.
Dinheíro,	Cash.
Pórte, ou *carrêto,*	Carriage.
Caxéiro, ou *o que guárda a caíxa,*	A cashier, *or* cash-keeper.
Cênto,	Cent.
Certidaõ,	Certificate.
Câmbio,	Change, exchange.
Freguéz,	Chap, chapman, *or* customer.
Góstos,	Charges.
Baráto,	Cheap.
Cáro,	Dear.
Recíbo da alfândega,	Clearance, *or* cocket.
Commissaõ,	Commission.
Mercancía,	Commodity.
Compromísso,	Compromise.
Consignaçaõ,	Consignment.
Consúmo,	Consumption.
Conteúdo,	Contents.
Contráto,	Contract.
Correspondência,	Correspondence.
Correspondênte,	Correspondent.
Prêço,	Price, rate.
Alfândega,	Custom-house.
Guárdas d' alfândega,	Custom-house officers.
Guárdas que estaõ vigiándo até que os navíos estéjaõ descarregádos,	Tidesmen, or tide waiters.
Feitoría,	Factory, settlement,
Escritório,	Counting-house.
Crédito,	Credit.
Acredôr,	Creditor.
Corrênte,	Current.
Costúme,	Custom.
Dáta,	Date.
Contratadôr,	Dealer.
Tráfego, ou *negócio,*	Dealing, traffick.
Dívida,	Debt.
Devedôr,	Debtor.
Dinheíro desembolçádo,	Disbursement.
Descônto,	Discount.

Extrácto, ou *cópia*,	Docket.
Depósito,	Deposite.
Direitos qne a alfandega torna a dar a os exportadores de certas fazendas, que ja os tinhaõ pago na supoziçaõ de serem para consumo interiôr: servindo isto para animar o commercio,	Draw-back.
Acredôr importúno,	Dun.
Cópia,	Duplicate.
Corretôr,	A broker.
Corretôr de lêtras de câmbio,	Exchange-broker.
Asseguradôr, ou *seguradôr*,	Insurer *or* under-writer.
Endósso,	Endorsement.
Endossadôr,	Endorser.
Abarcadôr,	Engrosser.
Levantamênto de prêço,	Enhancement.
Entrada or *assênto no registo*,	Entry.
Equivalênte,	Equivalent.
Exigência,	Exigency.
Despêza,	Expence.
Extracçaõ, or *exportaçaõ*,	Export, *or* exportation.
Extorsaõ,	Extortion.
Feitôr, or *commissario*,	Factor.
Fêira,	Fair.
Fío, ou *arâme no qual se enfíaõ os papéis num escritório*,	File for papers.
Quátro, *cinco*, &c. *por cênto*,	Four, five, &c. per cent.
Fretár,	To freight a ship.
Fréte,	Freight.
O que fréta hum navío,	A freighter.
Cabedál, ou *quantía de dinheíro destinádo pâra algúma côusa*,	Fund.
Gánho,	Gain, *or* profit.
O que gánha,	Gainer.
Fazêndas ou *effeítos*,	Goods, effects.
Estréa,	Handsel.
Escritúra, or *lettra*,	Hand-writing.
Entráda,	A custom for imported commodities.
Importadôr,	Importer.
Rênda,	Income.
Interêsse,	Interest.
Communicaçaõ, ou *commércio*	Intercourse.

Inventário,	Inventory.
Insufficiência, ou *fálta de méyos para pagár,*	Insolvency.
Factúra,	Invoice.
A'rras,	Jointure.
Escritúra de arrendamênto,	Lease.
Arrendadôr,	Lessee.
Lívro de razaõ,	Ledger-book.
Empréstimo,	Loan.
Dinheíro emprestádo,	Money lent.
Cárta,	Letter.
Sobrescríto da cárta,	The direction of a letter.
Fechár húma cárta,	To make *or* close up a letter.
Fechár húma carta com sinête,	To make and seal up a letter.
Mála em que o corrêo tráz as cártas,	Mail.
Hypothéca,	Mortgage.
Acredôr hypothecário,	Mortgagee.
O que hypothéca,	Mortgager.
Fiadôr,	Bail.
Pagamênto,	Payment.
Fálta de pagamênto,	Non-payment.
Escríto de dívida,	Note, *or* promissory note.
Dôno,	Owner.
Pacóte,	Pack, a truss.
Serapilheira,	Packcloth, wrapper.
Brabânte,	Packthread.
Máço de cártas,	Packet of letters.
Companheíro de alguém no negócio, ou *sócio,*	Partner.
Sociedáde, ou *companhía no negócio,*	Partnership.
Penhôr,	Pawn, *or* pledge.
Contráto do segúro de mercanciás,	Policy of insurance.
Segúro,	Insurance.
Segurár,	To insure.
Protestár húma lêtra,	To protest a bill.
Aceitár húma lêtra,	To accept a bill.
Protésto,	Protest.
Sacár húma lêtra,	To draw a bill.
Corrêo aôndese lânçaõ as cártas	Post-office.
Corrêo que léva cártas,	Post-man, *or* letter carrier.
Pórte de cártas,	Postage.
Prémio ou *dinheíro que se pága aos seguradôres,*	Premium.

Dinhêiro que se pága aos marinhéiros por térem carregádo o navío,	Primage.
Capitál,	Principal, *or* capital.
Pérdas e dânos,	Losses and damages.
Importáncia,	Proceed.
Importáncia líquida,	Neat proceed.
Proméssa,	Promise.
Bens,	Property.
Pontualidáde,	Punctuality.
Cômpra,	Purchase.
Recíbo,	Receipt.
Recámbio,	Re-exchange.
Arbitro, ou *louvádo,*	Referee *or* umpire.
Louvamênto, ou *arbítrio,*	Reference.
Regatáõ,	Regrater.
Quitaçáõ,	Release.
Reméssa,	Remittance.
Vênda das côusas por miúdo, cômo fázem os mercadôres de retálho,	Retail.
Mercadôr de retálho,	Retailer.
Riquêzas,	Riches, wealth.
Vênda,	Sale.
Padráõ,	A pattern.
Amóstra,	Sample.
Sinête,	Seal.
Lácre,	Sealing-wax.
Ajustamênto de côntas,	Settlement of accounts.
Lója,	Shop.
Mercadôr que tem lója,	Shop-keeper.
Lívro em que o mercadôr de lója tem súas côntas,	Shop-book.
Contrabandísta,	Smuggler.
Fazênda de contrabándo,	Contraband, *or* prohibited goods, goods smuggled, *or* run.
Fazêr contrabándo,	To run, to smuggle prohibited goods.
Modélo, ou *fiél dos pêzos e medídas públicas,*	Standard measure.
Armazêm or *Almazém,*	Warehouse.
Sobrescrevênte,	Subscriber.
Sobscripsáõ,	Subscription.
Tára,	Tare.
Fazênda roím,	Trash of goods.

Rísco,	Rick.
Júros,	Interest.
U'so,	Usance.
Usurário.	Usurer.
Usúra,	Usury.
Obréa,	Wafer.
Mercancías,	Wares.
Valôr,	Worth, *or* value.
Avaría,	Average.
Diréitos,	Duties *or* custom.
Tribúto, ou *contribuiçáõ,*	Cess, tribute.
Táxas,	Taxes.
Sísa,	Excise.
Siseíro,	Exciseman.
Cáes,	Wharf.
Diréito que se pága, por desembarcár fazêndas no cáes,	Wharfage.
Collectôr do mêsmo diréito, ou *tribúto.*	Wharfinger.
Dízimos,	Tithes.
Dizimadôr, ou *dizimeíro,*	Tithe-gatherer.
Lôuça vidráda, sem ser da Chína,	Dutch ware.
Mercadôr de atacádo,	Wholesale dealer.
Vêndaquesefazporpartídas,	Wholesale.

Da Moéda, *ou* Dinheíro Portuguêz.	*Of the Portuguese Coin.*

This mark * is prefixed to the imaginary money.

* *Reál,*	A ree, equal to $\frac{27}{400}$*d.*
Dés réis,	10 rees, $\frac{27}{40}$*d.*
Vintêm,	A vintin, $1\frac{7}{20}$*d.*
Tostáõ, ou 5 *vintêms,*	A testoon, $6\frac{3}{4}$*d.*
4 *Tostôens,* ou *hum crusado,*	A crusade, 2*s.* 3*d.*
Crusado nôvo, ou 24 *vinténs,*	A new crusade, 2*s.* $8\frac{2}{3}$*d.*
8 *Tostôens,*	8 testoons, 4*s.* 6*d.*
Hum quárto de ôuro, ou 12 *tostôens,*	12 testoons, 6*s.* 9*d.*
* *Milréis,* ou 10 *tostôens,*	A milree, 5*s.* $7\frac{1}{2}$*d.*
16 *Tostôens,*	16 testoons, 9*s.*
Mêya moéda de ôuro,	Half moidore, 13*s.* 6*d.*
3,200, ou 32 *tostôens,*	32 testoons, 18*s.*
Moéda de ôuro de 4,800,	A moidore, 1*l.* 7*s.*
Péça de 6,400,	Joanese, 1*l.* 16*s.*
Dóbraõ ou 12,800,	128 testoons, 3*l.* 12*s.*

COLLECÇAÕ DE Adágios Portuguêzes.	A COLLECTION OF Portuguese Proverbs.
A A'goa o dá, a ágoa o léva,	WHAT is got over the devil's back will be spent under his belly; also lightly come, lightly go.
Na ágoa envôlta pésca o pescadôr,	To fish in troubled waters, (to make a benefit of public troubles.)
Está cômo o peíxe n' ágoa,	He lives in clover.
Trazêr a ágoa pára o moínho,	To bring grist to the mill.
Levár ágoa ao már,	To carry coals to Newcastle.
As ágoas estáõ báixas,	He *or* she is at a low ebb.
O que naõ póde al sêr, déves soffrêr,	What can't be cured must be endured.
Cóme cômo hum alárve,	He eats like a thresher.
Metêr a pálha na albárda,	To cheat, to impose upon.
Alazaõ tostádo ântes môrto que cançádo,	A dark sorrel horse will die before he'll jade.
Húma disgráça alcânça a óutra,	One mischief draws on another.
Estár na aldéa, e naõ vêr as cásas,	We say; you can't see wood for trees: *or* to be like the butcher that looked for his knife when he had it in his mouth.
Quem trabálha, tem alfáya,	He that works has furniture.
Fállo-lhe em álhos, respónde-me em bugálhos,	I talk of chalk and you of cheese.
Em têmpo nevádo o álho vále hum cavállo,	Garlick in the foggy weather is as good as a horse; it means that garlick is a good defence for travellers against dampness and cold weather.

Tézo como hum álho,	As stiff as garlick; that is a healthy, strong, robust person.
Súa álma, súa pálma,	As you brew, even so bake.
Na almoéda tem a bárba quêda,	At a sale keep your beard on your chin still; that is, let not your beard wag too fast in bidding, lest you overbid and repent.
Pagár os áltos de vasío,	To have but little *or* no sense at all.
Quem áma a beltrãõ, âma a séu cãõ,	Love me, love my dog.
Câda qual âma séu semelhânte,	Like will to like, *or* like loves to like.
Também os ameaçádos cómem pãõ,	Threatened folks eat bread; we say, threatened folks live long.
Côntas de pérto, e amígos de lônge,	Even reckonings make long friends.
Naõ se déve perdér a amizáde por dá cá aquella pálha,	An inch breaks no squares.
Tam bom he Pedro cômo séu âmo,	Like master, like man.
Furtár o carneíro, e dar os pés pello amôr de Déos.	We say, to steal a goose and give the giblets in alms.
Nem hum dêdo faz maõ, nem húma andorinha veráõ,	One swallow does not make summer. *Una hirundo non facit ver*, says *Horace.*
Levár pálhas, e arálhos,	To sweep stakes.
Na aréa abérta o jústo pécca,	That is, it is opportunity that makes the thief.
De hum argueíro, fazêr hum cavalleíro,	We say to make mountains of mole-hills.
Com árte, e com engáno se víve méyo ânno; com engâno, e com árte se víve a ôutra párte,	That is, all a man's life is a cheat.
Quem a bôa árvore se chêga, bôa sômbra o cóbre,	That is, he that relies on good worthy people, reaps a benefit.
A'sno môrto, cevâda áo rábo,	A day after the fair, *or* after meat, mustard.
A'sno que tem fóme, cárdos cóme,	We say, hungry dogs will eat dirty pudding.

Sôpa de mel naõ se fez pâra a bôca do ásno,	Good things are not fit for fools.
Máis quéro ásno que me léve, que cavállo que me derrúbe,	Better be an old man's darling, than a young man's warling.
Mâis val má avênça que bôa sentênça,	It is better to agree at any rate, than go to law.
Quem naõ se aventúra, naõ ânda a cavállo, nem em múla	Nothing venture, nothing have.
Naõ deítes azeíte no fôgo,	Do not throw oil into the fire.
Bôca naõ admítte fiadôr,	The belly has no ears.
Da máõ á bôca se pérde a sôpa,	Much falls between the cup and the lip.
Em bôca cerráda naõ êntra môsca,	A close mouth catches no flies.
Quem tem bôca vái a Rôma,	That is, a man may go any where, if he has language to speak for himself and ask his way.
Pêlla bôca mórre o peíxe,	Much talking brings much woe.
Câda bofarinheíro lôuva séus alfinêtes,	Every man thinks his own geese swans.
Quem tem quátro, e gásta cínco, naõ ha mistér bolsa nem bolsinho,	He that hath four and spends five hath no need of a purse.
Cavár vái pella vínha por onde vái a máy, vái a fílha,	Like father like son.
Matár dôus coêlhos de húma cajadáda,	We say, to kill two birds with one stone.
Quem cânta, seus máles espânta,	The person who sings makes easy his misfortunes; that is, singing causes him not to reflect on it so much as he otherwise would.
Deitár a cápa a tôuro,	To throw one's cloak at the bull; that is, to venture all a man has to save his life.
Víva el réy, e dá cá a cápa,	Let the king live, and give me the cloak; that is spoken of persons who, under a pretence of authority, rob and plunder other people, and at the same time

pretend they are doing justice to the power reposed in their hands.

Andár de cápa cahída,	To be behind-hand in the world.
O cáõ com ráiva de séu dôno tráva,	A mad dog bites his own master; there is no trusting to madmen, *or* people in a rage.
Quem com câens se lânça, com púlgas, se levânta,	We say, lie with beggars and you will get fleas.
A cárne de lôbo dênte de cáõ,	That is, to return railing for railing; *or*, as our modern proverb says, give him a Rowland for his Oliver; the Latins say, *par pari referre.*
Quem faz cása na práça, huns dízem que he alta, ôutros que he baixa,	That is, a man in public business can't please every body; *or* as *Solon* says: 'tis rare that statesmen can all parties please.
A cavállo dádo naõ ólhes o dênte,	Never look in the mouth of a gift horse.
Quem quer cavállo sem tácha, sem elle se ácha,	'Tis a good horse that never stumbles.
Na térra dos cégos, o tôrto he réy,	In a country of blind men, he that has one eye is the king.
Cóbra bôa fâma, e deíta-te a dormír,	When your name is up, you may lie a-bed till noon.
Fazêr as côntas sem a hóspeda,	To reckon without the hostess; *or* as we say, the host.
Do contádo cóme o lôbo,	The wolf eats of what is counted; that is, thieves will steal, though they know it will be missed, much more if they think it will not.
Em cása de ladráõ naõ fálles em córda,	You should not mention a halter to any whose relatións or friends have suffered by it; that is, no man should be hit in the teeth of his disgrace.
Do côuro lhe sáhem as corrêas,	The thongs come out of his skin; that is, he pays for it.

Cortár o vestido confórme o pánno,	To cut one's coat according to the cloth.
Cría o côrvo, tirárvos-há o olho,	It is said of a person that, being received in distress, defrauds or grows too great for him that entertained him.
Tânta cúlpa tem o ladráõ cômo o consentidôr,	The receiver is as bad as the thief.
Dádivas quebrântaõ pénhas,	Gifts break rocks; that is, kindness overcomes the hardest hearts; and bribes *or* presents corrupt the most resolved.
Melhór he fazêr de bálde que estár debálde,	It is better to work for nothing than to be lazy and do nothing at all.
Deitár azeíte no fôgo,	To make bad worse. *Horace* says, *Oleum addere camino.*
Naõ he o démo tam feio cômo o píntaõ,	We say, the lion is not so fierce as his picture.
Primeiro saõ dêntes, que paréntes,	We say, near is my coat, but nearer is my skin, *&c. Terence* says, *Heus proximus sum egomet mihi.*
Lá vái a língoa, ônde o dênte grita,	To scratch where it itches.
Quândo cúidas metêr o dênte em segúro, toparáz o duro,	Harm watch, harm catch, *Horace* says, *—et fragili quærens illidere dentem,* *—Offendet solido——*
Dár com a lingoa nos dêntes,	To contradict one's self, to belie.
Quem naõ fálla, naõ o ôuve Déos,	A man may hold his tongue in an ill time; also spare to speak and spare to speed.
Ventúra te dê Déos, fílho; que sabêr pôuco te básta,	God give you good luck, child, for a little learning will serve your turn; because it is fortune that raises men more than merit.
Cáda qual por si, e Dêos por tôdos,	Every one for himself, and God for all.
Em bons días, bôas óbras,	The better days the better

	deeds.
Para día de saõ ceréjo,	We say, when two Sundays come together, that is never.
Túdo póde o dinheíro,	Money governs the world.
O hómem propôem, e Déos dispôem,	Man proposes, and God disposes.
Dórme cômo hum arganáz,	He sleeps like a dormouse.
A bom entendedôr pôucas paláwras bastaõ,	A word to the wise is enough.
Gáto escaldádo da ágoa fría ha mêdo,	We say, a burnt child dreads the fire.
No escudellár verás quem te quér bem, ou mal,	That is, people's affections are discovered by their liberality.
Esmolôu sáõ Matthéus, esmolôu pára os sêus,	Charity begins at home.
Naõ ha melhór espélho que o amígo vélho,	There is no better looking-glass than an old friend; that is, such a one will not flatter a man, but tell him the truth.
Nem estôpa com tiçôens, nem molhér com varôens,	That is, conversation of women is dangerous; it is not good jesting with edged tools.
Fallár sem cuidár, he atirár sem afrontár,	To let one's tongue run, without reflecting on what one says. is like shooting at random.
Fálla pôuco e bem, têrte háõ por alguêm,	Talk little and well, and you'll be counted somebody; that is, you'll be esteemed.
Quêm a fâma tem perdída, môrto ânda nésta vída,	He who has lost his reputation is as good as dead whilst living.
A quem má fâma tem, nem accompânhes, nem dígas bem,	Do not keep company with, nor be fond, of one that has an ill name.
Aproveitadôr de farélos, esperdiçadôr de farínha,	That is, one that saves at the spiggot and lets it run out at the bung; also, penny wise and pound foolish.
Naõ fázem bôa farínha,	They can't set their horses

	together.
Quem má a faz nélla jáz,	Self do self harm.
Agóra dá pão e mel, e depôis dará pão e fel,	After sweet meat comes sour sauce.
Lingoa dôce cômo mel, e coraçáõ amargõso cômo fel,	An honey tongue, an heart of gall.
Batér o férro quândo está quênte,	To beat the iron whilst it is hot, *or*, to make hay whilst the sun shines.
Quem com férro máta, a férro mórre,	He who kills by the sword dies by the sword.
Carregádo de férro, carregádo de mêdo,	He who is loaded with iron is loaded with fear; that is, he who loads himself with armour and weapons against danger, discovers he is much afraid.
Quem te faz festã, nàõ soendo fazêr, ou te quer enganár, ou te ha mistér,	He that makes more of you than he is wont to do, either designs to cheat you, or stand in need of you.
Náõ fies, nem profies, nem arrêndes, vivirás êntre as gêntes,	Do not trust, nor contend, nor hire, and you'll live among men; that is, you'll live peaceably.
Mijár claro, dar húma figa ao médico,	Tell the truth and shame the devil.
Se não bébe na tavérna, fólga nélla,	We say he does not smoke but smokes.
Achôu fórma pára o sêu sapáto,	He has found a last to his shoe; that is, he has met with his match.
Não sejáis fornêiro se têndes a cabeçá de manteiga,	Do not undertake to be a baker if your head is made of butter; that is, do not take upon you any business you are unfit for.
A'o hómem ousádo a fortúna lhe dá a máõ,	Fortune favours the bold.
Rôupa de francêzes,	Things left at random, or exposed to be pillaged.
Cahir da frigideira nas brasas,	To fall out of the frying-pan into the fire.
Dizem os filhos áo soalheíro, o que ouvem dizêr a sêus	Little pitchers have great ears.

páys áo fumeíro,	
Pérto vái o fúmo da châma,	We say there is no smoke without some fire.
Quem húma vêz fúrta, fiél núnca,	He who once steals is never trusty; *or,* once a thief, always a thief.
Mal vái ao fúso quándo a bárba nãõ ánda em címa,	Alas for the spindle when the beard is not over it! By the spindle is meant the woman, and by the beard is meant the man.
Cãda térra com sêu úso, cãda róca com seu fúso,	So many countries, so many customs.
Quântas cabêças, tántas carapúças,	Several men, several minds.
Quem lhe doêr a cabêça que a apérte,	We say, if any fool finds the cap fit him, let him put it on.
Se quéres sabêr quem hé o villãõ, mételhe a vára na mãõ,	Set a beggar on horseback, and he will ride to the devil.
Nuõ ha rósa sem espínhos,	There is no rose without thorns, there is no sweet without some sweat.
Andár, andár, vír morrêr á beíra,	To eat an whole ox and faint at the tail. This proverb is spoken when any body falls short of a thing after having used all his endeavours.
Quem não déve, não téme,	Out of debt out of danger.
Quem quãndo póde, não quér, quândo quér, não póde.	It is good to make hay while the sun shines.
Hómem honrádo não ha mistér gabádo,	We say, a good face needs no band.
Hómem grânde, bésta de páo,	This proverb intimates, that things are not to be valued by their bulk, but according to their intrinsic worth and value; and so we say, a lark is better than a kite.
Debáixo de má cápa jáz bom bebedôr,	A tattered cloak may cover a good drinker; that is, men are not to be judged by

outward appearance.

Quem múito abráça, pôuco apérta,	All grasp, all lose; or covet all, and lose all.
No açôugue, quem mal fálla, mal ôuve,	He that speaks knavishly shall hear knavishly. *Terence* says, *Qui pergit ea, quæ vult, dicere, ea, quæ non vult, audiet.*
Quem em mais álto náda, mais présto se afóga,	This is, the highest charges are the more liable and nearer to the downfall.
Hóspede com sol, ha honôr,	First come, first served.
Hospeda formósa, dáno faz á bôlsa,	A beautiful hostess, or landlady, is bad for the purse.
O hóspede e o peixe aos três días féde,	Fresh fish, and new come guests, smell when they are three days old.
Hŏrta sem ágoa, cása sem telhádo, molhér sem amôr, marído sem cuidádo, de gráça he cáro,	That is, a garden without water, a house untiled, a wife without love, and a careless husband, are all alike, being all stark nought.
Hônra ao bôm para que te hônre, e ao máo pára que te naõ deshônre,	Honour a good man, that he may honour you; and an ill man, that he may not dishonour you.
Hônra hé dos âmos, a que se faz aos criádos,	The honour done to servants redounds to their masters.
Officio de conselho, hônra sem provéito,	An office in the council is honour without profit; that is, to be of the council of a town, by which nothing is got in Portugal.
Hómem apercebído, mêyo combatído,	A man that is prepared, has half the battle over.

DIÁLOGOS FAMILIÁRES.	FAMILIAR DIALOGUES.
DIÁLOGO I.	**DIALOGUE I.**
TÊNHA vm. múito bons días,	GOOD morrow, sir.
Cômo está vm.? ou *cômo passa vm.?*	How do you do, sir?
Bem, naõ muito-bêm, vôu passándo,	Well; not very well; so, so.
Muíto bem para servír a vm.	Very well to serve you.
A's órdens de vm.	At your service.
Fíco-lhe muíto obrigádo,	I am obliged to you.
Agradecído,	I thank you.
Cômo está, ou *pássa o senhôr séu irmãõ?*	How does your brother do?
Muíto bem, nãõ muito bêm,	He is very well; not very well.
Elle terá gôsto de ver a vm.	He will be glad to see you.
Naõ teréi têmpo para hir a vêlo hôje,	I shall have no time to see him to day.
Fáça favôr de assentár-se,	Be pleased to sit down.
Dá húma cadêira ao senhôr,	Give a chair to the gentleman.
Nãõ hé necessário,	There's no occasion.
Tenho que hír a fazêr húma visita aquí nesta visinhânça	I must go to make a visit in the neighbourhood.
Vm. tem préssa,	You are in haste.
E'u lógo voltarêi,	I'll be back, *or* return presently.
Adêos mêu senhôr,	Farewell, sir.
Fólgo de vêr a vm. com bôa saúde,	I am glad to see you in good health.
Bêijo as maõs de vm.	I kiss your hand.
Sôu criádo de vm.	I am your servant.
Sôu muíto seu criádo,	Your most humble servant.

DIALOGO II.	DIALOGUE II.
Para fazêr húma Visíta de Manhaã.	*To visit in the morning.*
ONDE está têu âmo? Aínda dórme?	WHERE is your master? Is he asleep still?
Naõ, senhôr, êlle está acordádo	No, sir, he is awake.
Está êlle ja levantádo?	Is he up?
Naõ, senhôr, êlle aínda está na câma,	No, sir, he is still a-bed.
Que vergônha de estár aínda na câma a éstas hóras!	What a shame 'tis to be a-bed at this time a-day.
Ontem á nôite fui para a câma taõ tárde, que naõ me púde levantár cêdo esta manhaã,	I went to bed so late last night I could not rise early this morning.
Que fizéraõ vm^ces. de pôis de cêa?	What did you do after supper?
Dançámos, cantámos, rimos, e jugámos,	We danced, we sung, we laughed, we played.
A que jôgo?	At what game?
A'os cêntos,	We played at piquet.
Quânto me pêza de o naõ têr sabído!	How grieved am I, I did not know it?
Quem ganhôu? quem perdêo?	Who won? who lost?
Eu ganhêi déz moédas,	I won ten moidores.
Até que hóras jugáraõ vm^ces?	Till what hour did you play?
Até dúas hóras despôis da mêya nôite,	Till two in the morning.
A que hóras fôi vm. para a câma?	At what o'clock did you go to bed?
A's três, ás três hóras e mêya,	At three, half an hour after three.
Naõ me admíro que vm. se levânte taõ tárde,	I don't wonder at your rising so late.
Que hóras saõ?	What's o'clock?
Que hóras lhe parêce a vm. que sêjaõ,	What do you think it is?
Paréceme que apênas saõ ôito,	Scarce eight, I believe yet.
Sím! ôito! ja déraõ déz,	How! eight! it has struck ten.
Entáõ he precíso que me levânte quânto maís depréssa pudér,	Then I must rise with all speed.

DIÁLOGO III. | DIALOGUE III.

Para vestír-se.	*To dress one's self.*
QUÉM está ahí? Que quér vm.?	WHO is there? What will you please to have?
Despáxa-te, acênde o lúme, e véste-me,	Be quick, make a fire, dress me.
Ha múito bôm lúme,	There is a fine fire.
Dá-me a mínha camísa,	Give me my shirt.
Eila aquí está, senhôr,	Here it is, Sir.
Naõ está quênte, está muito fría,	'Tis not warm, 'tis quite cold.
Eu a aquentarêi, se vm. quizér	If you please I'll warm it.
Naõ, naõ; tráze-me as mínhas mêyas de sêda,	No, no; bring me my silk stockings.
Húma déllas está rôta,	One of them is torn.
Da-lhe hum pônto, concérta-a,	Stitch it a little, mend it.
Dei-a ao que as concérta,	I have given it to the stocking mender.
Fizéste-bem,	You have done right.
O'nde estaõ as mínhas chinélas	Where are my slippers?
O'nde está a mínha rôupa de châmbre?	Where is my night gown.
Pentêa-me,	Comb my head.
Procúra ôutro pénte,	Look for another comb.
Dá-me o mêu lênço,	Give me my handkerchief.
Eís aquí hum lavádo,	Here is a clean one.
Dá-me o que está na mínha algibéira,	Give me that which is in my pocket.
Dei-o á lavandêira, élle estáva sújo,	I gave it to the washer-woman, it was foul.
Trôuxe élla ja a mínha rôupa?	Has she brought my linen?
Sím, senhôr, e naõ fálta nada,	Yes, there wants nothing.
Tráze-me os mêus calçôens,	Bring me my breeches.
Que vestído quer vm. para hôje?	What clothes will you wear to-day?
O mésmo de ôntem,	Those I wore yesterday.
O alfaiáte ha de trazêr lógo o sêu vestído,	The taylor will bring your cloth suit presently.
Bátem á pórta, vê lá quem hé,	Somebody knocks, see who it is.
Quem hé?	Who is it?
Hé o alfaiáte,	It is the taylor.
Dêixa-o entrár,	Let him come in.

DIÁLOGO IV.	DIALOGUE IV.
O Senhôr e o Alfaiáte.	*The Gentleman and the Taylor.*
TRAZÊIS o méu vestído?	DO you bring my suit of clothes?
Sim, senhôr, eilo aquí,	Yes, sir, here it is.
Há múito têmpo que estóu esperândo por êlle,	You make me wait a great while.
Naõ púde vir até agóra,	I could not come sooner.
Naõ estáva acabádo,	It was not finished.
Aínda naõ estáva forrádo,	The lining was not sewed.
Quer vm. vestír a casáca para vêr se lhe está bêm?	Will you please to try the close coat on?
Vejâmos se está bem feita,	Let us see whether it be well made.
Ténho para mim que lhe hája de agradár,	I believe it will please you.
Paréce-me muíto comprída,	It seems to me to be very long.
He costúme agóra de trazê-las comprídas,	They wear them long now.
Abotoái-a,	Button it.
He múito apertáda,	It is too close.
Assím déve sêr para que lhe estéja bêm ao côrpo,	To fit properly, it ought to be close.
Naõ saõ as mângas demasiádamênte lárgas?	Are not the sleeves too wide?
Naõ, senhôr, estaõ-lhe admirávelmênte,	No, sir, they fit very well.
Os calçôens saõ múito apertádos?	The breeches are very narrow.
Esta he a móda de agóra,	That is the fashion.
Este vestído está-lhe bizarraménte,	This suit becomes you mighty well.
He múito cúrto, múito comprído, múito grânde, múito pequêno,	'Tis too short, too long, too big, too little.
Têndes feito a vóssa cônta?	Have you made your bill?
Naõ, senhôr, naõ tíve têmpo,	No, sir, I had no time.
Trazêi-a amanhaã, e pagár-vos hei,	Bring it to-morrow, I'll pay you.

DIÁLOGO V.	DIALOGUE V.
Para almoçár.	*To breakfast.*
TRA'ZE-nos algúma côusa para almoçár,	BRING us something for breakfast.
Sim, senhôr, ha linguíças e pastelínhos,	Yes, sir, there are some sausages and petty-patees.
Gósta vm. de presúnto?	Do you choose the gammon of bacon?
Sim, tráze-o; comerêmos húma talháda délle,	Yes, bring it; we will eat a slice of it.
Estênde hum guardanápo sobre àquélla mêsa,	Lay a napkin on that table.
Dá-nos prátos, fácas, e gárfos,	Give us plates, knives, and forks.
Láva os cópos,	Rinse the glasses.
Dá húma cadeira ao senhôr,	Reach the gentleman a chair.
Assênte-se vm. assênte-se ao pé do lúme,	Sit down, sir; sit by the fire.
Naõ tênho frío, aquí ficaréi múito bem,	I am not cold, I shall be very well here.
Vejâmos se o vínho he bôm,	Let us see whether the wine be good.
Dá cá aquélla garráfa com aquêlle cópo,	Give me that bottle and a glass.
Fáça favôr de provár aquêlle vínho,	Taste that wine, pray.
Cômo lhe agráda; que díz vm. délle?	How do you like it? what say you to it?
Naõ hé máo, he múito bôm,	It is not bad, it is very good.
Eis aquí as linguíças, tíra aquêlle práto,	Here are the sausages, take away this plate.
Côma vm. linguíças,	Eat some sausages, sir.
Ja comí algumas, éllas saõ múito bôas,	I have eat some, they are very good.
Dá-me de bebêr,	Give me some drink.
A' saúde de vm.	Your health, sir.
Bom provêito fáça a vm.	Much good may it do you.
Dá de bebêr ao senhôr,	Give the gentleman some drink.
E'u bebí aínda agóra,	I drank but just now.
Os pastelínhos éraõ bem bôns,	The petty-patees were very good.
Estávão hum pôuco máis cozídos que devíão estár,	They were baked a little too much.

Vm. naõ cóme,	You do not eat.
Tênho comído tânto, que naõ poderêi jantár,	I have eat too much, I shall not be able to eat any dinner.
Vm. está zombândo, vm. naõ tem comído náda,	You only jest, you have eat nothing at all.
Tênho comído com múito gôsto, tânto das linguíças cômo do presúnto,	I have eat very heartily both of sausages and gammon of bacon.

DIALOGO VI. / DIALOGUE VI.

Para fallár Portuguêz. / *To speak Portuguese.*

CÔMO vái vm. com o sêu Portuguêz?	HOW goes on your Potuguese?
Está vm. ja múito adiantádo nêlle?	Are you much improved in it now?
Aínda me fálta múito; naõ sêi quási náda,	Far from it; I know nothing almost.
Dízem porêm que vm. o fálla múito bêm,	It is said, however, you speak it very well.
Prouvéra a Déos que assím fôsse!	Would to God it were true!
Os que dízem ísso, estáõ muito enganádos,	Those that say so are much mistaken.
Estéja vm. na certêza que assím mo dissérão,	I assure you I was told so.
Pósso fallár algúmas paláv-ras que aprendí de cór,	I can say a few words which I have learnt by heart.
E unicamênte o que hé neces-sário para começár a fallár,	And so much as is necessary to begin to speak.
O começár naõ he bastânte, he precíso que vm. acábe,	The beginning is not all, you must make an end.
Falle vm. sêmpre ou bêm, ou mál,	Be always speaking, whether well, or ill.
Tênho mêdo de dar érros,	I am afraid to commit blunders.
Naõ tênha vm. mêdo; a língoa Portuguêza naõ hé difficil,	Never fear; the Portuguese language is not hard.
Conhêço ísso, e tambêm que élla he múito engraçáda,	I know it; and that it has abundance of graces.
Que felicidáde sería a mínha se êu a soubésse bêm!	How happy should I be, if I were master of it!

A applicaçaõ hé o único méyo para aprendê-la,	Application is the only way of learning it.
Quânto têmpo há que vm. aprênde?	How long have you been learning?
Apênas há hum mêz,	Scarce a month yet.
Cômo se châma o sêu méstre?	What is your master's name?
Châma-se——	His name is ——
Há muito têmpo que o conhêço,	I have known him a great while.
Elle tem ensinádo a múitos dos mêus amígos,	He has taught several friends of mine.
Naõ lhe diz êlle ser precíso que fálle sêmpre Portuguêz?	Does not he tell you that you must constantly talk Portuguese?
Sim, senhôr, assím me diz múitas vêzes,	Yes, Sir, he often tells me so:
Póis, porquê naõ fálla vm.?	Why do not you talk then?
Com quem quér vm. que êu fálle,	Who would you have me talk with?
Com os que fallárem com vm.	With those who shall talk to you.
E'u quizéra fallár, mas naõ me atrêvo,	I would fain talk, but dare not.
He precíso que vm. naõ ténha mêdo, nem se pêje dos que o ouvírem fallár,	You must not be afraid, you must be bold.

DIÁLOGO VII.	DIALOGUE VII.
Do Têmpo.	*Of the Weather.*
QUE têmpo faz?	WHAT sort of weather is it?
O têmpo está admirável,	It is fine weather.
O têmpo está roím,	It is bad weather.
Faz frío? faz cálma?	Is it cold? is it hot?
Naõ faz frío, naõ faz cálma,	It is not cold, it is not hot.
Chóve? naõ chóve?	Does it rain? does it not rain?
Naõ o crêyo,	I do not believe it.
O vênto está mudádo,	The wind is changed.
Terêmos chúva,	We shall have rain.
Hôje naõ há de chovêr,	It will not rain to-day.
Chóve, Chóve a cântaros,	It rains, it pours.
Está nevândo,	It snows.
Trovêja,	It thunders.

Cáhe pédra,	It hails.
Relampaguêa,	It lightens.
Faz múita cálma,	It is very hot.
Geôu a nôite passáda?	Has it freezed last night?
Naõ, senhôr, mas agóra está geândo,	No, Sir, but it freezes now.
Paréce-me que há nevoêiro,	It appears to me to be a great fog.
Vm. naõ se engâna, assim hé,	You are not mistaken, it is very true.
Vm. tem hum grânde catarro, ou *deflúxo,*	You have caught a violent cold.
Há quínze días que o tênho,	I have had it this fortnight.
Que hóras saõ,	What's o'clock?
He cêdo, naõ he tárde,	'Tis early, 'tis not late.
He têmpo de almoçár?	Is it breakfast-time?
Pôuco fálta para sêrem hóras de jantár,	'Twill be dinner-time immediately.
Que farêmos depôis de jantár?	What shall we do after dinner?
Darêmos hum passéyo, ou *irêmos passeár,*	We'll take a walk.
Vâmos dár húma vólta,	Let us take a turn now.
Naõ vâmos fóra com êste têmpo,	We must not go abroad this weather.

DIÁLOGO VIII. / DIALOGUE VIII.

Para perguntár que nóvas há. / *To enquire after news.*

QUE vái de nôvo? ou *que nóvas há?*	WHAT news is stirring?
Sábe vm. algúma côusa de nôvo?	Do you know any news?
Naõ tênho ouvído náda de nôvo,	I have heard none.
De que se fálla pélla cidáde?	What's the talk of the town?
Naõ se fálla de náda,	There's no talk of any thing.
Naõ téndes ouvído fallár de guérra,	Have you heard no talk of war?
Naõ ôuço fallár náda dísso,	I have heard nothing of it.
Porém fálla-se de hum cêrco,	There's a talk however of a siege.
Fallôu-se nísso, mas naõ hé verdáde,	There was such a discourse, but it was not true.

A'ntes pêllo contrário fálla-se de páz, — On the contrary there's a talk of peace.
Assím o crêyo, — I believe so.
Que se diz na córte? — What say they at court?
Fálla-se de húma viágem, — They talk of a voyage.
Quândo vos parêçe que el rêy partirá? — When do you think the king will set out?
Naõ se sábe. Naõ se díz quândo, — 'Tis not known, they do not say when.
O'nde, ou *para ônde se díz que êlle irá?* — Where do they say he'll go?
Huns dizem que irá para Flândres, e ôutros para Alemânha, — Some say into Flanders, others into Germany.
E que díz a Gazéta? — And what says the Gazette?
E'u naõ a lí, — I have not read it.
He verdáde o que se díz do Sr.—— ? — Is it true what's reported of Mr. ——?
Pôis que se diz délle? — What of him?
Dízem que está ferído mortalménte, — They say he is mortally wounded.
Múito me pesaría dísso; êlle he hum hómem de bem, — I should be sorry for that, he's an honest man.
Quem o ferío? — Who wounded him?
Dôus marôtos que o investíraõ, — Two rogues that set upon him.
Sábe-se o porquê? — Is it known upon what account?
A notícia que córre hé, que déu num dêlles hum bofetaõ, — The report is that he gave one of them a box on the ear.
E'u naõ crêyo ísso; nem éu taõ pôuco, — I don't believe it. Nor I neither.
Eílo vái, cêdo saberêmos a verdáde, — However, we shall soon know the truth.

DIÁLOGO IX. / DIALOGUE IX.

Para escrevêr. / *To write.*

DA'I-ME húma fôlha de papél, húma pênna, e húma pôuca de tínta, — GIVE me a sheet of paper, a pen, and a little ink.
I'de ao mêu quárto, e achareís em címa da mêsa túdo o que vos fôr precíso, — Step to my closet, you'll find on the table whatever you want.

Naõ há pênnas,	There are no pens.
Há grânde quantidáde dellas na escrivanínha,	There are a great many in the standish.
Naõ prestão para náda,	They are good for nothing.
Lá há ôutras,	There are some others.
Naõ estaõ aparádas,	They are not made.
O'nde está o vósso canivéte?	Where is your penknife.
Sabéis vós aparár pênnas?	Can you make pens?
E'u apáro-as a mêu módo,	I make them my own way.
E'sta naõ está má,	This is not bad.
Em quânto acábo ésta cárta, fazêime o favôr de fechár as ôutras, e fazêr hum máço déllas,	While I make an end of this letter, do me the favour to make a packet of the rest.
Que séllo quér vm. que êu lhe pônha?	What seal will you have me put to it?
Sélla-o com o mêu sinéte, ou *com as mínhas ármas,*	Seal it with my cypher, *or* coat of arms.
Com que lácre quer vm. que as féche,	What wax shall I put to it?
Fechái-as com o vermêlho ou com o préto; sêja quál fôr, naõ impórta,	Put either red, or black, no matter which.
Tem vm. pôsto a dáta?	Have you put the date?
Paréce-me que sim, mas aínda naõ a assinêi,	I believe I have, but I have not signed it.
A quântos estâmos hôje do mêz?	What day of the month is this?
A ôuto, a déz, a quínze, a vínte,	The eighth, the tenth, fifteenth, twentieth.
Pônde o sobrescríto?	Put the address.
O'nde está a arêa?	Where is the powder?
Vós núnca têndes arêa,	You never have powder or sand.
Ahí há algúma no areêiro,	There's some in the sand box.
Ahí está o sêu criádo; quêr vm. que élle léve as cártas ao corrêo,	There's your servant, will you let him carry the letter's to the post-office?
Léva as mínhas cártas ao corrêo, e naõ te esquéças de pagár o pórte,	Carry my letters to the post-office, and don't forget to pay postage.
Naõ tênho dinhêiro,	I have no money.
Ahí está húma moéda de ôuro,	There's a moidore.
Vái depréssa, e vem lógo,	Go quickly, and return as soon as possible.

DIÁLOGO X.	DIALOGUE X.
Para comprár.	*To buy.*
QUE quér vm.	WHAT do you want, sir? What would you please to have?
Quéro hum bom pãnno fíno para hum vestído,	I want a good fine cloth to make me a suit of clothes.
Tênha vm. a bondáde de entrár, e verá o máis bélo pãnno que há em Lôndres,	Be pleased to walk in, sir, you'll see the finest in London.
Dêixe-me vêr o melhór que vm. tem,	Shew me the best you have.
Aquí tem vm. hum excellênte, que agóra se costúma trazêr,	There's a very fine one, and what's worn at present.
He hum bom pãnno, mas a côr naõ me agráda,	'Tis a good cloth, but I don't like the colour.
Ahí tem vm. ôutra péça que tem a côr máis clára,	There's another lighter piece.
Agrádame a côr, mas o panno naõ he fórte, naõ tem côrpo,	I like that colour well, but the cloth is not strong, 'tis too thin.
Véja ésta péça ; vm. naõ achará em nenhúma párte ôutra taõ bôa cômo élla,	Look upon this piece here, sir, you'll not find the like any where else.
Quânto péde vm. por cáda ána?	What do you ask for it an ell?
O sêu jústo prêço he ——	Without exacting, it is worth ——
Sr. naõ he mêu costúme pôr-me a regateár ; fáca-me favôr de dizêr me o último prêço,	Sir, I am not used to stand haggling; pray tell me your lowest price.
Ja dísse a vm. que aquélle he o sêu jústo prêço,	I have told you, sir, 'tis worth that.
He múito cáro, dar lhe hêi a vm.—	'Tis too dear, I'll give you—
Naõ pósso abatêr hum ceitíl,	I can't bate a farthing.
Vm. naõ há de vendêr por ésse prêço,	You shall not have what you ask.
Vm. quíz sabêr o último prêço, e eu disse-lho,	You asked me the lowest price, and I have told you.

Hóra vâmos, córte vm. lá dúas ânas délle, Come, come, cut off two ells of it.

Asségúro-lhe a vm. cômo hómem de bem que sôu, que naõ gánho náda com vm. I protest, on the word of an honest man, I don't get any thing by you.

Ahí tem vm̃. cínco moédas de ôuro, dê-me a demasía, There's five moidores, give me the change.

Tênha a bondáde de dár-me ôutra em lugár désta, porquê naõ he de pêzo, Be pleased, sir, to let me have another for this, it wants weight.

Ahí esta ôutra, There's another.

A Déos, criádo de vm. Farewell; sir, your servant.

DIALOGO XI. / DIALOGUE XI.

Para húma Jornáda. / *For a Journey.*

QUÂNTAS légoas há daquí a N.? HOW many leagues is it from this place to N.?

Ha ôuto légoas, It is eight leagues.

Nós naõ poderêmos chegâr lá hôje, hé múito tárde, We shall not be able to get thither to day, it is too late.

Naõ hé senaõ mêyo día, vm^ces^ aínda têm bastânte, têmpo, It is not more than twelve o'clock, you have time enough yet.

Hé a estráda bôa? Is the road good?

Naõ he múito bôa pássaõ-se bósques e ríos, So, so; there are woods and rivers to pass.

Há algúm perígo néllа? Is there any danger upon that road?

Naõ há notícias dísso; hé estráda reál em que se encôntra gênte a cáda pásso, There's no talk of it, it is a highway, where you meet people every moment.

Pôis naõ dízem que há ladrôens nos bósques? Do not they say there are robbers in the woods?

Naõ ha de que têr mêdo, nem de día, nem de nôite, There's nothing to be feared either by day or night.

Por ônde se vái? Which way must one take?

Quândo vm^ces^ chegárem ao pé do outéiro, he precíso, que tómem á mão direîta, When you come near the hill, you must take to the right hand.

Pôis naõ hé necessário subír hum outéiro? Is it not necessary to ascend a hill then?

Naõ, Sr. naõ há ôutro outeiro senaõ húma pequêna ladêira, (ou descída) no bósque,
No, sir, there is no other hill but a little declivity in the wood.

Cústa a atínár com o camínho pêllo mêyo dos bósques?
Is it a difficult way through the woods?

Vmces naõ pódem errá-lo,
You can't lose your way.

Lógo que vmces sahírem do bósque, lêmbrem-se de tomár á maõ esquêrda,
As soon as you are out of the wood, remember to keep to the left hand.

Vmces múitos ânnos, fico-lhe múito obrigádo,
I thank you, sir, and am very much obliged to you.

Vâmos, vâmos, senhôres, tomêmos hum cavállo,
Come, come, gentlemen, let's take a horse,

Onde está o marquêz?
Where is the marquis?

Elle foí adiânte,
He is gone before.

E'lle há de estár esperándo por vós lógo alí fóra da cidáde,
He'll wait for you just out of town.

Porquê está vmce agóra esperándo? hóra, vámo-nos daquí, acabêmos,
What do you stay for now? come, come, let's be gone, let's have done.

Fiquem-se embóra, senhôres, a Dêos,
Farewel, gentlemen, farewel.

Fáçaõ vmces mûito bôa jornáda,
I wish you a very good journey.

DIÁLOGO XII. — DIALOGUE XII.

Da Cêa e da Pousáda. — *Of the Supper and Lodging.*

COMQUE assím estámos chegádos á estalágem,
SO, we are arrived at the inn.

Apeêmo-nos, senhôres,
Let's alight, gentlemen.

Péga nos cavállos dêstes senhôres, e tráta délles,
Take these gentlemen's horses, and take care of them.

Vejâmos agóra o que vm. nos há de dár para ceár,
Now let's see what you'll give us for supper.

Hum capaõ, méya dúzia de pômbos, húma saláda, seis codornízes, e húma dúzia do calhãndras,
A capon, half a dozen of pigeons, a sallad, six quails, and a dozen of larks.

Quérem vmces mais algúma côusa?
Will you have nothing else?

I'sto he bastânte, dái-nos algúm vínho que sêja bôm, e húma sobremêsa,
That's enough, give us some good wine, and a dessert.

Dêixem vm^{ces} ísso por mínha Cônta, éu lhes promêto que fiquem bem servídos,	Let me alone, I'll please you, I warrant you.
Alumía aos senhôres,	Light the gentlemen.
Dái-nos de ceár o máis depréssa que fôr possível,	Let's have our supper as soon as possible.
A'ntes que vm^{ce} tênhaõ descalçádo as bótas, estará a cêa na mêsa,	Before you have pulled your boots off, supper shall be upon the table.
Têndo cuidádo que trágaõ para címa as nossas málas e pistólas,	Let our portmanteaus and pistols be carried up stairs.
Descalçái-me as bótas, e despôis iréis vêr se tem dádo algúm fêno aos cavállos,	Pull off my boots, and then you shall go to see whether they have given the horses any bay.
Levái-os ao río, e têndo cuidádo que lhes dêm algúma avêa,	You shall carry them to the river, and take care they give them some oats.
E'u terêi cuidádo de tudo, estêjaõ vm^{ces} descançádos,	I'll take care of every thing, don't trouble yourself.
Senhôres, a cêa está prômpta, está na mêsa,	Gentlemen, supper is ready, it is upon the table.
Nós vâmos já,	We'll come presently.
Vâmos ceár, senhôres, para nos hírmos deitár cêdo,	Let's go to supper, gentlemen, that we may go to bed in good time.
Dái-nos ágoa pâra lavár as maõs,	Give us water to wash our hands.
Sentêmo-nos, senhôres, sentêmonos á mêsa,	Let us sit down, gentlemen, let's sit down at table.
Dái-nos de bebêr,	Give us some drink.
A saúde de vm^{ces} mêus senhôres,	To your health, gentlemen.
He bôm o vínho ?	Is the wine good ?
Naõ he máo,	It is not bad.
O capaõ, naõ esta bem assádo,	The capon is not done enough
Dái-nos húmas pôucas de larânjas, e huma pôuca de pimênta,	Give us some oranges with a little pepper.
Porque naõ come vm^{ce} dêstes pômbos ?	Why don't you eat of these pigeons ?
Eu tênho comído hum pômbo, e três calhândras,	I have eaten one pigeon and three larks,
Díze ao estalajadêiro que lhe querêmos fallár,	Tell the landlord we want to speak with him.

DIÁLOGO XIII.	DIALOGUE XIII.
Do saltár e do corrêr.	*Of jumping and running.*
HÓRA vâmos, quer vm. saltár?	COME, will you go to jumping?
Naõ hé bôm saltár lógo despôis de comér,	It is not good to jump immediately after dinner.
De que módo de saltár gósta vm. máis?	What leaping do you like best?
O máis commúm he a pés juntos,	The most usual is with one foot close to the other.
Quer vm. que saltêmos só com hum pé?	Shall we hop with one leg?
Cômo vm. quizér,	As you please.
Estehĕhum sáltomuítogrânde	This is a very great leap.
Quântos pés saltôu vm.?	How many feet have you leap'd?
Máis de quátro,	More than four.
Apósto que salto por címa daquelle barrânco,	I lay I leap clearly over that ditch.
Vm. sálta com hum páo comprído,	You jump with a long stick.
Dêmos húma carreíra,	Let us run races.
Quér vm. que corrâmos a pé ou a cavállo?	Shall we run on foot or on horseback?
De húma e ôutra sórte,	Both ways.
Díga vm. dônde se há de começár, e ônde se há de acabár,	Appoint the race.
Começêmos a corrêr da quí,	This shall be the starting place.
Correrêmos até chegár a ésta árvore,	This tree shall be the goal.
Tênho corrído trêz vêzes dêsde o lugár assinaládo até a árvore,	I have run three times from the starting-place to the tree.
Vm. nãõ esperôu pello sinál para principiár a corrêr,	You did not stay for the signal to start.
Aquêlle cavállo corrêo muito bêm,	That horse has run his race very well.
Quântas carreíras tem êlle dádo?	How many heats has he run?
Três ou quátro,	Three or four.
Vm. tem ganhádo,	You have won the plate.

CARTAS DE COMMERCIO.	LETTERS ON BUSINESS, OR MERCANTILE AFFAIRS.
Senhor F. F. Londres. *30 de Janeiro de 1813.*	Mr. F. F. London. The 30th of Jan. 1813.
RECEBI' as súas de 3 e 5 do passádo, no dia 5 do corrênte, víndas pelo Navío F. F. capitaõ B. B. pélas quáes vêjo, Vm^ce. pretênde carregár as fazêndas que recommendêi ao seu cuidádo pêla mínha última, no priméiro Navío para ésta.	YOURS of the 3d and 15th of last Month, came to Hand on the 5th Current by the Ship F. F. Captain B. B.; and therein I take Notice, that you intend to put on board the next good Ship bound hither, the Goods I recommended to your Care in my last.
Inclúsas remêto a Vm^ce. mais algúmas amóstras, porêm dezêjo que queira recomendár ao Tintureiro, que as côres sejaõ vivas e firmes.	Herewith I send you more Patterns, but I would desire you to be solicitous with your Dyer, that the Colours may be lively and durable.
Pelo último Navío que daquí partío lhe remetí a cônta de vênda, da súa partída de mêias de séda, e das três Cáxas de Chapeós, pelo Navío A; e achândo Vm^ce. algúmas partidas de qualquér dêstes dous géneros, que lhe agrádem, as póde mandár, pôis saõ agóra mui procurádos; déve comtúdo têr múito cuidádo em que sêjaõ da última móda. Tênho verificádo o ajúste das 20 Pipas de Azeite da safra proxima, para partirem	By the last Ship I remitted you Account of Sales, of the Parcel of Silk Stockings, and the three Boxes of Hats, by the Ship A; and if you meet with a Parcel of either, or both, to your Mind, please to send them, such Articles being now in Demand, but great Care must be taken of the Fashion and Make. I have taken care to secure your twenty Pipes of Oil for the first Ships in the Season, and

pelos primeiros Navíos: igualménte tênho carregádo no Navío N. Capitaõ F. as súas 20 Pipas de Vinho tínto; assim cômo támbém as dôze e três quártos de brânco, cuja Factúra remêto inclusa: Os conhecimêntos, lhos remeterêi pelo corrêio. Heide estimár chêgue túdo a salvamênto. Hé quânto por hóra se me offerêce a dizêrlhe; no entretânto sôu

De Vm^ce^. muito
Veneradôr e Criádo.

put on board the Ship N. Capt. F. your twenty-Pipes of Red, and twelve Pipes and three Hogsheads of White Wine, of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the Bills of Lading shall be sent by the post, and I hope will come safe to hand; which being all that is necessary at present, I remain,

Sir,
Your humble Servant.

Senhôr Diógo Jones.

VOU por ésta avisár a Vm^ce^. que pélo Navio Derby, lhe remetí duás saquinhas de diamântes, importándo em Pagódas 4396. 25 Fan. 10 Casks, em retôrno dos seus fundos em meu podêr; os quáes fiz registrar nos livros da Companhia em conformidáde com as suas ordems.

Inclusos achará o Conhecimento, Factura e a sua Conta corrente fecháda, que desejo cheguem a salvamento é me alegrarei de que faça grandes interêces.

Cômo eu estou para voltar para a Európa, á minha chegáda a Lôndres, terei a hônra de o vêr, e lhe darêi entaõ, huma relaçaõ exacta do commercio da India.

Tenho o gôsto de sêr,
De Vm^ce^. Reverênte Crd^o^.
e Veneradôr.

Forte de S. Jorge.
12 de Jan^o^. 1813.

Mr. James Jones.

Sir,

THESE will advise you, that by this Ship the Derby, I have made the return of your Stock in my Hands in two Bulses of Diamonds, amounting to Pagodas 4396, 25 Fan. 10 Casks, having registered them according to your Order in the Company's Books; inclosed is a Bill of Lading, together with Invoice, and your Account current closed, which I wish may come safe to you, and turn to a good Account. As I am returning to Europe, at my Arrival in London, I shall have the honour to see you, and give you an exact Account of the Trade in India. I am entirely,

Sir,
Your humble Servant.

Fort St. George,
Jan. 12, 1813.

Lisboa 4 de Março de 1811.

Sñr. João Ferrier.

Londres:

ACHO-ME favorecído côm a súa de 3 do passádo, e véjo, que em execuçáõ ás minhas órdems, Vmce. têm comprádo os quinhêntos Barrís de Arenques de fúmo, a 11l. por Last. Estou cérto que êsse hé o menór prêco por que Vmce. os pôde obtêr, e naõ ténho a menór dúvida que haõ de corresponder na sua qualidáde.

O meu Navío se está a aparelhár pâra os ir buscár, e visto êlle naõ demandár maís de nóve pés d' água, poderá mêsmo carregár no seu Cáes (como Vmce. têve a bondáde de me dizêr) o que poupará quatro pennys por barríl, de despêsas. Julgo que elle poderá carregár sette centos Barris, ou mais. O Capitaõ visto naõ ter despêzas a fazêr, naõ necessitará de dinhêiro.

Agradêço-lhe muito a sua informaçáõ relativamênte ao câmbio êntre Lôndres e ésta Práça, mas cômo júlgo as remêssas sôbre o Exchéquer hum pôuco arriscádas, Vmce. se servirá sacár sôbre mim ao câmbio mais vantajôso possível, ficândo na certêza, que as suas Léttras seráõ págas com a ponctualidáde do costúme.

Tênho o gôsto de sêr,

De Vmce. mto. Attênto Venr.

Lisbon, 4 March, 1811.

Mr. John Ferrier,

London.

Sir,

I AM favoured with yours of the 3d of last month, and find, in Compliance to my Order, you have bought the five hundred Barrels of red Herrings, at 11*l.* per Last. I make no doubt, but that was the lowest Price you could get them for, and the goodness of them does answer it. My Ship is getting ready with all speed to go down to fetch them, and she may be laden at your Quay, as she draws no more than nine feet of water, (as you are pleased to mention,) which will save the Charge of four Pence per Barrel; I judge she will carry seven hundred Barrels, or more. The Captain will not have Occasion for any Money, so will want no Supply. I thank you for the Information you gave me in relation to the Exchange between London and this Place, but as I look upon the Remittance of the Money hence, as hazardous in Exchequer Bills, you will be pleased to draw on me at the most commodious Exchange possible, and your Bills at the usual Course, which shall meet with all due honour from,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

Londres 18 de Março de 1813.

Sñr. J. Morrice.
Cadiz.

TENHO recebído em séu devído témpo as súas differéntes cártas, assím cômo tambêm a mínha cônta corrênte, a quál tenho lauçádo nos mêus Lívros em conformidáde côm Vmce.

A súa última hé de 29 do passádo, e nella me mânda o recíbo das trés Lêttras, empotándo em sêis mil Péças de Oito, que mêu Irmaõ Jozé lhe remetêu por minha Cônta e órdem: espéro fazêr triste Negócio com éllas depôis de hum desembôlço de tânto têmpo, e com hum câmbio taõ desfavorável. Acho que os limites que êlle lhe dêu, fôraõ muito abáxo do câmbio, e prêço da práta: porém visto eu ter esperádo tôdo êste témpo, e naõ havér probabilidáde de hum ou ôutro baixár, Vmce. se servirá remetêr-me o meu dinhêiro, ao câmbio corrênte, para ésta Práça, ou Amsterdam, como lhe parecêr máis conveniênte aos mêus interêsses.

Se o prêço da cochenilha, ou da Práta descêsse tânto, que Vmce. julgásse sêr máis conveniênte para mim, empregár o meu dinhêiro em qualquér déstes dôis géneros, do que remetêr-me Lêttras, nêsse cázo o poderá fazêr, deichândo eu isso inteiramênte á sua disposiçaõ, na certêza

London, March 18, 1813.

Mr. J. Morrice.
Cadiz.

Sir,

YOUR several Letters came to hand in due Time, as did my Account Current, which I have noted in conformity with you; your last to me was of 29 of last Month, wherein you give me Receipt of the three Bills, amounting to six thousand Pieces of Eight, which my Brother Joseph sent to you for my Account and by my Order; I shall make but a sorry Bargain of them, after so long a Disbursement; besides they cost me a dear Exchange; I find his limits to you were much under the Price of Plate and Exchange: Now since I have waited all this Time, and there being no Probability of their falling, be pleased to send my Money, as the Exchange comes, either for this Place or Amsterdam, which you judge will turn most to Account. If the Plate or Cochineal should fall to a Price, which you may conceive will answer better than by Remittance at a due Exchange, in such case invest my Money in either of them, which I do entirely leave to you, being persuaded, you will act in my Affairs equal to your own. I should be glad to hear of the Fleet's Arrival; for perhaps, it might give some fa-

de que tratará dos mêus interésses, com o mésmo disvélo cómo se fôssem sêus próprios.

Estimaría sabêr da chegáda do cambio, porque podería sêr produzísse algúma mudânça favorável no Commercio, e que cáda hum podésse fazêr úso dos sêus capitáes; pôis ao presênte as circumstancias naõ convídaõ a náda. Hé quânto por agóra se me offeréce a dizêr-lhe. No entretânto tênho o gosto de sêr

De Vm^ce. m^to. Attênto
Ven^or. e Criádo.

vourable turn to business, so that one could make some use of one's money, for at present, it does not invite one to any thing; which is all from,

Sir,
Your humble Servant.

Londres 3 de Abril de 1813.

Sen^res. Mills & C^a.

Porto.

ESTA serve de informar a Vm^ces. que de Sexta feira a oito dias se haõ de abrir os Livros do Banco de Inglaterra, para pagar os devidendos vencidos até aquêlle dia, em que eu naõ deicharei de recebêr o que lhes pertence dos juros respectivos até a esse tempo, em virtude dos podêres que me conferíraõ para esse fim, e depois de os ter recebido, lhos remetrei.

Deos guarde a Vm^ces. m^tos. annos.

De Vm^ces. m^to.
Ven^or. e Crd^o.

London the 3d of April, 1813.

Messieurs Mills & Co.

Oporto.

THIS may serve to inform you that the Books will be opened at the Bank of England on Friday se'nnight, to pay the dividends due up to this time to the parties concerned, when I shall be ready to receive whatever belongs to you both, with the respective interests thereon, by virtue of your powers given to me for that purpose, and on receipt thereof, shall remit the samê to you, whom God preserve many years.

Your most humble Servant.

Hum Escrito, ou Bilhête aberto, a hum Amigo ou Vezinho, em qualquer ocasiaõ.

AO Senr. G. S. que seu creado T. M. lhe róga o favôr, de lhe enviar pelo Portadôr

de que agora precisa, e por que lhe ficará muito obrigado.

A short open Escrito, or Message, to a Friend or Neighbour, for any thing upon occasion.

TO Mr. G. S. that T. M. his most humble Servant, desires the favour of him, to send by the Bearer having at present immediate occasion for it, and he shall always remain obliged to him as his

Humble Servant.

Carta, ou Instrumênto de Procuração.

SAIBAM tódos quántos êste instrumênto, ou Carta de procuração virem, que eu A. B. de Londres, hómem de negócio, tênho nomeádo e constituído e por esta presente noméo, ordêno, constituo e faço o Senhor B. C. de Negociante, mêo verdadêiro e legítimo procuradôr, por mim e em meu Nôme e ao meu uso, póde demandár, arecadár, e reçebêr de T. B. Negociante a sôma de a mim devída pelo ditto T. B. dándo e por esta concedêndo ao meu ditto Procuradôr o meu podêr plenario e autoridáde de exercitár, e de usar de todas e taes acçoẽs e ôutras coúsas em direito necessárias, para a cobrânça da ditta dívida, e em meu nõme, de dar, e fazer quitaçoẽs ôu ôutras descárgas, e geralmente de fazer e executar na materia sobreditta taõ plenáriamênte

A Letter of Attorney.

KNOW all Men by these Presents, That I A. B. of London, Merchant, have named and constituted, and by these presents do name, ordain, appoint, and make my trusty friend, B. C. of Merchant, my true and lawful Attorney, for me, and in my name, and to my Use, to Demand, sue for, recover, and receive of T. B. of Merchant, the Sum of to me due and owing by and from the said T. B. giving, and hereby granting unto my said Attorney, my full Power and Authority to use and exercise all such Acts, Things, and Devices in the Law, as shall be necessary for the recovering of the said Debt, and give Acquittance, or other Discharges, in my Name; to make and give, and generally to do and exe-

como se eu mésmo fizesse ou pudesse fazêr, estando pessoalménte presente; ratificândo, confirmândo, e outórgando toda e qualquer cousa que o ditto meu procuradôr legitimamênte fizér ou causár de se fazer nélla por esta presente. Em testemúnha do que Assinei e sellei ésta em aos 20 dias do mêz de Março de 1807. por A. B.

Assinado e Sellado diânte de

T. A. }
M. B. } *Testemunhas.*

cute on the Premises, as fully as myself might or could do, were I personally present; ratifying, confirming and allowing all and whatsoever my said Attorney shall lawfully do, or cause to be done therein, by these Presents. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, in the 20th of March, 1807.

Sealed and delivered A. B.
In the Presence of
T. A.
M. B.

Carta ou o Instrumênto de Fretamênto.

ESTA cárta ou Instrumênto de Fretamênto contratádo, feito aos días do mêz de do Anno de do naciménto de nósso Senhor Jesús Chrísto, &c. Entre T. B. Mestre, debaixo de Deos, do navío nomeádo, de duzêntas e cincoênta toneládas que ao presênte está Surto e ancorádo no Rio de de húma párte, e E. T. M. B. L. &c. homens de negócio da ôutra parte: Certificaõ que o ditto Méstre tem dádo em aluguel e fretádo o ditto Navío aos dittos hómens de negócio e que elles os dittos Hómens de negócio têm tomádo em aluguél pélla viágem aos concêrtos e ás condições, asaber; o ditto Méstre faz concêrto, promete e otór-

The Copy of a Charter-Party of Affreightment.

THIS Charter Party of Affreightment, indented, made the of the Month of Anno Domini, between T. A. Master, under God, of the good Ship or Vessel, called the of the Burthen of Tuns, or thereabouts, now riding at Anchor, in the River of of the one Part, and E, T, M, B, L, &c. Merchants, of the other Part, witnesseth, that the said Master has granted and let the said Ship to freight unto the said Merchants, and that they the said Merchants have accordingly hired her for the Voyage, and upon the Terms and Conditions following: That is to say, the said Master does cove-

ga, por êlle mêsmo, seus Testamentêiros, e Administradôres, e com os dittos hómens de negócio, e qualquer délles, ou seus, e a qualquer dos seus Testamentêiros, Administradôres, e Constituíntes, por estes presentes; que o ditto Navío forte e saõ de quilha, e bem provído de mantimêntos, enxárcias e gênte, e aparelhád● de tôdas as côusas conveniêntes e necessárias para fazêr a viagem adiante declaráda; com o primêiro vento favorável e bôm tempo que Deos permittir despôis da dáta da presente, partirá do pôrto de com tôdas as tâes fazêndas e Mercadorías que os dittos hómens de negócio ou os Seus Constituíntes, entremêntes carrégaraõ ou meteráõ abórdo délle. e com élle em direitúra dará á véla e aplicará ao como o vénto e o témpo máis favorecérem ao ditto Navío na sua viágem; e em chegândo taõ pérto do ditto lugár de elle o ditto Méstre ou os Seus Constituíntes dêntro de Dias de trabálho para se contárem lógo despois de tal sua chegáda, naõ sómênte descaregaraõ, entregaraõ as dittas fazêndas e mercadorías metidas abórdo do ditto Navío ao sóbre ditto, aos dittos homens de negócio, aos seus Feitôres ou Constituíntes, ôu a algûns ou algúm délles a Salvamênto e bêm acondi-

nant, promise, and grant for himself, his Executors, and Administrators, to and with the said Merchants, and either of them, their and either of their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents; That the said Ship, strong and sound, and well and sufficiently victualled, tackled, manned, and apparelled, with all Things fit, needful and necessary for the Performance of the Voyage hereafter mentioned, shall, with the first fair Wind and Weather, which God shall send, after the Date of these Presents, depart from the Port of with all such Goods and Merchandize as the said Merchants, or their Assigns, shall in the mean time lade and put on board of her, and therewith directly sail, and apply unto as Wind and Weather shall best serve for the said Ship to sail, and being arrived as near to the said Place of he the said Master, or Assigns shall and will, within working Days next from and after such her Arrival to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver the said Goods and Merchandize put on board the said Ship at aforesaid, unto the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, in Safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and

cionádas, salvo o risco dos máres, e o tolhimênto de principes e Governadôres, mas também receberáõ, tornaráõ a caregár, e tomaráõ abórdo do ditto Navío, de e dos dittos hómens de negócio, dos sêus Feitôres ou Constituíntes, ou de algúns ou algúm dêlles, tôdas as táes fazêndas e mercadorías que êlles ou qualquer dêlles ali caregaráõ, ou meteraõ abórdo dêlie até o comprimênto intéiro da cárga do ditto Navío; asabêr; tânto quânto bêm se podér arrumár debáixo da cubérta no convês, e adiânte do mastro grânde, Salvo o lugar para os mantimêntos, enxárcias e aparélhos do ditto Navío, e os dittos dias de trabálho sêndo acabádos, ou o ditto navío sêndo ali mais depréssa despachádo, o que priméiro succedêr, elle o ditto Méstre ou os seus constituíntes com a priméira bôa ocasião de têmpo e vênto favorável em dereitura navegaráõ e tornaráõ a vir côm o ditto Navío e a Sua Cárga, do ditto pôrto de descaregar, e recaregar de aqui dêntro de diás de trabálho lógo despôis da entráda do ditto Navío dáda na alfândega desta ditta êlle o ditto Méstre ou os sêus Constituíntes descaregaráõ e entregaráõ as dittas fazêndas e mercadorías carregádas abórdo do ditto Navío ao

Restraint of Princes and Rulers excepted, but also shall and will receive, relade, and take on board the said Ship, of and from the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, all such Goods and Merchandize, as they or any of them shall there please to lade and put on board her, to the said Ship's full and compleat Lading; that is to say, as much as can conveniently be stowed in the whole Hold, and between Decks, afore the main mast, Room only reserved for the said Ship's Provisions, Tackle, and Apparel, and the said working Days being expired, or the said Ship there sooner dispatched, which first shall happen, he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will, with the then next Opportunity of Wind and Weather from her said unlading and relading Port of aforesaid, directly sail, return, and come back with the said Ship and Lading unto the Port of and here within working Days next after the said Ship shall be entered in the Custom-House of this said he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes, laden on board the said Ship at her lading and relading aforesaid, unto the said Merchants, their Execu-

séu descarregár e récarregár sobre ditto, aos dittos hómens de negócio, e os seus Testamentéiros, Administradôres, ou Constituíntes, a salvamênto, salvo o risco dos máres e o tolhimênto de Príncipes e Governadôres, e assim se acabará a ditta destináda Viágem E os dittos hómens de negócio concértam, prométem, e otórgam por élles mêsmos e qualquér délles, ou séus, è qualquér de séus Testamentêiros, Administradôres, e Constituíntes por esta presente: que os sêus Testamentéiros, Administradôres, Feitôres ou Constituíntes naõ sóménte descaregaráõ e recaregaráõ o ditto navío ao seu pôrto, de descaregár, e recaregar de sobre ditto, e despacharáõ e descaregaráõ o mésmo néste na manêira e fórma acíma declaráda: e dêntro dos cértos dias e têmpos sôbre nomeádos; Mas tambêm por intéiro de tôdo o fréte que se vencêr, para se pagar e pedír por e durânte ésta presênte destináda viágem; bêm e verdadeiramênte pagaráõ ou causaráõ que se págue ao ditto Méstre, aos séus Testamentêiros, Administradôres ou Constituíntes a somma de de dinhêiro corrênte de na manêira e fórma seguínte; Asabér párte délle dêntro em diás despôis da entráda do

tors, Administrators, or Assigns, in safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes and Rulers, excepted, and so end the said intended Voyage; and the said Merchants do covenant, promise, and grant, for themselves, and either of them, their, and either of their Executors and Administrators, to and with the said Master, his Executors and Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents, that their Executors, Administrators, Factors, or Assigns, shall and will not only unlade and relade the said Ship, at her unlading and relading Port of aforesaid, and dispatch, and discharge the same at this in the Manner and Form as above expressed, and within the respective Days and Times above mentioned, but also shall and will, in full of all Freight to be due, payable, or demandable, for or during this present intended Voyage, well and duly pay, or cause to be paid, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, the Sum of of lawful money of in the Manner and Form following: That is to say, Part thereof within Days after the said Ship shall be entered into the Custom House of *Item*, more thereof

ditto navío dáda na alfândega de Item máis . . . . . dêntro em dias proximos seguintes, e o restânte do ditto fréte intéiro dêntro em dias lógo despôis da descárga do ditto Navío aquí em sobre ditto, E acórdase reciprocamênte por e êntre âmbas as pártes por êlles mêsmos, os seus particuláres Testamenteiros, e Administradôres que tôdos os gástos dos pórtos que se vencêrem para pagárse ou pedirse, durânte esta presênte destináda viágem; serãõ págos e satisféitos na manéira e fórma seguinte; Asabêr dêlles, pêllos dittos hómens de negôcio ou sêus Testamentéiros ou Constituíntes: Além disso, por ésta se concérta que poderá sêr e séja lícito aos, e péllos dittos hómens de negocio, os sêus feitôres, ou Constituíntes de retêr o ditto navío em detênça ao seu pôrto, descarga e recárga sobre ditta, e tambem em . . . . sobre ditto, tanto têmpo e tântos dias que se requêirãõ, além dos dias cértos acima apontádos, sálvo que nãõ pássem dias por intéiro; Elles os dittos hómens de negócio, os seus Feitôres, Constituíntes por câda húm e câda tál dia pagândo ao ditto Mêstre ou aos sêus Constituíntes de dia em dia, cômo mêsmo se vencêr para se pagár, qualquér côusa sobredítta em contrario

within Days then next following, and the remaining part of the said whole Freight within Days next after the said Ship shall be delivered after lading here at aforesaid; and it is mutually agreed by and between the said Parties to these Presents, for themselves, their several Executors and Administrators, That all Port Charges which shall grow due, payable, or demandable, during this present intended Voyage, shall be paid and satisfied in the Manner and Form following; That is to say, thereof by the said Merchants, their Executors, Factors, or Assigns, and the other thereof by the said Master, his Executors or Assigns: Further, it is hereby agreed, that it shall and may be lawful unto and for the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, to keep the said Ship in Demurrage at her unlading and relading Port above mentioned, and also at aforesaid, over and above the respected Days aforementioned, such other Time and Number of Days as will be requisite, so as the same exceed not Days in the whole, they the said Merchants, their Factors, for each and every such Day, paying unto the said Master, or his Assigns Day by Day, where the same shall grow due and payable, any thing

nâõ obstânte; e pêllo comprimênto de tôdas, e de câda, huma das côusas acíma declarádas, as quáes por párte e pêllo que tóca ao ditto Méstre, aos sêus Testamentêiros, Administradôres ou Constituíntes e câda húm dêlles saõ e dévem de ser avídas, tídas, observádas e comprídas, o ditto Méstre se obríga a si mêsmo, os seus Testamentêiros, e Administradôres, juntamênte com o ditto Navío, o seu fréte, enxárcias e aparêlhos aos dittos hómens de negócio, aos sêus Testamentêiros, Administradôres e Constituíntes, e câda húm dêlles na sôma ou pêna de dinhêiro corrênte de pâra se pagár bêm e verdareirâmente por ésta presênte, e tambêm pêllo comprimênto de tôdas e de câda húma das côusas sôbre dittas, os quáes por párte e pêllo que tóca aos dittos hómens de negócio, aos sêus Testamentêiros Administradôres, Constítuíntes ou qualquér dêlles, sáõ e dévem de sêr guardádas, págas, e Comprídas; os dittos hómens de negócio sé obrígaõ a si mêsmos, os sêus Testamentêiros, e Administradôres, júnta e separádamênte côm a suas fazêndas que se caregaraõ abôrdo do ditto Navío nésta presênte destináda viágem, ao ditto Méstre aos sêus Testamentêiros, Administradôres e Constituíntes, e a câda húm dêlles, na semelhânte Sôma da pêna de

aforesaid to the contrary notwithstanding; and for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, observed, and performed, the said Master doth bind and oblige himself, his Executors, and Administrators, together with the said Ship and her Freight, Tackle and Apparel unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, in the Sum or Penalty of Pounds of lawful Money of well and truly to be paid by these Presents, and likewise for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Merchants their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, or any of them, are and ought to be kept, paid and performed, the said Merchants do bind and oblige themselves, their Executors, and Administrators, jointly and severally, together with their Goods, to be laden on board the said Ship, this present intended Voyage, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, in the like Sum and Penalty of of like lawful Money of also well and truly

de Semelhânte dinhéiro corrênte de para sêr pago bêm e verdadeimênte por ésta presênte; Em Testemunha do que as pártes Sobredittas assináraõ e Seláraõ reciprocamênte éstas presêntes Cártas de fretamênto contratádas, ao dia e ânno primêiro acíma declarádo.

T. B.

Selládo e entregue
diante de
A. B. C. D.

to be paid by these Presents. In Witness whereof, the Parties aforesaid to these present Charter-Parties indented, have interchangeably put their Hands and Seals the Day and Year first above written.

T. B.

Sealed and delivered in
the Presence of
A. B. C. D.

Apólice de Segúro.

Em o Nôme de Deos, Amen,
Tânto no seu próprio nôme, cômo, por, ou em o nôme, ou nômes de tôdos e cada pessôa ou pessôas a quem o mêsmo pertencêr, pôssa ou poderá pertencêr, em párte ou em tódo, faz o Seguro, causa asì mêsmo e a êlles, e a cada húm délles, de assegurárse, perdidos ou nâõ perdidos sôbre qualquér género de fazêndas e Mercadorías quaesquér, carregádas óu para se carregárem abórdo do bôm Navío por nôme do porte de toneládas, de que hé Méstre debâixo de Dêos P. M. ou quêm quér que fôr por Méstre do ditto Navío, ou o Méstre, dêlle se nomêe ou nomeará; principiándo a aventúra sôbre as dittas fazêndas e Mercadorías de, e

A Policy of Assurance.

In the Name of God, *Amen*, as well in his own Name, as for and in the Name and Names of all and every other Person and Persons to whom the same doth, may or shall appertain, in Part, or in all, does make Assurance, and causes himself and them, and every of them, to be insured, lost, or not lost upon any kind of Goods and Merchandize whatsoever, laden or to be laden aboard the good Ship called the Burthen Tons, or thereabouts; whereof P. M. is Master, under God, for this present Voyage or whosoever else shall go for Master in the said Ship, or by whatsoever Name or Names the said Ship, or the Master thereof, is or shall be named or called;

logo despôis de carregállas abórdo do ditto Navío e assím se continuará e ficará até que o ditto Navío côm as dittas fazêndas e Mercadorías quáesquér chegar e as mêsmas ahí descarregádas em Salvamênto; e será lícito parao ditto navío, nesta viágem, de parár e detérse em quáesquér pórtos, ou lugáres sêm prejuízo a êste Segúro. As dittas fazêndas e Mercadorías por concêrto, saõ, e seráõ avalíadas em Sêm que se dé ôutra conta déll asmêsmas, tocânte as Aventúras e ríscos com que nós os Seguradôres nos contentamos e que tomâmos sôbre nós nésta viágem; Ellas sáõ dos Máres, das náos de guérra, de fôgo, inimígos, Corsarios, Ladrões, Roubadôres, Alijamêntos ou fazêndas perdídas e deitádas no már, lettras de Marca, e contra Marca, sobresáltos, tomadías no Már, citações, tolhimêntos e detênças de tôdos os Rêys, Príncipes e póvos de naçáõ, condiçáõ ou qualidáde qualquér, barratría e contrástes enganósos do méstre e dos Marinhéiros, e de tôdos os ôutros perígos; pérdas e desástres que ja viéraõ ou que viráõ, ou prejuízo, desaproveitamênto ou dâno das dittas fazêndas e mercadorías, ou de alguã párte déllas. E se acáso succedêr algúma pêrda ou desventúra, será lícito aos Asseguradôres, Feitóres, Sér-

beginning the Adventure upon the said Goods and Merchandise from and immediately following the Lading thereof aboard the said Ship . and so shall continue and endure until the said Ship, with the said Goods and Merchandise whatsoever shall be arrived and the same there safely landed; and it shall be lawful for the said Ship in this Voyage to stop and stay at any Port or Places without prejudice to this Assurance. The said Goods and Merchandise by Agreement, are and shall be valued at without further Account to be given for the same, touching the Adventures and Perils which we the Assurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this Voyage; they are of the Seas, Men of War, Fire, Enemies, Pirates, Rovers, Thieves, Jetsons, Letters of Marque and Counter-marque, Surprisals, Takings of Sea, Arrests, Restraints, and Detainments of all Kings, Princes, and People of what Nation, Conditions, or Quality soever, Baratry of the Master and Mariners, and of all other Perils, Losses and Misfortunes, that have or shall come to the Hurt, Detriment, or Damage of the said Goods and Merchandise, or any part thereof; and in Case of any Loss or Misfortune, it shall be lawful to the assured Fac-

vos e Constituíntes de mandár fazér diligências e trabalhár por, em, e ácêrca da deféza, Salvamênto, e recobramênto das dittas fazéndas e mercadorías, ou de algúma párte déllas sêm prejuízo déste Segúro, aos gástos do que nós os asseguradôres contribuirêmos cada hum confórme a Sua quantía nélle assegurádas; e nós os Asseguradôres estâmos de acôrdo e concêrto que ésta escritúra e segúro terá tânta fôrça e valôr cômo a máis authéntica Apolice ou Escritúra de Segúro dântes féita em qualquér pârte de

E assim nós os Asseguradôres sômos contêntes e por ésta prometêmos e nos obrigâmos cada húm por súa própria párte, os nóssos Herdeiros, Testamentêiros, Administradôres e Constituíntes pêllo verdadéiro comprimênto das côusas acima declarádas, confessândo que estâmos págos e satisféitos do que se nos déve ácônta déste Segúro.

Em testemúnha do que nós os Seguradôres, assinâmos ao pé déste, com as quantías asségurádas, &c.

Eu A. B. sôu contênte com este Segúro por cêm livras Esterl. L. em de £. 100.

tors, Servants, and Assigns, to sue, labour, and travel, for, in, and about the Defence, Safeguard, and Recovery of the said Goods and Merchandise or any part thereof, without Prejudice to this Assurance, to the Charges whereof, we the Assurers will contribute each one according to the Rate and Quantity of his Sum herein assured: And it is agreed by us the Insurers, that this Writing and Assurance shall be of as much Force and Effect, as the surest Policy or Writing of Assurance heretofore made in or elsewhere in and so we the Assurers are contented, and do hereby promise and bind ourselves, each one for his own Part, our Heirs, Executors, and Assigns, to the Assured, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, for the true Performance of the Premises, confessing ourselves paid the Consideration due unto us for this Assurance, by

In Witness whereof, we the Assurers have subscribed our Names and Sums assured in

I *A. B.* am contented with this Assurance for One hundred Pounds. Witness my Hand the 15th of March, 1811. } £. 100

Conhecimento.

DIGO eu T. B. de

A Bill of Lading.

SHIPPED, by the Grace

Méstre ou Capitáõ que sôu do Navío que Déos sálve por Nôme que ao presênte está surto e ancorádo no pôrto de para com o favôr de Déos seguir a sua viágem ao pôrto de aônde hé minha dirêita descárga, que hé verdáde, que recebí, e tênho carregádo dêntro do ditto Navío debáixo de cuberta enxúta e bêm acondicionáda de Marcado comamarca de fóra, o qual me obrígo o prométo, levándome Déos a bôm salvamênto e ditto Navío ao ditto Pôrto, de entregár em nôme do sobreditto a T. M. auzênte a quêm sêus poderes tivér pagândome de fréte para assim comprír e guardár, obrígo minha pessôa, e bêms e ditto Navío; em certésa do qual dei tres conhecimêntos de hum theôr, assinádos por mim ou por meu Escriváõ; hum comprído os ôutros naõ válhaõ; feito em 14 de Março de 1811 Annos.

Ignóro o conteúdo.

of God, in good Order, and well-conditioned, by in and upon the good Ship called the whereof is Master under God, for this present Voyage and now riding at Anchor in and, by God's Grace, bound for to say being marked and numbered as in the Margin, and are to be delivered in like good Order, and well-conditioned, at the aforesaid Port of the Danger of the Seas only excepted, unto Mr. or his Assigns, he or they paying for the said Goods with Primage and Average, as is accustomed. In Witness whereof, the Master and Purser of the said Ship has affirmed to three Bills of Lading, all of this Tenor and Date; the one of which three Bills being accomplished, the other two to stand void. And so God send the good Ship to her desired Port in Safety. Amen. Dated in the 14th of March 1811.

Inside and Contents unknown.

Instrumento ou Escritura de Compromisso.

A TÔDOS quântos éste presênte Instrumênto ou Escritúra de Compromísso vírem, de nós Acredôres de

A Letter of Licence.

TO all People, to whom this present Writing shall come, We the Creditors of G. M. of

G. M. Negociante de Saúde; Cômo o ditto G. M. ao presênte fica devéndo e em dereito déve a nós os Acredôres dêlle ditto G. M. várias e divérsas sômmas de Dinhêiro, &c. As quáes em rasaõ de muitas dívidas e algúmas déllas mui grândes, que tambêm em direito se lhe dévem a êlle, naõ se pódem arrecadár sem algúma dilaçáõ de têmpo, e por sêrem algúmas déllas irrecuperáveis sem demânda, elle está por óra muito desabilitádo de fazér pagamênto a nós os seus Acredôres da nóssa intêira e jústa dívida confórme a sua vontáde e desêjo; a respeito de que, elle nos péde com tôdo o encarecimento que nós os dittos Acredôres, e cada hum de nós fôssemos servídos de dár e concedér a êlle o Ditto G. M. aos seus Testamentêiros, Administradôres, ou Constituíntes, tânta larguêsa ou dilaçáõ de têmpo pêllo pagamênto e satisfaçáõ de nóssas dívidas particuláres, que lhe parecêr jústo, e rasáõ pêllo alcânce e cobrânça das dittas dívidas: Asabêr, que nós e câda hum de nós ficássemos contêntes a tomár e receber de nossas dívidas intêiras em para se repartírem em pártes, pâra se pagárem em pagamêntos divérsos na manêira e fórma Seguínte: Asabêr, o primeiro pagamênto délla há de ser e o resto pagár-

Merchant, send greeting. Whereas the said G. M. at this present Time, does stand indebted, and does justly owe unto us the said Creditors of him the said G. M. divers and sundry Sums of Money, &c. which, by reason of many Debts, and some of them very great, that are likewise justly owing unto him, and cannot be had or recovered without some Respite of Time, and some of them not without Suit, he is very much disabled at present to make Payment unto us the said Creditors, our whole and just Debt, as he seems willing and desirous; in consideration whereof, he instantly desires us, That we the said Creditors, and every one of us, would be pleased to give and grant unto the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, such Liberty or Respite of Time, for the Payment and Satisfaction of our several Debts, as he thinks reasonable for the obtaining, getting, and recovering of the said Debts: viz. That we and every one of us would be content to take, and accept of our whole Debts in to be divided in Parts, to be paid at several Payments, in Manner and Form following: viz. The first Payment thereof to be and the Residue to be paid at next in full Payment and Satisfac-

se-há em proximo pélla intéira pága e Satisfaçáõ das dittas dívidas especeficádas ; E péllo máis plenário comprimênto dos vários pagaméntos sobre-díttos em tál manêira e fórma cômo acíma se limíta e de-clára ; ao verdadêiro inténto déstas presêntes elle o ditto G. M. ao ou ântes do será obrigádo a nós os díttos acrédôres na mésma confor-midáde, por húma obrigaçáõ que se fará na melhor fórma de derêito com tôdos e cada hum dos pagamêntos, na ma-nêira acima limitáda, em hum cérto lugár ou lugáres con-veniêntes de nós os dittos Acredôres nomeádos, e a pêna de cada húma das obrigacões há de ser dobráda da Somma intéira, inclusa nella mêsma, para sér a nós entrégue e a cáda hum de nós, os nossos Testamentéiros, ou Consti-tuíntes, ao ou ântes do próximo Seguínte da data désta ; por esta cáusa Sáiba-se ; que nós os díttos Acre-dôres aqui a baixo assinádos, e cada húm de nós para si em particulár, e por sêus Testa-mentéiros, Administradôres e Constituíntes ao respêito do emcíma especificádo e decla-rádo, por éstes presêntes, de vontáde própria, consentí-mos, contratâmos, prometé-mos e concordâmos, ao e com o ditto G. M. ou sêus Testa-mentéiros, Administradôres e Constituíntes por éstes pre-séntes que nós os díttos Acre-

tion of the said several Debts: And for the more full Performance of the said several Payments aforesaid, in such Manner and Form as is above limited and declared, according to the true meaning of these Presents, he the said G. M. shall and will, at, or before the become bound unto us the said Creditors respectively, by one Obligation in due Form of Law to be made, including all and every one of the Payments in such Sort as is above limited at some convenient Place or Places by each of us the said Creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the Penalty of every Obligation to be doubled the whole Sum included in the Condition of the same to be delivered unto us, and every one of us, our Executors or Assigns, at or before the next ensuing the Date hereof: Know ye therefore, that we the said Creditors, whose Names are here under-written, and every one of us for his own Part, and for his Executors, Administrators and Assigns, for the Consideration above specified and expressed, do by these Presents willingly consent, covenant, promise and agree to and with the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, to accept of the said G. M. his Executors and Assigns, all and every of the said Debts and

dóres, e cada hum de nós, os, nóssos Testamentêiros, Administradôres e Constituíntes, aceitarêmos do ditto G. M. dos sêus Testamentêiros, Administradôres e Constituíntes, todas e cada huma de táes dívidas e quantias de dinhêiro do ditto G. M. a nós e cada hum de nós, devídas e vencídas em virtude de táes obrigaçôens, Segurânça ou Segurânças sobredíttas, para se pagárem em tál modo e manêira, e aos táes dias e têmpos que acima se limítaõ e requérem. E alêm disso, que nós os dittos Acredôres e cada hum de nós, ou nóssos e cada húm de nóssos Testamentêiros Administradôres e Constituíntes, em conformidáde á entrega da ditta Obrigaçáõ a nós e a cada húm de nóssos Testamentêiros, Administradôres, e Constituíntes ao cústo do ditto G. M. os seus Testamentêiros, Administradôres, e Constituíntes, Sellarêmos, assinarêmos, e na melhór fórma e direito entregarêmos ao ditto G. M. a nóssa gerál e sufficiênte descárga, para sêr rendída por êlle o ditto G. M. ou sêus Testamentêiros, Administradôres, e Constituíntes, á data e á limitaçáõ, antes do dia e data desta abrigaçaõ nóva; em testemúnha do que têmos assinádo e selládo esta.

Datáda aos 15 de Maio de 1813.

Sums of Money by the said G. M. unto us, and every one of us, owing, and paying upon such Obligations, Assurance and Assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such Manner and Sort, and at such Days and Times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the said Creditors, and every of us, our, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns respectively, upon the Delivery of the said Obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, shall and will, at the Charge of the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, seal, subscribe, and, in due form of Law, deliver to the said G. M. our sufficient general release, for him, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, to bear Date and Limitation, before the Day of the Date of this new Obligation to be made for the Debt. In Witness whereof, we have hereunto set our Hands and Seals.

Dated the 15th of May 1813, &c.

Lêtra de Càmbio.

Londres, por 300 Milreis.
5 de Junho, 1811.

A' VISTA desta minha priméira Lêtra de Cambio, pagará Vm. ao Senhor T. M. ou Ordem a somma de trezêntos Milreis em dinhéiro corrênte de Portugál, Valôr recebido do Senhor T. D. como por aviso de
Seu Venerador e Creádo.

Ao Senhor T. M. Negociante em Lisboa.
T. M.

Bills of Exchange.

London, for 300 Milreas.
5th of June, 1811.

AT Sight of this my first Bill of Exchange, please to pay to Mr. T. M. or Order, the Sum of Three Hundred Milreas in current Money of Portugal, Value received of Mr. T. D. placing it to Account, as per Advice, from, Sir,
Yours, H. S.

To Mr. T. M. Merchant in Lisbon. T. M.

Lisboa, 250*l.* Esterl.
7 de Junho 1811.

A QUARÊNTA Dias Vista désta minha Segunda Lêtra de Cambio, (a primeira naõ sendo págа) pagará Vm. ao Senhor F. G. & Companhia, ou Ordem a Somma de dozêntas e Cinquenta livras Esterlinas em moéda corrente de Inglaterra, valôr recebido do Senhor J. D. como por aviso de
Seu Venerador e Creádo.
H. S.

Ao Senhor T. B. Negociante em Londres.

Lisbon, for 250*l.* Sterling.
7th of June, 1811.

AT Forty days Sight, of this my second Bill of Exchange, my first and third not being paid, please to pay to Mr. F. G. and Company, or Order, the Sum of two Hundred and fifty Pounds Sterling, in current Money of England, Value received of Mr. J. D. and place it to account, as per Advice, from Sir, Yours, H. S.

To Mr. T. B. Merchant in London. F. P.

Protesto de huma Letra de Cambio.

SAIBAM todos a quêm ésta presênte escritúra tocár que aos do méz de, do ânno de a requeriménto de P. C. Negociante de eu M. N. Tabaliaõ de nótas jurádo e admitído pélla autoridade del Rei, &c. fúi á cása da morâda do Senhor T. B. sôbre quêm a Letra de Cambio acimà referida hé sacáda, e mostréi a originál ao ditto T. B requerêndo a sua aceitaçaõ déllà: o qual me respondêo que naõ aceitaría a ditta Lêtra por humas rasôens que escreveria ao Senhor T. P. sacadôr; pélla qual rasaõ eu o ditto Tabaliaõ protestei, por este presente protésto, tânto côntra o ditto F. P. o sacadôr cômo também côntra o ditto T. B. sôbre quem hé sacáda, demáis côntra todas as outras pessôas, Endossadôres, ou outras nélla interessádas, por tôdos os Câmbios, Recâmbios, dânos e interêsses quáesquér: Em presênça de H. J. S. T. chamados por Testemúnhas a êste presênte ácto, fêito no meu Escritório em o dia e ânno acima declarado.

M. N. Notario Publico.

A Protest of a Bill of Exchange.

KNOW all Persons whom this present Writing may concern, that the of in the Year at the Request of Mr. P. C. of Merchant, I, M. N. Public Notary, sworn and admitted by authority of his most sacred Majesty, did go to the Dwelling-house or Habitation of Mr. T. B. upon whom the above named Bill of Exchange is drawn, and shewed the Original unto the said Mr. T. B. demanding his Acceptance of the same, who answered me he should not accept the same Bill, for some Reasons he should write Mr. F. P. the Drawer, Wherefore I the said Notary did protest, and by these Presents protest, as well against the said F. P. the Drawer, as likewise against the said T. B. upon whom it is drawn; as also against all other Persons, Indorsers, or others therein concerned, for all Changes, Rechanges, Damages and Interest whatsoever, in Presence of H. J. and S. T. called for Witnesses to this present Act, done in my Office in the Day and Year above mentioned.

M. N. Notary Public.

Formas de Recibos.

Forms of Receipts.

Dinheíro recebido por inteiro.

Recebi, do Senhor Thomas Crew, Seis Livras Sete Shilins Seis pennys resto de todas as contas, com o ditto. 1° de Janeiro.

Dinheiro recebido por Conta de meu Amo.

Recebi do Sr. Jonas Lee, quatro Livras e Cinco Shilins por Conta de meu amo Moises Trust.

W. S.

22 de Fevereiro 1811.

Dinheiro recebido á côuta.

Recebi a 30 *de Março,* 1811, *do Sr. Jacinto Cook, Cinco Livras Cinco Shilins, á côuta de doze Livras e dez Shilins, por Conta de meu pai Antonio Truelove,*

30 *de Março* 1811.

Dinheiro recebido á côuta de Contas que naõ estaõ ajustádas.

Recebi, da Senhora Martha Rich, por maos de Pedro Cornet, onze Livras á Conta,

24 *de Abril* 1811.

Money received in Full.

Received 1st January 1811, of Mr. Thomas Crew, Six Pounds Seven Shillings and Sixpence, in full of all Demands per

For another's Use.

Received 22d February, 1811, of Mr. Jonas Lee, Four Pounds Five Shillings, for the Use of my Master Moses Trust, per

W. S.

Money received in Part.

Received 30th of March, 1811, of Mr. James Cook, Five Pounds Ten Shillings, in Part of Twelve Pounds Ten Shillings, for my Father Anthony Truelove, per

Money received on Accounts unsettled.

Received 24th April 1811, of Mrs. Martha Rich, by the Hands of Peter Cornet, Eleven Pounds on Account,

Quando hum Rol ou Conta se paga por inteiro.

Recebi, a 15 de Mayo, 1811, o empórte d'esta Conta,

When a Bill is paid in Full.

RECEIVED 15th May, 1811, the full Contents hereof,

Quando se paga dinheiro a Conta de hum ról.

Recebi, Sete livras á conta deste Rol

6 de Junho de 1811.

When a Bill is paid in Part.

RECEIVED 26th June, 1811, Seven Pounds in Part hereof,

Notas ou Obrigaçoens que faz hum Homem quando toma dinheiro imprestado.

Londres, 4 de Junho, 1811.

Eu abaixo firmado promêto, pagar ao Sr. E D. Banqueiro do Thesouro de sua Majestade, do Excise, ou á sua órdem, quarênta dias despôis da dáta désta obrigaçaõ quatro cêntas e trinta livras por valôr recebido

Christovaõ Wade.

£.430

Promissory Notes for a Man's Self.

London, June 4th, 1811.

I PROMISE to pay to Mr. Edward Draper, Cashier of his Majesty's Revenue of Excise, or Order, forty Days after Date, Four Hundred and Thirty Pounds, Value received

Christopher Wade.

£.430

Eu abaixo firmado prometo pagar ao Sr. Paulo Barker ou á sua órdem em sendo requerido, trezentas, e noventa, e quatro livras dous Shilins e Seis pennys por valôr recebido hoje 17 de Julho, 1811.

Philip Venham.

£. 394 2 6

I PROMISE to pay to Paul Barker, Esq. or Order, on demand, Three hundred and ninety-four Pounds, Two Shillings, and Six-pence, Value received this 17th of July, 1811.

Philip Venham.

£. 394 2 6

EU abaixo firmado prométo pagar ao Sr. J. T. ou á sua órdem, quarénta e nóve livras, e tres Shilins 6 mezes despôis da dáta desta obrigaçaõ, por valor recebido em verdáde do que asignei esta 24 de Agosto 1811.

£.49 3 0

I Promise to pay to Mr. J. T. or Order, Forty nine Pounds Three Shillings, six Months after Date, Value received. Witness my Hand this 24th of August, 1811.

William Jones.

£.49 3 0

N. B. Obsérvese que em nótas ou obrigaçõens sémpre se declára a sôma recebida sem a qual naõ saõ de nenhuma força nem tem Authoridade.

N. B. Observe in Promissory Notes that the words "Value received" are mentioned, or they are of no Force.

A NEW

PORTUGUESE GRAMMAR.

PART IV.

CONTAINING

SEVERAL USEFUL AND ENTERTAINING PASSAGES,

collected from the best

PORTUGUESE WRITERS.

ENTRE os bons ditos de Souzéni, poéta Persiâno, se cônta, que bebêndo com outro poéta, seu amígo, certo licor, se queixáva, de que éra muito quente & dizêndolhe, amígo, pobre de ti que daqui a poucos días te faráõ bebêr no inférno agoas sulfúreas, & ardêntes, que te abrazaráõ as entrânhas; naõ impórta, replicôu Souzéni; bastará que me lêmbre algum dos teus versos, que ellas se faráõ mais frias, que neve.

Catharina Parthenay, sobrínha da célebre Anna Parthenay, dêu esta bella respósta a Henríque IV. "Saíba vossa mag[de] que êu sôu muito pobre para ser "sua consórte; e que no mesmo tempo descêndo de "huma família muíto illústre, para ser sua dama."

Huma Princêza Cathólica, e de rara virtúde vêndo reduzído o Marechal de Saxonia ás agoniás da mórte, disse, que éra para sentír o naõ se podêr rezár hum *De profundis* pella alma de hum que tínha feíto cantár tantos *Te Deum.*

A Dom Christóvaõ de Moura, Marquêz de Castéllo Rodrigo, e Vice Rey de Portugál por Dom Philipe Tercéiro, índo por huma sala do Páço de Lisbôa, hum soldádo honrádo, que tínha bem servído na India, lhe dáva hum memoriál, e pedía, que se lembrásse dos seus papéis, porque havía largo têmpo, que andáva pretendêndo. Respondêo-lhe o Marquêz, que havía muíta Gente para despachár, e naõ se podiáõ despachár todos com brevidáde; o soldádo adiantândo o passo se atravessôu diânte sem descomposiçáõ, e fazêndo parár o Vice Rey lhe dísse com grande confiânça; "senhôr Dom Christóvaõ despáche Vs. os hómens, e deixe a Gente." O Marquêz aceitôu o memoriál, e o despachôu no mesmo dia.

Mandândo hum Fidálgo em Lisbôa abrír em huma rua os Alicérces para se fazêrem humas cásas, sem licênça da câmera, passândo por alli o procuradôr da cidáde, pôz pêna aos officiáes, que náõ trabalhássem na obra sem licênça dos Vereadôres; e os officiáes dizêndo-o ao Fidálgo mandôu-lhes elle que naõ deixássem de trabalhár, e que naõ fizéssem caso do que dizía aquelle villáõ ruim; tornândo o procuradôr da cidáde por allí e achândo os officiáes trabalhândo, mandôu que déssem com elles no tronco; e naõ faltândo quem lhe contásse o que o Fidálgo disséra, têve-o em ôlho; e no tempo que elle hía atravessândo pello Rocío para sua casa, sahíolhe ao camínho a cavállo, e com huma lança que leváva, dândo na sua sômbra, lhe disse: porque o

que dissèstes, fôi em minha ausência, dôu em vóssa sombra; se mo tivésseis dito no rosto, déra na vossa pessôa.

Abou Hanífah, o mais célebre doutôr dos Musulmanes, têndo recebído huma bofetáda, dísse ao que o tínha insultádo: eû podería vingárme, pagândovos na mesma moéda; mas naõ o quéro fazêr. Podería accusárvos ao calife: mas naõ quero ser accusadôr. Podería nas minhas oraçôens queixárme a Dêos désta affrônta; mas nem isso quéro fazêr. Por fim podería pedír a Dêos, que se quer no día do juizo vos castigásse; porêm o mesmo senhor me livre de semelhânte pensamênto; mas ântes, se succedêsse que neste instânte chegásse aquelle formidável día; e se a minha intercessaõ tivésse algúma efficácia para com Dêos, naõ quizéra por companhéiro senaõ a vós para entrár no Paraíso. Que admirável exêmplo para os Christaõs aprendêrem a perdoár as injúrias!

Da Peregrinaçaõ.

Passádas que se daõ peregrinândo, saõ degráos para a cása do desengâno. Das suas fôntes sáhem os rios muito pequênos, e créscem corrêndo, e lévaõ mares ao mar. Hómens, que da sua terra naõ sâhem, saõ navíos, que acábaõ no estalêiro. A sabedoría cômo vinda do céo, anda neste globo terréstre perigrína; naõ he facil achála senaõ peregrinândo; errândo por este mundo, se apprênde a naõ commettêr erros. Vapôres, que na terra éram lôdo, apartádos della se fazam estrêllas. Aos hómens que querem luzír, déve a pátria servír, como aos planêtas o horizônte, de berço, para ensáyo do seu luzimênto, longe do ponto ortívo, e remontádos a mais alta regiaõ, apúraõ as influências, e duplícaõ as luzes. Que nome teriaõ

hoje no mundo Sócrates, Pithágoras, e Plataõ, e outros sábios da antiguidáde, se a modo de cêpos, ou trôncos, que aônde nascêraõ fázem raiz e no seu primêiro cháõ apodrécem, náõ buscáraõ fóra da Patria as notícias, que lhes faltávaõ. Náõ se ornára Hercules com os despójos dos Monstros, que domôu, se os naõ fôra buscár pelo mundo; á sua dilatáda viágem dévem os Argonautas a conquísta do vello de ouro; Se naõ corrêra Ulysses remótos climas, fôra a Aldêa de Ithaca de toda a sua gloria o theátro. Hómens perpétuamênte casêiros, saõ gallos, que só sábem do seu poléiro. Sábios peregrínos, imítaõ no seu curso as fôntes, que passândo por vêas de prata, ouro, esmeráldas, e saffíras, tómaõ, e comsigo lévaõ a flor de suas preciósas qualidádes. Zombe embóra Plutarco dos que lôuvaõ a peregrinaçáõ, e diga, que se parecem com os que júlgaõ as estrêllas errântes mais nobres, e felíces, que as fixas. Naõ há escóla mais util para a vida, que as muítas vidas ou modos de vivêr, que na variedáde das Naçóens se obsérva. Vem-se muítas cousas nunca vistas; aprêndem-se muitas, que se naõ sabiaõ, faz-se o hómem capaz de toda a casta de negócios, e folga de vêr este mundo, antes de sahír delle. Até para os príncipes, que das suas côrtes fázem na terra o seu paraíso, bom he que peregrínem, para conhecêrem o mundo, que elles govérnaõ. Os commodos, as delícias, os obséquios dos subditos, pódem dar a conhecêr a hum hómem, que nascêo soberâno, mas com este conhecimênto, naõ o fazem digno da soberanía: se naõ sahíra Alexandre da sua Macedonia, naõ passára dos limítes de régulo e naõ chegára a avassallár o mundo.

Do Tempo futúro.

Trate o hómem do presênte, e naõ quéira penetrár no futúro; quem de taõ longe pôem a mira, naõ póde dar no alvo. Muítas vezes bom hé igno-

rár o que ha de succedêr; porque se fôr bem, a dilaçãõ hé torménto; e se for máo, o trabálho he sem provéito. Para futúros, naõ ha segurânça. Ao Embaixadôr, que na guerra movída por Luix XI. Rey de Frânça, a Carlos Duque de Borgônha, procuráva attrahír ao Emperadôr Frederíco, com proméssa de se repartírem com elle os despójos, e os estádos, respondêo o dito Emperadôr com este apólogo: Tres caçadôres com a esperânça de apanhárem hum urso, se compromettêraõ na repartiçãõ delle. Chegádos á boca da cavérna, sahío a féra com taõ grande impeto, que hum dos caçadôres botôu a fugír, outro subío a huma árvore, e o outro se estendêo no chaõ fingíndo-se mòrto; chegôuse o urso a elle, poz-lhe o focínho no nariz, e nos ouvidos, e naõ lhe conhecêndo fôlego, nem sínal de vida, o deixôu por morto. O que estáva na árvore, dísse ao companhêiro; hómem, que te dísse o urso, quando te fallôu á puridáde, com o focínho nos ouvídos? Disseme que éra mal féito, dispôr da pelle, e carne do urso, antes de o vêrem morto. Com isto o Emperadôr dêu a entendêr ao Embaixadôr, que éra precíso apanhár priméiro ao Duque de Borgônha, que depôis se trataría da repartiçãõ dos seus estádos. Dos succéssos do tempo futúro, só Deos tem certêza.

Dos Ricos.

Em lugáres estereis, sem hervas, nem plantas produz a naturêza o ouro, para mostrár que os amadôres das riquêzas naõ tem fé, nem honra. Os ricos facinorósos, que ainda que celebrádos nas histórias, saõ o oppróbrio da sua posteridáde, poderíaõ ter bôa fâma, se lhes naõ facilitára este metal a execuçãõ de seus danádos intêntos. Em todas as idádes fôraõ as riquêzas antagonístas da virtúde; ellas inventáraõ os mais enórmes delítos; ellas ensináraõ os filhos a tirár a seus páis a vida; en-

sinárao os poderósos a opprimír os innocêntes, arruinár as famílias, saqueár os templos, & despír os altáres; ellas induzírao os amígos a que faltássem á fé, incitárao os vassállos a negár aos príncipes a obediência, a os libidinósos dérao meyos para violár a pudicícia das donzéllas, e estragár a honra dos marídos: finalmênte ellas ainda que bôas para a vida civíl, sao causa de tôdos os máles; e pôsto que os sábios sè soubérao aproveitár déllas, a cobiça, e o máo uso das mesmas, enchêrao o mundo tôdo de criminósos. Hómens ricos ordináriamênte se pérdem, por têrem muíto, e sabêrem pouco; desprézao o sabêr, porque lhes paréce, que para todo o género de vida, lhes basta o têr. A Aristippo perguntôu Dionysio, porque razáo os filósofos frequentávao as cazas dos ricos, e náo os ricos as dos filósofos. Respondêo Aristippo, que os filósofos conhécem o que lhes falta, e os ricos ignórao o de que necessítao. Senhôres ricos, e filósofos pobres, nao pódem fazêr cousas grândes, porque a estes lhes falta dinhêiro, e áquêlles espírito. Dizía Diógenes, que muitos ricos sao como as plantas, que náscem em desértos, e despenhadêiros, porque dos frutos, que ellas dao, nao cómem os homens, mas córvos, milháfres, e féras; também as riquêzas de muitos nao sao para sugêitos benemêritos, mas para chocarrêiros, espadachins, rufiões, e meretrízes.

Estado da Lusitania até ao tempo em que foi reduzida em Provincia Romana, Por A. C. do Amaral. Extrahido das Memorias da Academia de Lisboa.

Huma historia sincéra envergonha-se da gloria vaa, que se busca em antiguidades mentirozas: Desgosta-se desses sonhos agradaveis, pasto de huma esteril recreaçáo; e se saborêa só com a ver-

dade pura. Tal hé a sorte deste escrito, derigido a fazer prezentes aos Portugueses os verdadeiros costumes, e Leis de seus Maiores: rejeita tudo quanto a impostura, ou a credulidade moderna lhe conta dos Seculos, que a Providencia quiz esconder-lhe: e se contenta com as escassas memorias, que pode colhêr dos raros monumentos antigos que lhe restaõ. Naõ tenta entrar pelas espêssas trevas dos primeiros 36 Seculos do mundo, em que naõ acha quem o encaminhe. Pois que os Hebreos unicos guias Seguros, que introduzem em muitos outros paizes, nem hum só passo dáõ para este que habitamos; e apenas daõ motivo a conjecturar, que das Colonias sabidas do Oriente para povoár a terra, algumas se estendêráõ até a esta extremidade; mas nem donde, nem quando viessem o pode colhêr a historia.

Naõ acha depois dos Hebreos outros, de quem se fie, senáõ os Romanos: e ainda estes pouco lhe sabem dizêr de hum Paiz táõ apartado, em quanto a ambiçáõ de o senhorear os náõ avizinha a elle: mal conservaõ huma obscura tradiçáõ de que a estas partes vieraõ Celtas, Iberos, Persas, Lusos, e Gregos: de huns apenas ficára resto na derivaçáõ do nôme; de outros na herança de alguns costumes. A navegaçáõ com que alguns Póvos do fundo do Mediterráneo começaõ a enriquecer, as traz até estas ultimas Costas, e vai logo espalhar pello Mundo, a fama das ricas minas, e do fertil torráõ deste Paiz desconhecido ainda, antes que da qualidade de seus habitantes: náõ tarda com tudo a mostrar-se esta; continúa a vir em busca dos thesouros descobertos á ambiçáõ estrangeira; e vé erguer daqui, quaes féras acossadas nos seus covís, homens bravos para defender os bens que a Providencia lhes destinára. E esta hé a primeira Scena que se nos representa no Terreno Lusitano; hum Campo de Batálha, continuáda já com os Fenicios, já com os Carthaginezes; que depois de disputarem

por largo tempo com estes Barbaros a sorte das armas, os deixaõ ainda por domár aos Romanos quando lhes cedem a conquista de Mundo. Mas ao justo motivo da defeza propria succedem depois outros, que facilmente pôem as armas na mãõ a huns homens, a quem a falta do commercio, e de artes quasi naõ deixa outro meio de enriquecêr, que a pilhagem; nôme com que muitas das suas guerras saõ infamadas pelos Póvos mais polidos que elles. E o mesmo habito de peleijar lhes vai alimentando hum natural feróz, que já os naõ deixa accommodar com o socêgo da paz, e que os faz buscar inimigos dentro em caza, quando lhes faltaõ os de fóra.

Estes vicios, e virtudes de guerra, hé o que de principio nelles distinguem os Romanos, nãõ os vendo senãõ armados no campo; e de que naõ podem deixar de dar testemunho estes mesmos vaidósos desprezadores de tudo o que naõ hé Romano. Mas em fím á medida que se lhes chegaõ mais perto, e se envolvem com elles, lá vaõ divisando por entre alguns claros, que as armas deixaõ, a forma do seu governo interiôr.

Vêm que este Terreno, que designaõ pelo nome de Lusitania, hé habitado de Póvos differentes independentes huns dos outros, e governados cada hum por suas Leis, costumes particulares; leis ráras, e costumes singélos, ainda com a marca da Natureza naõ contrafeita.

Como a segurança propria hé quem só fórma estes córpos, naõ largaõ da liberdade que recebêraõ da natureza, mais que o puramente preciso para conservar essa mesma segurança. A guerra a que saõ dados he que os obriga a criar hum Superior, a que juraõ fidelidade; mas conseguida a paz, expira o governo do General, e a obediencia dos Soldados.

Se há que estabelecêr de novo para o bem commum da Sociedade, servem-se do meio usado das

puras Democracias, Assembléas geráes, em que cada pessoa tem o arbitrio de approvar, ou rejeitar o que se propôem : e ainda nesta acçáõ respira o ar militar, em que saõ criados ; hum batêr da espada no broquel he o signal de approvaçáõ ; hum susurro inquieto o de desapprovar.

A' simplicidade da Legislaçáõ segue a das penas ; saõ os réos do crime capital apedrejados, e para que o horror do crime se extenda alêm ainda do castigo, todo o que passa depois da execuçáõ, hé obrigado a lançar alguma pedra sobre o cadáver do justiçado.

Naõ desmente da parte Legislativa, a do Commercio interior ainda pouco sujeito a fraudes ; naõ os move a contratar a sêde insaciavel do ouro, que mal conhecem : as mutuas necessidades, a que só procuraõ soccorrêr, os ensina a trocar entre si as cousas precisas á vida. Estas lhes dictaõ tambem o que devem concedêr ao corpo ; comeres, e bebidas simples, quaes a Natureza as produsia : vestidos sem mais estudo que o do fim para que os usaõ ; câma sem regalo, nem despeza ; emfim a tudo o preciso para a conservaçaõ se accode com o menos apparato que póde ser.

A esta sobriedade bem propria de si para dar a saude, e vigôr do corpo, ajuntaõ o trabalho aturado ; os homens o da guerra quasi contínua, e nos intervallos della o de exercicios semelhantes á guerra ; as mulheres o da cultura dos campos, e de todo o trato domestico, que com discreta economia lhes-he cedido pelos homens occupados com as armas. E se faz memoria dos seus bailes, e cantares, naõ saõ tanto fructo do ocio, como do innocente prazêr da vida social.

Deste modo sobrio, e trabalhado de vida era consequencia a raridade de doenças : para alguma, que accaso haja, naõ hé venal a cura, nem o remedio, naõ se tendo alguem por desobrigado de con-

correr para hum officio de rigorosa humanidade: hé o enfermo exposto em publico; e os que tem sido feridos do mesmo mal ensinaõ os remedios com que conseguíraõ a saude.

Nos que habitávaõ as vizinhanças do Minho, como eraõ os Gronios, ou Gravios, os Amphilocios, e outros, se vem assaz retratados os costumes dos Gregos, de quem os Antigos querem que elles descendaõ: Jogos, e certames públicos, cazamentos, arte de augurar tudo hé de Gregos. Idólatras como seus Maiores, nada conservaõ da Religiáõ pura que a Razáõ lhes mostrára, mais que o reconhecimento de que há hum. Ente maior que elles, a que devem dar culto: porém estragado este natural sentimento pela corrupçáõ do coraçáõ, imaginaõ Divindades indignas, a que honraõ com hum culto igualmente indigno. Se querem dar-lhes graças pello feliz successo de huma batalha, as maõs direitas dos prizioneiros saõ o triste troféo que lhes levântaõ. Se antes de qualquer acçáõ procúraõ saber o seu bom ou máo exito, dentro ás entranhas de hum inimigo he que váõ buscar este fatal segredo: se querem fazer religioso hum juramento, hé preciso que às entranhas quentes de hum homem, e de hum cavallo lhes sirvaõ de banho, em que depois de mettidas as maõs, as pôem sobre o altar, junto ao qual se deve fazer esta ridicula ceremonia. Emfim he sempre sangue o que applaca huns Deoses, que estes Idolatras guerreiros formávaõ á sua semelhança.

Estes saõ os poucos vestigios, e quasi apagados, que se encontraõ dos costumes domesticos dos Lusitanos, que de ordinario só se viaõ no campo de batalha, detendo, ou fazendo retroceder os passos aos Conquistadores do mundo. Mal o poderá crêr quem mede a força de hum Estado pelo fausto de seus habitadores, pela magnificencia de suas obras, e por todo o explendôr que encanta os sentidos; quem

naõ avalia quanto póde hum Povo, em que todos os individuos saõ aptos para a defesa da Patria, em que há tantos Soldados como homens endurecidos todos no trabalho, e todos animados do amôr da liberdade.

Hum Povo, como este, foi o que sem arte, e sem disciplina, em tendo na frente hum homem que o soubesse mandar, escarneu por muitas vezes das tropas mais bem reguladas, e deu muitos dias de mágoa, e de deslustre aos soberbos Romanos. Viriato, Sertorio, e ainda outros de menos nôme foraõ instrumentos da gloria Lusitana, que sobrepujando á emulaçáõ ficou eternizada nos escritos de seus mesmos inimigos, e nos marmores que o tempo consumidôr naõ acabou de gastar.

Por mais de Seculo e meio andáraõ os Romanos na porfiada lida de subjugar este ultimo pedaço da Hespanha que já contaõ toda por huma porçáõ certa dos seus dominios: todos os annos lhe nomeaõ Governadôr: mas por mais que tentem mandar Pretor como para Provincia pacifica, a cada passo se vem obrigados a lhe mandar Consul armado; depois de terem separado o seu Governo do de quasi todo o resto da Hespanha. E se de quando em quando algum destes Generáes consegue a gloria de a pacificar, e sujeitar ás Leis Romanas, pouco tempo lhe dura verde o louro; na sua mesma cabeca lhe murcha, ou ao mais tarde na de seu successor: até que a longa experiencia os desengana, que hé preciso mudar de systema; e que só costumando primeiro os Lusitanos a se sujeitar como amigos, hé que os poderáõ insensivelmente ir passando a obedecer como Vassalos.

Sobre a Poesia Bucolica dos Poétas Portuguêzes Por Joaquim de Foyos. Extrahido das Memorias de Litteratura da Academia de Lisboa.

Assim como entre as duas especies de oraçáõ, por

que o homem tanto excede aos outros animaes, se cultivou primeiro o Verso, assim de todas as sortes de Poesias parece ter sido primeira a Bucolica. Ainda que o genero humano naõ nascéo da terra, e dos duros troncos das árvores, como imagináraõ muitos Poetas, e parece que chegáraõ a crêr alguns Filosofos; comtudo depois do diluvio, espalhados os homens por toda a face da terra, e perdidos pouco a pouco os conhecimentos que herdáraõ de seus maiores, e só conserváva õ na Sociedade, hé summamente provavel, que huma grande parte delles viesse successivamente a passar por estes tres generos de vida: Selvagem, Pastoral, Agricola. Os muitos Póvos, que ainda hoje habitaõ, e se achaõ na primeira, ou segunda destas vidas, confirmaõ a verdade desta conjectura. Mas o homem, vivendo huma vida silvestre nos bosques, separado de toda a Sociedade, e sustentando-se unicamente de caça, e dos fructos espontaneos da terra, nem se acha em circumstancias de adiantar os seus conhecimentos, nem tem tempo para cultivallos, occupado, e attento todo em buscar o necessario fysico, que náõ pode achar sem muita difficuldade, e trabalho. E ainda que aconteça, que por vezes lhe sobre algum espaço livre destas continuas fadigas, satisfeitos todos os seus naturáes desejos, e appetites, cançado o côrpo, e entorpecidos os membros, lhe entorpeceraõ juntamente as faculdades da alma, desacostumadas a discorrer, e a exercitar-se em outros objectos, e se entregará docemente a o somno. Naõ succederá assim aos Pastores, que tendo gado, que com seu leite lhes subministre o sustento, e com suas pelles o vestido, passaráõ huma boa parte da sua vida quietos, e descançados, sem mais outro cuidado que o de conduzir, e defender os seus rebanhos, e manadas. Obrigados de necessidades mutuas, e attrahidos do natural deleite, que causa a companhia dos que tem as mesmas precisões que nós, e nellas nos podem dar

algum auxilio, e recebello, se chegaráõ, quando o permittir a abundancia dos pastos, huns para os outros, communicaráõ entre si os seus pensamentos, e desejos, praticaráõ sobre as cousas que mais amaõ, e celebraráõ a sua felicidade.

Huma vez juntos os homens, e em ócio, contentes, e sem cançaço, impossivel hé, que naõ inventem diversos jogos, e toda a sorte de desenfado, e recreaçáõ para evitar o tedio de huma vida socegada, e satisfeita. Entre estes divertimentos naõ devia ter ultimo lugar a Poesia. As faculdades do homem tem huma natural disposiçáõ para ella; ou a Poesia consista na imitaçáõ, como querem Platáõ, e Aristoteles, ainda que clara e distinctamente nunca nos dissessem o que esta imitaçáõ seja; ou em huma oraçáõ levantada sobre as expressões vulgares, invertida com figuras, e harmoniosamente modulada, e compassada com o metro, e com o rhythmo. Em qualquer destas cousas que façamos consistir a Poesia, ou em todas ellas, para todas recebeo o homem da Natureza huma admiravel propensáõ.

As nossas sensações saõ naõ sómênte a origem, e fundamento de todas as nossas idéas, mas transformando-se de diversos modos, saõ todos os nossos juizos, e raciocinios, as nossas artes, as nossas Sciencios, e, em huma palavra, tudo quanto sabemos, e conhecemos. Mas a imitaçáõ hé huma sensaçaõ facil, e para que está disposta a conformaçáõ dos nossos orgaõs, e das nossas potencias, e por consequencia huma sensaçáõ, que nós achâmos por extremo grata, e deleitavel. Deste mesmo principio se segue outro, o qual aqui igualmente pertence, e vem a ser, que hé natural ao homem naõ só a oraçáõ, e a harmonia, mas tambem essa mesma oraçáõ variada com differentes tropos, e figuras; isto hé, com diversos modos de exprimir as cousas, e os pensamentos, já com a mesma harmonia; isto he, com o rhythmo, e já com o metro.

Conhecer-se-ha claramente a dependencia que estes dous principios tem entre si, se considerar-mos, que a imitaçáõ, (a qual eu já mostrei ser hum exercicio summamente gostoso ao homem, e hum modo facillimo assim de elle apprender, como de communicar aos outros os seus sentimentos) huma vez feita, e praticada com a oraçáõ, traz necessariamente comsigo todas aquellas variedades da mesma oraçáõ, que apontei acima. Daqui vem affirmarem agudamente, e com razáõ justissima os mais célebres Filosofos, que quizeraõ descer a discussões deste genero, que a Poesia era taõ antiga, como o genero humano. Certamente parece ter nascido logo com as primeiras Sociedades, que elles formáraõ, e quando elles conservavaõ ainda muito, assim da rusticidade, como da singeleza, e innocencia natural. Do que parece, ou claramente provado, ou deduzido com assaz probabilidade, que a Poesia nasceo, e se inventou entre Pastores. Mas em que genero de Poesia se exercitaríaõ estes primeiros homens? Naõ será difficil conhecello, se reflectirmos, qual seria a materia que, segundo as circumstancias em que se achavaõ, se lhes offerecia para os seus cantos. Aristoteles foi de parecêr, que dos primeiros inventores os que tinhaõ genio elevado imitavaõ accões illustres, e feitas por personagens grandes, e pelo contrario os que tinhaõ engenho mais rasteiro, cantavaõ as acções dos homens vis, em cujo vitupério compunhaõ obras ridiculas, assim como os outros se exercitávaõ em hymnos e encomios.

Porém este erudito, e intelligente Filósofo naõ fala naquelle lugar da primeira origem da Poesia rigorosamente, mas sim do módo com que ella, depois de inventada, se foi dividindo em diversas especies; porque suppõe tempos em que hé já grande a disigualdade dos homens; o que náõ tem lugar nas primeiras e simplicissimas sociedades de Pastores.

Hé pois summamente verosimil, que estes homens quizessem imitar aquellas cousas, que com mais frequencia se offereciáõ aos seus sentidos, que satisfaziaõ as suas necessidades, e que constituíaõ a bemaventurança da sua socegada vida, e felice estado, por que nellas empregavaõ toda a sua attençáõ, e cuidádo. Cantaríaõ pois os seus rebanhos, os montes e os valles, em que os apascentávaõ, os rios, e fontes, a que os levávaõ a bebêr; a alva, e serêna madrugada, que os chamava ao trabalho; a sésta, que os convidava ao descanço; e os rafeiros, que lhes guardavaõ o gado. Cantaríaõ, como era natural, as paixões e affectos da sua alma; porém naõ affectos violentos, e desesperados, que naõ eraõ próprios daquella vida, mas dôces e suaves, e que só lhes causávaõ aquella inquietaçáõ, e desasocego, a que se naõ pudesse seguir fim algum funesto.

Como estes argumentos saõ todos proprios da Poesia Bucolica, segue-se ligitimamente, que ella foi a primeira, que no Mundo inventáraõ os homens. Sendo pois a Poesia Pastoral a primeira origem de toda a erudiçáõ humana, e os primeiros esforços, que fizeraõ as faculdades do homem para se pulirem, e cultivarem, justamente me persuadi, que a Academia, instituida toda para utilidade pública, e que alem de outros mais gloriosos, e louvaveis empenhos, tomou a si o de dar a conhecer os principios, e progressos da nossa Litteratura, havia de levar em gosto que hum Socio seu tratasse dos merecimentos dos nossos Poetas Bucolicos. Deste trabalho, Senhores, posto que maior que minhas forças, me quiz encarregar, por ser dos mais leves e faceis, que taõ illustre corpo podia commetter a algum de seus membros.

Vós tratareis verdades sublimes, por extremo remotas, e escondidas á commum comprehensáõ dos homens; medireis o espaço immenso dos Céos; poreis Leis aos corpos mais vastos, mais distantes,

e até mais rebeldes do Universo; com vossas porfiadas investigações, e rara sagacidade obrigareis a Natureza a que vos descubra, e patentêe aquillo mesmo, em que ella punha maior estudo em occultar. Assim para felicidade dos outros homens augmentareis, e aperfeiçoareis os seus conhecimentos; mas sereis muito particularmente felices vós, e feliz a Patria, em cuja utilidade haveis de empregar os vossos talentos, e todos estes trabalhos, e fadigas: e ella vo lo saberá agradecer com o premio, que só desejaõ as almas grandes, do louvôr, e da gloria. Eu, gozando-me, e comprazendo-me do vosso alto merecimento, de que vós quizestes me coubesse tambem alguma parte, me contentarei com examinar a propriedade, e elegancia de huma palavra; a verdade, novidade, e belleza de hum pensamento; a innocencia, e sã singeleza de hum Pegureiro; e isto *propter aquæ rivum*, ou quando muito, *sub ramis arboris altæ.*

Mas tornando ao meu assumpto, de que me fizeraõ desviar os vossos justos louvôres, naõ saõ pouco relevantes, nem concorrem medianamente para a instrucçáõ, e cultura dos homens os trabalhos dos Poetas. Negallo seria naõ conhecer o modo, por que se dilataõ, e aperfeiçoaõ as nossas faculdades, e ignorar inteiramente a Historia dos varios progressos do entendimento humano. A restauraçáõ das letras, com que se desterrou a ignorancia, e barbaridade, a que nos tinhaõ reduzido as Nações do Norte, e as continuas irrupções dos Sarracenos, tem as suas sementes nos Trovadores Provençaes, e Lombardos, que fructificando felizmente chegáraõ a produzir os dous abalisados engenhos de Danté, e Petrarca. Cultivada por estes dous grandes homens, e por alguns mais seus contemporaneos a Lingua Toscana, preparou a Italia, e á sua imitaçáõ a toda a Europa para hum conhecimento profundo da Lingua Latina, e da Grega. Com taes

disposicões, e auxilios se instruiraõ as Nações Européas nas Artes, e Sciencias, e em toda a sorte de erudiçáõ daquelles sabios Póvos; e inflammadas cada vez mais no desejo de saber, tem levado muitas das Artes, e Sciencias dos antigos a hum ponto incrivel de perfeiçáõ, &c.

Analyse e combinações filosoficas sobre a elocuçaõ e estylo de Sá de Miranda, Ferreira, Bernardes, Caminha e Camões. Pr. Francisco Dias.

Quando entrei nesta composicaõ, julguei que devia tomar hum ponto fixo, donde viesse deduzindo a sua analyse, e que o Sá de Miranda devia indispensavelmente formar a época, donde, segundo a ordem do tempo, havia de dimanar todo o seu progresso, como de hum escritor, que lançou os fundamentos da Poesia Portugueza. Mas antes que entrasse nesta diligencia, vi que me era de precisa necessidade fazer huma descripçaõ exacta do estado, em que se achava a Lingua, quando o Poeta Miranda appareceo e sondar as qualidades principaes da composiçaõ e estylo daquelle Padre da Poesia Portugueza, donde passou para Farreira, para Bernardes, para Caminha, e ultimamente para Camões, o maior Poeta da Naçaõ, e o que mais enriqueceo, e apurou o nosso Idioma; discorrendo por aquelles pontos, que mais me pareceraõ dignos de comparaçaõ no género Sublime, como mais nobre, e como aquelle que mais esforço pede da fantasía humana; fazendo juizo de cada hum dos Poetas da Analyse, e finalmente indicando as origens donde nascêraõ as expressões, e fórmulas combinadas; no que julgo ter satisfeito ao Assumpto, que hé certamente mais difficultoso do que parece.

Na execuçaõ deste taõ trabalhoso argumento me conduzi, segundo as luzes, que pude adquirir na

liçaõ de Aristoteles, Cicero, Longino, Quintiliano, e muito mais na de Locke, Condillac, Du Marsais, e em especial na do sobre todos sabio Commentario, que o grande Voltaire fêz ás Obras de Pedro Corneille, onde se vêm as regras do gosto na sua maior elevaçaõ.

Todas estas materias saõ novas em Portugal, e por consequencia naõ tive a quem seguir: e apezar dos defeitos, posso dizer,

. . . . que aqui vereis presente
Cousas, que juntas se áchaõ raramente. Camões Lus.

Introducçaõ.

Hé o talento da palavra a mais nobre faculdade do ente racional, como instrumento, com que naõ só expõe as suas idéas, mas até pinta os mais occultos sentimentos do espirito com rasgos taõ vivos, e sublimes, que os faz passar aos corações mais izentos de interesse. Aquella Filosofia inata ao coraçaõ do homem, que preside a todas as acções, que mais o elévaõ, foi quem formou os sináes representativos das suas idéas simplices, e compostas; e quem, á força de infinitas combinações, lhe fez conceber o grande pensamento do transumpto mental consignado nas palavras por huma successaõ de idéas naõ interrompidas, cujo nexo constitue a pintura eterna naõ só do fysico, mas, o que hé mais prodigiôso, do moral humano.

Aquella mesma filosofia, que dirigindo e elevando o espirito humano desde as idéas simplices até ás implexas, lhe dêo as primeiras noções da expressaõ simples e primitiva, como mais adaptada ás necessidades do homem; á proporçaõ que lhe foi ampliando a esféra dos seus conhecimentos, lhe foi ministrando expressaõ compléxa, isto hé, figurada com a qual pinta aos olhos, e dá corpo, e vida ás mais sublimes abstracções, que pode concebêr o entendimento humano.

Deste immenso aggregado de idéas simpleces, e compostas, como consequencia natural, procedeo a vivacidade da expressaõ, e a riqueza das Linguas, que se elevárao ao mais distincto gráo de perfeiçaõ, segundo o numero de acontecimentos, e revoluções notaveis; e muito mais segundo o trato frequente com as nações estranhas, e communicaçaõ social dos póvos entre si; por isso mesmo que das grandes crizes procede a effervescencia das paixões, que pondo em movimento, e actividade a massa das idéas, gera nóvos pensamentos, e nova elocuçaõ.

Daqui se infére, que os melhores de todos os idiomas devem forçosamente ser os daquelles póvos que mais revoluções experimentáraõ, e que melhor conhecêraõ as leis da Sociedade. Vê-se pois pello que nos ensina a historia, que as Nações mais pulidas e sábias, tanto na linguagem, como nos costumes, fôraõ quasi sempre as que situadas junto ao mar conhecêraõ mais cedo a necessidade da communicaçaõ dos póvos estranhos, por meio do Commercio; ou aquellas, cujos acontecimentos lhes déraõ lugar distincto nos annáes do genero humano.

Por isso vemos, que as Linguas geraes do Malabar, Coromandel, e da China, regiões maritimas, assim como tambem a Arabe, saõ as mais bellas, e antigas de todas as Linguas da Asia. Os Póvos da Grecia, que gozando do mais formoso espectaculo da Natureza, experimentáraõ tantas, e taõ notaveis revoluções, inventaraõ o mais significativo, e harmónico de todos os Idiomas, onde se achaõ consignádos os mais insignes monumentos do génio, e dônde procedêo a magestade da Lingua dos Romanos, naõ mais famosos pelas suas conquistas, que pelos escriptos immortáes, com que illustráraõ os Seculos. O mesmo se deve considerar dos Italianos, Francêzes, Hespanhóes, e Inglezes, cujos Idiomas tendo origem na Lingua Latina, se tem elevado ao mais

alto ponto de perfeiçaõ possivel, e nos quaes existem monumentos para quem todo o louvôr hé diminúto.

Mas este concurso de circunstancias parece, que ainda naõ foi a causa sufficiente da perfeiçaõ das Linguas: ainda ali se diviza hum vácuo, que preciza ser occupado. Aqui vem a Poesía com toda a sua pompa e magestade, desatando or vôos, pulindo e aperfeiçoando os Idiomas, dando a tudo alma, e vida, já elevando-se aos maiores assumptos nos louvôres do Ente Supremo, e no Panegyrico dos grandes homens, persuadindo a imitaçáõ das acções nobres, e dignas dos mais distinctos applausos. Ella lhe abre os seus thesouros; ella os enriquece; ella lhes dá força, elegancia, e harmonía, sem o que seriaõ huns cadáveres seccos, e inanimádos. Sem a Poesia, nada seriaõ talvez os Gregos, e os Românos, que tanto enchêraõ o mundo com a fama das suas victorias, com a grandeza das suas acções, e muito mais com a perfeiçáõ, com que cultiváraõ todas as Artes de génio, de que tantos, e taõ admiraveis testemunhos nos deixáraõ principalmente nos seus escritos. A Poesía pois, que tendo entre os antigos hum caracter de harmonia muito diverso da Poesía moderna, veio pella ignorancia dos Seculos a tal decadencia, que pouco faltou par ficar inteiramente ignorada.

Das reliquias da Lingua Latina, e Grêga se formáraõ os Idiomas modernos, com diversa Syntaxe; e com elles resuscitáraõ, ou por melhor dizer, formáraõ os Provençaes huma Poesía toda nova na disposiçáõ das cesuras, e combinaçôẽs harmónicas.

Os Italianos restauradôres de quasi todas as Artes, fôraõ os primeiros, que tratáraõ a Poesia com dignidade, aperfeiçoando os metros, e harmonías, que os mesmos Provençáes, e Sicilianos tinhaõ inventado; e tanto se applicáraõ a ella, que já no decimo quarto Seculo era famoso Poeta o celebre Dante, quem fixou todas as accentuações harmonicas do hende-

casyllabo, que ficou sendo o mais necessario metro da Poesia Italiana, Castelhana, e Portugueza.

Entrárao os Mouros em Hespanha, e com elles a Poesía: porem o desassocêgo da guerra naõ dêo lugar aos antigos possuidores desta Regiáõ, taõ infestada de Nações estranhas, a cultivar a Poesía seriamente, nem a pulir os seus Idiomas taõ cedo como os Italianos. Da longa dominaçáõ, que os Romanos tiveraõ em Hespanha se havia nella introduzido o uzo da Lingua Latina, que veio a ser vulgar: della, e de varios dialectos barbaros, se formáraõ os dous mais bellos, e sonoros Idiomas de Hespanha, e talves da Europa, o Castelhano, e o Portuguez.

Estas duas Linguas se foraõ igualmente aperfeiçoando, de sorte que a hum mesmo tempo chegáraõ ao seu auge. Com tudo, sendo a Naçáõ Portugueza mais moderna, e occupando muito menos espaço de terreno, que a Castelhana, veio mais cedo a produzir monumentos, que assaz distinguíraõ, e acreditáraõ o seu Idiôma. As historias de Joáõ de Barros dadas á lúz no meio do Seculo decimo sexto, e traduzidas em todas as Linguas cultas da Europa, fizeraõ mostrar ao Mundo litteiario, que a Lingua Portugueza era a mais filha da Latina. Hum numero sufficiente de Escritores, que logo depois vieraõ, acabáraõ de determinar o genio da Lingua, cujo caracter hé elegancia, e perspicuidade. Sendo pois a Lingua Portugueza desde a sua origem mui dôce, e sonóra, resultado natural da quantidade proporcionada das suas vogáes, e consoantes, das quaes as primeiras, naõ saõ taõ frequentes, e conjunctas, que enfraquêçaõ a harmonia, e façaõ languida e pouco notada, como se vê na Lingua Italiana; nem as segundas com nimia frequencia se atropellaõ, e produzem sons rudes e asperos, como nas Linguas do Norte. Todas estas felices disposicões, além do genio, convidávaõ a Naçáõ á cultura da

Poesia para que sempre teve natural inclinaçaõ. Deixemos à miúda investigaçáõ destas causas, a qual será mais propria de quem tentar escrevêr a historia da Lingua. Deixemos tambem as Poesías anteriôres ao Seculo de quinhentos, muitas das quaes existem em algumas Bibliothecas antigas, como as d' El Rei D. Diniz, na do Convento da Ordem de Christo em Thomar, e outras andaõ empregadas no celebre Cancioneiro de Resende, collecçáõ preciosa, donde se podem extrahir as maiores luzes a respeito da Natureza, e origem da nossa Poesía: e começando a tratar do auge a que esta elevou a Lingua Portugueza; as graças, e numero, que lhe communicou; principiaremos a discorrêr de huma época mais vizinha a nos, e esta seja determinada pelo famôso Sá de Miranda.

Vejâ-mos pois os assumptos, que este Poeta tratou, a qualidade de sua imitaçáõ em geral, o uzo que fez do hendecasyllabo, até ao seu tempo pouco ou nada conhecido em Portugal, e em toda a Hespanha; como tratou, como aperfeiçoôu o Sonêto, do qual se deve reputar inventor entre nós, novas graças que accrescentou á nossa Lingua, e como finalmente preparou aos Poetas, que lhe succedêraõ, hum novo caminho para se elevárem até a immortal Lusiada.

Mas antes que entremos neste exame, vejâmos primeiro o estado em que o Sá de Miranda, achou o Idioma.

A Naçáõ Portugueza, que até ao fim do reinado de D. Fernandó jazia na ignorancia, occupada unicamente da cultura das suas terras, quanto lhe era preciso para o consumo interiôr do Reino, e para entreter huma ligeira sombra de commercio exterior, continuamente vexado pella tyrannía Arabica, que infestando os mares, era eterno obstaculo á navegaçáõ; vivendo como desterrada na solidáõ dos campos, sem communicaçaõ, nem policia, fallava

huma linguagem informe, e grosseira, chêa de sons rudes, que as Linguas barbaras lhe tinhaõ communicado; e a pezar de ter huma origem taõ pura, como a Lingua Latina, donde procedia, só conservava alguma energía natural nascida das significações primitivas das suas vózes, que, alem de serem maculadas de infinitas anomalias, e dissonancias, eraõ privadas de translações, que daõ força e elevaçáõ a os Idiomas. Chêa pois de construccões erróneas, de dithongos ásperos, e desinencias rudes, póbre de termos, sem idèa do nexo, que subsiste nas particulas, sem syntaxe, sem harmonia o seu periodo incerto, e desunido vacillára sem carácter.

A grande revoluçáõ de D. Joaõ I. fazendo a mais viva commoçáõ no genio dos Portuguezes, com ella lhe viéraõ novos estimulos de gloria, que eleva o espirito; novas emprezas, novos pensamentos, nova força, nova energía ás suas enunciações; novos objectos do discurso, e nova linguágem. Hum Latim barbaro até alli organo das Leis, e instrumentos publicos, cessou de ser a linguágem do Fôro.

Da conquista de Ceuta nasceo a idéa, a grande idéa dos descubrimentos, que mostrando a necessidade de cultivar as Mathematicas, e a Astronomia, taes, quaes existiáõ naquelles tempos obscuros, alargou a esféra da Mechanica, que fazendo novas investigações sobre a acçáõ dos ventos, e resistencia das agoas, extrahindo a somma da combinaçáõ dos movimentos resultantes da acçáõ, e reacçáõ destes dous Elementos, alcançou mais perfeito conhecimento das leis dos liquidos, e do equilibrio, e aperfeiçoôu finalmente a Arte de navegar. Novos Astros, novos mares e costas, novas ilhas, novos mundos enchem de admiraçáõ tôdo o universo.

Extractos Poeticos.

From the third Canto of the Luciad of Camões.

ESTA'VAS linda Inez posta em sossêgo,
De teus annos colhêndo o dôce fruto,
Naquêlle engâno da alma, lédo, e cégo,
Que a fortúna naõ deixa durár muíto:
Nos saudósos câmpos do Mondêgo,
De teus formósos olhos nunca enxúto,
Aos montes ensinândo, e as ervínhas.
O nome, que no peito escríto tínhas.

Do teu príncipe alli te respondíaõ
As lembrânças, que na alma lhe morávaõ,
Que sempre ante seus olhos te trazíaõ:
Quando dos teus formósos se apartávaõ:
De noite em dóces sônhos, que mentíaõ,
De dia em pensamêntos, que voávaõ:
E quanto em fim cuidáva, e quanto vía,
E'raõ tudo memórias de alegría.

D'outras béllas senhôras, e princêzas,
Os dezejádos talamos engêita,
Que tudo em fim, tu puro amor desprézas,
Quando húm gesto, suáve te sugéita:
Vêndo estas namorádas estranhêzas,
O velho pay sesúdo, que respeita,
O murmurár do povo e a fantasía,
Do filho, que casárse naõ quería.

Tirár Inez ao mundo determína,
Por lhe tirar o filho, que tem prêso,
Crêndo co'sangue só da morte indina,
Matár do firme amôr o fogo acêso:
Que furôr consentío, que a espáda fina,

Que pôde sustentár o grande peso
Do furor Mauro, fôsse levantáda,
Contra huma fraca dama delicáda?

Trazíaõ-na os horríferos algôzes
Ante o Rey, ja movído a piedáde,
Mas o pôvo com falsas, e ferózes
Razôens, á morte crua o persuáde.
Ella com tristes e piedósas vózes,
Sahidas só de mágoa e saudáde
Do seu Príncipe e filhos que deixáva,
Que mais que a propria mórte a magoáva.

Para o céo cristalíno levantândo,
Com lágrimas os olhos piedósos,
Os olhos, porque as maõs lhe estáva atândo
Hum dos duros minístros rigorôsos:
E depois nos menínos atentândo,
Que taõ queridos tínha, e taõ mimósos,
Cuja orfandáde como mãi temía,
Para o avô cruel assim dizía.

Se já nas brutas feras, cuja mente
Natúra fez cruel de nascimênto;
E nas áves agréstes, que somênte
Nas rapínas aérias tem o intênto,
Com pequênas criânças vio a gente,
Têrem taõ piedôso sentimênto,
Como coa mãy de Nino ja mostráraõ,
E cos Irmãos, que Roma edificáraõ:

O'tu que tens de humâno o gesto, e o peito,
Se de humâno he matár huma donzélla
Fraca, e sem força só por têr sugéito
O coraçáõ, a quem sôube vencêlla,
A éstas criancínhas tem respêito
Pois o naõ tens á morte escura déllа,
Môvate a piedáde sua, e minha,
Pois te naõ move a culpa, que naõ tínha.

E se vencêndo a Maura resistência,

A morte sabes dar com fogo, e ferro,
Sabe tambem dar vida com clemência,
A quem para perdêlla naõ fêz erro.
Mas se te assi meréce esta innocência,
Pôẽ-me em perpétuo e mísero destêrro,
Na Scythia fria, ou lá na Libia ardênte,
Onde em lágrimas viva eternamênte.

Pôe-me onde se use toda a feridáde,
Entre leôens, e tigres; e veréi
Se nelles achar posso a piedáde,
Que entre peitos humânos naõ achéi;
Alli co' amor intrínseco, e vontáde,
Naquêlle por quem môrro, criaréi
Estas relíquias suas, que aqui víste,
Que refrigério séjaõ da mãi triste.

Quería perdoár-lhe o rey beníno,
Movído das palavras, que o magôaõ,
Mas o pertináz pôvo, e seu destino,
(Que desta sorte o quiz) lhe naõ perdôaõ:
Arrancaõ das espádas de aço fino,
Os que por bom tal feito alli pregôaõ,
Contra huma dama, ó peitos carniceíros,
Ferózes vos mostráes, e cavalleiros?

Qual contra a linda moça Policena,
Consolaçáõ extrêma da mãy velha,
Porque a sômbra de Achiles a condêna,
C' o ferro o duro Pirro se aparêlha:
Mas élla os olhos, com que o ar serêna
(Bem cômo paciênte, e mansa ovélha)
Na mísera mãy postos, que endoudéce,
Ao duro sacrifício se offeréce:

Taes contra Inez os brutos matadôres,
No colo de alabástro, que sostinha
As óbras, cõ que amôr matôu de amôres
A'quelle, que depôis a fêz raínha:
As espádas banhândo, e as brâncas flôres,

Que ella dos olhos seus regádas tínha,
Se incarniçávaõ férvidos, e irósos,
No futúro castígo naõ cuidósos.

Bem pudéras, ó sol, da vista dêstes,
Teus ráyos apartár aquêlle dia,
Cômo da séva mesa de Thyestes
Quando os filhos por maõ de Atrêu comía:
Vós ó concavos valles que pudéstes,
A voz extrêma ouvír da boca fría,
O nome do seu Pedro, que lhe ouvístes,
Por muito grande espáço repetístes.

Assi como a bonína, que cortáda
Antes de tempo fôi, cândida, e bélla,
Sêndo das mãos lascívas mal tratáda,
Da menína, que a trôuxe na capélla,
O cheiro traz perdído, e a côr murchâda,
Tal está morta a pállida donzélla,
Sêcas do rosto as rósas, e perdída
A brânca, e viva cor, co' a doce vida.

As filhas do Mondêgo a morte escúra,
Longo tempo chorândo memoráraõ,
E por memória etérna em fonte pura,
As lágrimas chorádas transformáraõ:
O nome lhe puzéraõ, que inda dura,
Dos amôres de Inez, que alli passáraõ;
Vêde, que fresca fonte rega as flores,
Que lágrimas saõ ágoa, e o nôme amôres.

From the fifth Canto of the same.

Porêm já cincos sóes éraõ passádos,
Que dalli nos partíramos, cortândo
Os máres nunca de ôutrem navegádos,
Prosperamênte os ventos assoprândo:
Quândo huma noite estando descuidádos,
Na cortadôra proa vigiândo,

Huma nuvem que os ares escuréce,
Sobre nossas cabêças apparéce.

Tam temerósa vinha, e carregâda,
Que pôz nos coraçòens hum grande medo,
Bramíndo o nêgro már de lônge bráda,
Como se désse em vaõ n'algum rochêdo:
O' potestáde, dísse, sublimáda,
Que ameaço divíno, ou que segrêdo,
Este clima, e este már nos apresênta,
Que mór cousa parèce, que tormênta?

Naõ acabáva, quândo huma figúra,
Se nos móstra no ár, robústa, e válida,
De disfórme, e grandíssima estatúra,
O rôsto carregádo, a barba esquállida:
Os olhos encovádos, e a postúra
Medônha, e má, e a côr terrêna, e pállida,
O bôca nêgra, os dentes amaréllos.

Tam grande éra de mêmbros, que bem pósso
Certificárte, que este era o segúndo,
De Rhódes estranhíssimo Colôsso,
Que hum dos sete milágres foi do mundo:
Co' hum tom de vóz nos falla horrêndo e grôsso,
Que parecêo sahír do mar profúndo,
Arrepiãose as cárnes, e o cabêllo,
A mi, e a todos, só de ouvílo, e vêlo.

E disse, o' gente ousáda mais que quântas
No mundo comettêraõ grândes cousas;
Tu, que por guerras cruas, taes, e tantas,
E por trabalhos vãos nunca repousas,
Pois vedádos términos quebrântas,
E navegár meus longos mares ousas,
Que eu tanto tempo há que guardo, e tenho
Nunca arádos de estranho ou proprio lenho;

Pois vens vêr os segrêdos escondidos
Da naturêza, e do humido elemento,
A nenhum grande humâno concedidos
De nóbre ou de immortal merecimento:

Ouve os damnos de mi, que apercebidos
Estaõ a teu sobêjo atrevimento,
Por tôdo o largo már, e pela terra,
Que inda hás-de subjugár com dura guérra.

Sábe que quantas náos esta viágem,
Que tu fazes, fizérem de atrevidas,
Inimiga teráõ esta parágem
Com ventos, e torméntas desmedidas.
E da primeira armada, que passagem
Fizér por éstas ondas insoffridas,
Eu farei de improviso tal castigo,
Que sêja mór o damno que o perigo.

Aqui espéro tomar, se naõ me engâno,
De quem me descubrio alta vingânça;
E naõ se acabará só nisto o damno
De vossa pertinace confiança;
Antes em vossas náos vereis cada ânno
(Se hé verdade o que meu juizo alcança)
Naufrágios, perdições de toda sorte,
Que o menór mal de tôdos seja a morte.

E do primeiro illustre que a ventura
Com fâma alta fizer tocár os Céos,
Serei eterna e nóva sepultura,
Por juizos incógnitos de Dêos:
Aqui porá da Turca armada dura
Os sobêrbos e prosperos tropheós:
Comigo de seus damnos o ameaça
A destruida Quilôa, com Mombaça.

Outro tambem virá de honráda fama,
Liberal, Cavalleiro, e namorado,
E comsigo trará a formósa Dama,
Que Amôr por gram mercê lhe terá dado:
Triste ventura e nêgro fado os chãma
Neste terrêno meu, que duro, e irádo,

Os deixará de hum crú naufragio vivos,
Para verem trabálhos excessivos.

Veráõ morrêr com fóme os filhos charos,
Em tanto amôr gerados, e nascidos:
Veráõ os Cáfres asperos, e aváros,
Tirár á linda Dama os seus vestidos:
Os crystallínos membros, e preclaros,
A' calma, ao frio, ao ár veráõ despídos;
Despois de ter pizado longamênte
Co' os delicados pés a arêa ardente.

E veráõ mais os ólhos que escapárem
De tanto mal, de tanta desventura,
Os dous amântes miseros ficárem
Na férvida e implacabil espessura.
Alli, despois que as pedras abrandarem
Com lágrimas de dôr, de mágoa pura,
Abraçados, as almas soltaraõ
Da formósa e misérrima prisaõ.

Mais hia por diante o monstro horrêndo
Dizendo nóssos fados, quando alçádo
Lhe dice eu: quem és tu que esse estupendo
Côrpo, certo me tem maravilhado?
A bôca, e os ólhos nêgros retorcêndo,
E dândo hum espantôso e grânde brádo,
Me respondêo com voz pesáda e amára,
Como quem da pergunta lhe pezára:

Eu sou aquelle occulto e grande Cábo
A quem chamáis vós outros Tormentório;
Que nunca a Ptolemêo, Pompónio, Estrábo,
Plinio, e quantos passáraõ fui notório.
Aqui toda a Africâna cósta acábo
Neste meu nunca visto Promontório,
Que para o Pólo Antárctico se estende,
A quem vóssa ousadía tânto offênde.

Fui dos filhos aspérrimos da Térra,

Qual Encélado, Egêo, e o Centimâno;
Chameime Adamastôr, e fui na guérra
Contra o que vibra os ráios de Vulcâno:
Naõ que puzésse sérra sôbre sérra,
Mas conquistando as ôndas do Occeâno
Fui Capitaõ do már, por onde andáva
A armáda de Neptuno, que eu buscáva.

Amôres da alta Espôsa de Pelêo
Me fizéram tomár tamânha emprêza,
Todas as Dêosas desprezêi do Céo,
Só por amár das águas a Princêza:
Hum dia a vi, co'as filhas de Nerêo,
Sahir núa na práia; e logo prêza
A vontáde senti, de tal manêira
Que inda naõ sinto cousa que mais queira.

Cômo fôsse impossivel alcançálla
Pela grandêza fêa de meu gésto,
Determinei por armas de tomálla,
E a Dóris este cáso manifésto:
De mêdo a Dêosa entaõ por mi lhe falla;
Mas élla co' hum formôso riso honésto
Respondêo: Qual será o amôr bastânte
De Nympha que sustente o de hum Gigânte?

Com tudo, por livrarmos o Occeâno
De tanta guerra, eu buscarei maneira,
Com que com minha hônra escuse o dâmno:
Tal resposta me torna a mensageira.
Eu que cahir naõ pûde neste engâno
(Que hé grande dos amântes aceguêira)
Enchêram-me com grândes abondânças
O peito de dezêjos, e esperânças.

Já nescio, já da guérra desistindo,
Huma noite de Dóris promettída,
Me apparéce de longe o gésto lindo,
Da brânca Thétis, unica despida:
Cômo doudo corrí, de lônge abríndo

Os bráços, para aquélla que éra vida
Deste côrpo; e começo os ólhos bellos
A lhe beijar, as fáces, e os cabêllos.

Oh que naõ sei de nôjo cômo o cônte!
Que crêndo ter nos bráços quem amáva,
Abraçádo me achei co' hum duro mônte
De áspero mato, e de espessura bráva:
Estândo co' hum penêdo frônte afrônte,
Que eu pêlo rôsto angélico apertáva,
Naõ fiquei hómem naõ, mas mudo, e quêdo,
E junto de hum penêdo outro penêdo.

O' Nympha a mais formósa do Occeâno:
Já que minha presênça naõ te agráda,
Que te custáva ter-me neste engâno,
Ou fôsse mônte, núvem, sônho, ou náda?
De aqui me párto irádo, e quási insâno,
Da mágoa, e da deshônra alli passáda,
A buscár ôutro múndo, ônde naõ vísse
Quêm de meu prânto, e de meu mál se risse.

Eraõ já nêste têmpo meus irmãos
Vencidos, e em miséria extrêma póstos;
E, por mais segurár-se os Dêoses vaõs,
Aguns a vários mômtes sotopóstos:
E cômo contra o Céo naõ válem maõs,
Eu que chorândo andáva meus desgôstos
Comecei a sentir do fádo imígo,
Por meus atrevimêntos, o castígo.

Convérte-se-me a cárne em térra dúra,
Em penêdos os óssos se fizéram:
Estes mêmbros que vês, e ésta figura,
Por éstas lôngas águas se estendêram:
Emfim minha grandissima estatúra
Neste remoto cábo convertêram
Os Dêoses; e por mais dobrádas mágoas,
Me anda Thetis cercando destas ágoas.

Assim contáva, e co' hum medônho chôro,

Subito dante os ólhos se apartôu;
Desfêz-se a nuvem negra, e co' hum sonóro
Bramído muito lônge o már soôu.
Eu, levantândo as maõs ao sancto côro
Dos Anjos, que taõ lônge nos guiôu,
A Dêos pedi, que removêsse os dúros
Cásos que Adamastôr, contou futúros.

FROM THE SECOND CANTO OF THE SAME.

Ouvio-lhe éstas palávras piedósas
A formósa Dióne, e commovída,
De êntre as Nymphas se vái, que saudósas
Ficáraõ désta subita partída.
Já penétra as estrêllas luminósas;
Já na tercêira Esféra recebída
Avânte pássa; e lá no sexto Céo
Para ònde estáva o Padre se movêo.

E cômo hia affrontáda do camínho,
Taõ formósa no gésto se mostráva,
Que as estrêllas, o Céo, e o ar vizínho
E tudo quânto a vía namoráva.
Dos ólhos ônde faz seu filho o nínho
Huns espíritos vivos inspiráva,
Com que os Pólos geládos accendía,
E tornáva de fôgo a Esféra fria.

E por máis namorár o Soberâno
Pádre, de quem foi sêmpre amáda, e chára,
Se lhe aprêsenta assi cômo ao Troiâno
Na sélva Idea já se apresentára.
Se a víra o caçadôr, que o vulto humâno
Perdêo, vêndo a Diana na água clára,
Nunca os famíntos gálgos o matáram;
Que primeiro desêjos o acabáram.

Os crêspos fios de óuro se esprazíam
 Pêlo cólo, que a néve escurecía:
 Andândo, as lácteas têtas lhe tremíam
 Com quem Amôr brincáva, e naõ se vía:
 Da álva pretína châmas lhe sahíam,
 Onde o menino as álmas accendía:
 Pêlas lisas colúmnas lhe trepávam.
 Desêjos, que cômo héra se enrolávam.

Co' hum delgádo cendál as pártes cóbre,
 De quêm vergônha hé naturál repáro:
 Porêm nem tudo escônde, nem descóbre
 O véo dos rôxos lirios pôuco aváro:
 Mas para que o desêjo accênda, e dóbre,
 Lhe põe diânte aquelle objecto ráro.
 Já se sêntem no Céo, por tôda a párte,
 Ciúmes em Vulcâno, amôr em Márte.

E mostrândo no angélico semblânte
 Co' o riso húma tristêza misturáda;
 Como dâma que fôi do incáuto amânte
 Em brincos amorósos mál tratáda;
 Que se queixa, e se ri n' hum mêsmo instânte,
 E se móstra êntre alégre magoáda;
 Desta árte a Dêosa, a quem nenhúma iguála,
 Mais mimósa que triste a o Pádre fála.

From the first Idyl of Boccage.

A' fóz do Téjo, em brônca penedía,
 Mináda pêlas ôndas salitrósas,
 Prisionêiro de Amôr, Tritaõ gemía.

Luzíaõ lhe as espádoas escamósas,
 Sustentáva o marítimo instrumênto,
 O búzio atroadôr nas maõs callósas:

Cônchas da côr do líquido Elemênto
Párte do côrpo enórme lhe vestíaõ,
Iguàl na ligeirêza ao próprio vênto:

Da bárba sálsas gôtas lhe cahíaõ,
E nos ólhos, que Amôr affogueáva,
Em borbotões as lágrimas fervíaõ.

Lília que hum Bósque próximo habitáva,
Lília a Napéa, desdenhósa, e bélla,
Amorósos clamôres lhe arrancáva:

Hum dia a vio na práia, e só de vêlla
Seu coraçaõ feróz enfeitiçádo,
Voôu, gemêndo, para os ólhos déllà.

Das entrânhas do Pélago salgádo,
Lôuco de Amôres, lòuco de suadádes.
O queixôso Amadôr tinha saltádo:

Do Pai, que abáfa as nêgras tempestádes,
Já, seu voráz tormênto éra sabído,
E das ôutras Equóreas Divindádes.

De aéreas esperânças illudído,
Graõ têmpo seu espírito saudôso,
Rastejândo a cruél, vagôu perdído;

Graõ têmpo glórias vaas sonhôu teimôso,
Antes que désse fructuósa entráda
A o ácre desengâno, o pêito anciôso. &c.

FIM.

LONDRES: Impresso por T. C. Hansard, Peterboro' Court, Fleet Street; onde se acha tambem hum sortimento completo dos Caracteres necessarios e particulares para imprimir, na Lingua Portuguesa.

Books lately published, by F. Wingrave, in the Portuguese and Spanish Languages.

1. A Dictionary of the Portuguese and English Languages, in Two Parts; Portuguese and English, and English and Portuguese: wherein, First—The Words are explained in their different meanings, by Examples from the best Portuguese and English Writers. Secondly—The Etymology of the Portuguese generally indicated from the Latin, Arabic and other Languages. Throughout the whole are interspersed, a great number of Phrases and Proverbs. By Anthony Vieyra. In Two Large Volumes, 8vo, a new Edition, carefully revised, and greatly improved, with upwards of 12,000 new Articles, and Commercial Phrases, by Mr. J. P. Aillaud, and the Portuguese words properly accented, to facilitate the Pronunciation to Learners.

2. An Abridgement of the same in a pocket Volume.

3. A New Grammar of the Portuguese and English Languages. By Mr. Vieyra, 8vo. A New Edition, greatly improved by Mr. Aillaud, with the Portuguese Words properly accented.

4. Exercises upon the different Parts of Speech of the Portuguese Language, referring to Mr. Vieyra's Grammar. 12mo.

5. Nova Grammatica Ingleza, a qual serve para Instruir aos Portuguezes na Lingua Ingleza, 8vo. Nova Ediçaõ, revista, e consideravelmente augmentada.

6. Historia de Portugal, por Antonio de Moraes Silva, natural do Rio de Janeiro, e continuada até os nossos tempos, por Hippolyto José da Costa, 3 tom. 12mo.

7. Historia de Gil Braz de Santilhana traduzida em Portuguez, 4 tom. 12mo.

8. Selections in Portuguese and English, with the Portuguese Words properly accented, for the Use of Persons learning those Languages, 8vo,

9. A New Dictionary of the Spanish and English Languages, in Two Parts—1. Spanish and English; 2. English and Spanish. By Joseph Baretti. A New Edition, corrected and improved. 2 vols. 8vo.

10. The same abridged in a small size.

11. A New Spanish Grammar: or, the Elements of the Spanish Language. By Mr. Delpino. A new Edition, improved by Delpueyo. 8vo.

12, Fernandez's New Practical Grammar of the Spanish Language; a New Edition, considerably enlarged by the Author, 8vo.

13. Exercises upon the Rules of Construction of the Spanish Languages; with references to the above Grammar. By Mr. Fernandez. A New Edition, greatly improved by the Author. 12mo.

14. Mr. Fernandez's new Dictionary of the Spanish and English Languages under one Alphabet. 12mo.

15. Las Aventuras de Gil Blas de Santillana; Restituidas al Castellano, por el Sapientisimo Padre Isla, y en esta Nueva Edicion, revisadas por el Rev. Don Felipe Fernandez, 4 vol. 12mo.

16. The same, vols. 2, 3, and 4 to complete sets.

17. Don Quixote de la Mancha, compuesto por Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra. Nueva Edicion por M. Fernandez, 4 tom. 12mo.

18. Novelas Nuevas, por Mr. De Florian, traducidas libremente, e illustradas con algunas notas curiosas e instructivas, por Don Gaspar Zavala y Zamora, 12mo.

19. Gonzalvo de Cordova, por Mr. De Florian, trad. por D. Juan Lopez de Penalvon, 2 tom. 12mo.

20. Historia de la Conquista de Mexico, por Don Antonio de Solis, 3 tom. 8vo.